

~I CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INTRODUCTION

.
. .

her: he's never been like this with anyone.
You're different

I kept quiet. I really didn't have a comment.
This was way too much for me. I was shit
scared.

Her: how do you do it!? How!? *screams* I gave
him my all, I lost my family, I have lived in the
streets just for him to betray me and love you. I
was always there and then you come along
boring, fat and ugly yet he falls for you! He

never fell for the other girls at all! You bewitched him! Sneaky bitch!

She jumped on me and started throwing punches and me, I defended myself, but it was hard especially when she picked up her gun and aimed at me. I knew I was going to get hurt today. I wiped the blood from my nose.

Her: "touch her and you'll see why I'm called Rellik" he says with so much pride. You're like his prize, isn't it wonderful? *laughs crazily* if I can't have him, you definitely won't. Witch!

I closed my eyes. Lord help me.

[02/21, 08:19] +263 77 556 7430 : ~I
CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 2

.

.

--LONA'S POV--

So the next day arrived quicker than I expected. My 6:30AM alarm woke me up reminding me I have to go to the gym. My trainer must be waiting for me, I appointed a female trainer to avoid the awkward looks men give to females. I never had a boyfriend and I'm not looking for one anytime soon!

Me: looks like I'm free after the gym today.

I usually just sit and watch TV on Saturdays after I come back from the gym. After my shower, I wore my gym kit and proceeded there. When I arrived at 7:40AM only a few people were there. Naledi and I started, after 3 hours I

was tired as hell. I showered in the showers and wore my other sweats, sweatpants and sweatshirt, my phone rang, I frowned when I saw it was Kayla.

me: hey. *frowns*

Kayla: hey skeem sam (my friend). Look about last night-

Me: you apologize and you're sorry. Alcohol and your mouth just don't mix?

Kayla: Lona. ..

Me: I've heard it all before, Kayla.

Kayla: xolo nyan. (I'm really sorry), I don't know what came over me. I should've understood why you've become this way I'm sorry.

Me: ewe kakade (yes you should have), especially since you also participated in it.

Kayla: we never meant for the bullying to be

extreme. It was just supposed to be teasing. I didn't think they would go far as to beating you up or trying to rape you. I'm really sorry, bendicinga sishiye ngasemva izinto ezigqithileyo. (I thought we left the past in the past.)

Me: nam bendicinge lonto. (I thought so too.) Until you emotionally hurt me again. Bye Kayla.

Kayla: skeem please, just meet me in my apartment so we'll talk. Please now.

I dropped the call wiping my tears. Thank god the showers were empty. In high-school Kayla's group of friends tried to rape me once in the school toilets, but the school's cleaner heard the noise, I was making screaming for them to stop tearing up my clothes, she stopped them. I only told my brothers that they tried to fight me, not that they tried to rape me. I got too embarrassed, not everyone can say girls tried to

rape them. I was too ashamed I was that weak. I didn't want to talk to Kayla but my heart didn't want to lose my best friend because I don't have any other friends so I went over there. It wasn't too far, I walked. When I was nearby I texted her to wait for me at the gate. I finally arrived.

Kayla: I'm so sorry. I'm never drinking again.

She hugged me tight, and I forgot all the wrong things she said to me last night. I love my friend. She's my best friend for crying out loud.

Me: I'm sorry too, I shouldn't have brought up the past when you were trying to apologize.

Kayla: friends forever? *smiles*

Me: friends forever

We locked our pinkies, kissed our thumbs and brushed them together while our pinkies were still locked.

Kayla: come on inside. I want you to meet someone.

Me: ndiyathandaza ayo'ndoda. (I pray it's not a man)

Kayla: girl hush!

We ran up to her apartment. When I got there, I saw a man twice her age with a fat stomach but you could see he was filthy rich.

Kayla: bae this is my bestie. Lona, this is my baby Patrick.

I was stunned, I knew Kayla was wild just not this type of wild! I waved feeling uncomfortable.

Patrick: she's beautiful. She should join us sometime, I'd give up a million just to have a meal in those luscious curves

I felt the need to cover up my body, I don't care even if it's childish. How could he see my body through my sweatshirt? I need to get out of here.

Kayla: she's not that kind of girl, baba. Look at the time, your wife must be pissed off. I don't want her calling me again.

Patrick: you handle looking pretty and I'll handle my wife. It was nice meeting you Lona . I hope to see you again.

I just nodded, this was so awkward. He was married! As soon as he left, I looked at my best friend.

Kayla: don't you dare judge me. The bills don't pay themselves.

Me: what about Viwe. You love that guy

Kayla: is he here now? No. He's far away in the farms, love can't pay the bills honey , sex does though.

She said that patting her vagina. I shook my head, I got a call from Cardo. I furrowed my brows. I decided to not answer I hate talking on the phone with people I don't feel comfortable with. He sent me a text.

Cardo : I'm at the library. Where are you? You won't be able to make it?

Me: sorry, I didn't know we had a session today.
I'll be right there.

Cardo : why didn't you answer my call? Okay.
I'll be waiting for you

I decided to ignore his question about the call. I looked at my clothes and I really didn't look presentable, and I really don't want anyone teasing me about how I look. I had enough of that in high-school . I'd have to start at home to change my clothes first then get a taxi to go to the library. I texted Cardo again

me: I'm not at home, I'll have to start there then I'll catch at taxi to town.

Cardo : just give me the address where you are and I'll get you there, take you home then go to the library with me

That sounds like a good idea but I'm still not comfortable with him to get in his car .

Me: Kayla. Cardo's suggesting that he could take me home, then go to the library. Should I send him your address?

Kayla: yeah sure. *smirks*

Me: don't give me that smirk!

Kayla: just didn't think you, a girl with trust issues, would be quick to give him the friendship privileges.

Me: shut up.

Then I felt the need to tell Cardo to cancel because Kayla is a bitch right. I don't even know Cardo like that. I texted him I won't make it.

Me: can't make it. Not feeling good. Maybe next

week?

Cardo : sure thing. What's wrong?

I decided not to respond to him. He's not my friend. It doesn't involve him if I'm sick or not.

Me: I cancelled.

Kayla: what!? Lona you do realize this anxiety and depression of yours is making you look like a bad person-

Kayla kept quiet once she heard my phone ring. I looked at the caller ID, it was Cardo. I decided to ignore it, Kayla snatched my phone. Before I could stop her, she answered the call.

Kayla: hey Cardo... oh she's right here, perfectly fine... I also don't know why she would lie...

maybe it's these anxiety attacks of hers that make her stupid... I'm not tryna belittle her situation it just annoys me sometimes. ... boy! *laughs*... look imma text you my address then we can spend time, she might open up to you... cool.

I looked at Kayla in utter shock. I was also angry she aired out my business like it was nothing. She just said Cardo isn't my friend so why is she telling him about my business! I don't like that!

Kayla: look I'm going shower this sex smell off me, you make snacks for our guests.

Me: plural ?

Kayla: yeah. He's bringing his friend over.

I just nodded knowing that I won't be here. She

went to the shower and I quickly got up, quietly went out the door and rushed out of the apartments. I jogged towards the gym, then I walked home. It wasn't really that long plus I need the exercise. I don't have money to waste on taxi fares every time. Even though I know my brothers would give it to me in a heartbeat. I don't like asking people for things sometimes. I just want to do them on my own. Once I arrived in the house, I saw my brothers' crew. There was a lot of money on the table. I closed my mouth because there was a lot I wanted to say, just waved and went to my room.

King: I called you, what's wrong with your phone?

Me: you did? My phone is perfectly fine.

I searched for my phone, then I realized I left it at Kayla's apartment! I sighed knowing that I can't go back and take it.

Me: it's at Kayla's apartment! (sighs)

King: ifuna ntoni pha? (what's it doing there?)

confused

Me: left it by mistake when. .. anyway
ubuzothini? (What were you going to say?)

King: bendizothi khabe usiya eMall. Si'busy
apha endlini (I was gonna say go to the mall in
the meantime. We're busy here in the house)

Me: oh. Do I still have to go? *confused*

King: yeah. We also have some guests on the
way.

Me: *sighs* okay. Let me just change.

Since I showered at the gym, and I thought
about the time, I decided to just change my
clothes. My brothers don't want to get me
involved into their business, hence King told

me to go to the mall. I changed into a white long sleeve baggy sweatshirt. I wore my black leggings and white sneakers. Then I took my black purse that had my shades and everything. I don't like wearing makeup so I didn't apply any. King came back to my room and threw stacks of cash on my bed.

Me: and then? *surprised*

King: thatha noba yintoni na uyifunayo. (get whatever you want.)

Me: this is a lot of money, Yanga.

King: I know, it's just R5000 Look the guests are here already. Just leave without going through the living room okay?

Me: okay.

I took the money, put in my purse and walked out with King. But down the stairs someone

with a deep voice I didn't recognize called him.

King: sure thing, boss.

Boss? And I thought they controlled themselves. I tried going out the kitchen looking at the living room, but I bumped into someone hard. I was walking fast so that made me fall on the kitchen counter corner it felt like the counter stabbed me hard, I screamed. I was on the verge of tears. I realised it was the party guy, Xavier if I'm not wrong. King and Muller quickly came to the kitchen, I was now crying. The Xavier guy tried getting me up but my back hurt so bad .

Muller: the fuck, Rellik bruh! ? *angry*

What's his name? Xavier or Rellik? Maybe his street name is Rellik?

King: Lona can you get up? We have to get you up.

Muller: yi'kaka le uyenzileyo kodwa. Mnqundu wakho (what you did is shit, you ass)

Xavier: I didn't see her man. But cool it with the words. I don't want your little sister seeing me knock your ass out.

Muller: save your breath and let's go.

Trigger: the child.... *annoyed*

Trigger reminded them. Muller and King got me up, I limped towards the door. I have to get out of here, so many people I don't know. I'll just have to go to the mall or somewhere else

Muller: uyaphi? (where are you going?)

Me: mall? I'll be fine. You guys finish your

business. I'm okay.

Muller: X, tell Ghost I'll be back. I'm taking you there.

Just then an older guy walked in the kitchen with... Scrappy? I should've just stayed at Kayla's apartment.

Ghost: you're going where?

Muller: taking my little sister to the mall, I'll be right back.

Ghost: I need you here now, to go through the plan with us. Rellik can take your sister to the mall. Hurry up boys, I don't have all day.

Ghost stared at me, I looked away because it was uncomfortable he was way older than me. Maybe he was my dad's age. My brothers didn't

notice the stare or they just acted like they didn't? Or maybe I'm imagining things

Muller: make sure she's there safely. Lona will you be okay with him in the car?

Me: no.

Xavier: *laughs* what am I gonna do? Rape her? Come on, I have to hurry back.

I limped towards his car, which left me shocked. It was a Lamborghini, a black one. It was so beautiful... I froze and didn't even want to open the door, I just stood near the car, he got in and waited for me. I just stood there. He shook his head getting out and opened the door for me. I got in with tears in my eyes because my back hurt so bad, I had to get low to get in . Once he got in again, he saw I was crying.

Xavier: I'm not gonna do anything to you. Why are you crying now?

Me: my back hurts so bad. I don't want to go to the mall anymore. Please take me to Kayla's apartment.

Xavier: okay.

He drove out of the yard, I thought he was taking me to Kayla but he went to a different direction. I got a little scared, I started breathing heavy. Gosh, another panic attack. It got extra hard to breathe, tears were falling real hard but no sound was coming out. He looked at me, that's when he got real worried.

Xavier: what's wrong? Shit! Muller's gonna kill me. What should I do!?

I starting pointing at my chest, it was hard to

breathe. He parked the car on the side of the road, got out and rushed to my side.

Xavier: hey. Look I'm sorry for your back. Stop crying. I'm just trying to take you to my doctor for a checkup I promise I won't do anything to you. I can call your brothers right now to assure them. Please just stop crying. *sighs*

In few seconds, he called my brothers telling them I'm not breathing properly. He then gave the phone to me.

King: lil sis, listen to my voice. It's okay. Rellik is just taking you to his doctor. Or you could go to Kayla. He's trustworthy, I love you okay? Just breathe it's gonna be okay.

After a few minutes of King convincing me to

breathe, I started breathing slowly. Xavier wiped my tears surprising me. He had a small smile

Me: I'm okay now. I'm gonna go to Kayla's apartment.

King: okay, I'll get you from there when I'm done. I love you.

Me: I love you too.

I gave Xavier his phone. He went back to his hard face. I sat properly as he closed the door, going to his side. I smiled a little thinking of how concerned he was, I didn't even think he was the begging type.

Xavier: how the fuck was I supposed to know she has anxiety problems? ... I was taking her Dr. Marburg... okay I hear you... sharp.

He got inside the car, I don't think he knows I heard him. I was so embarrassed, I couldn't even look his way. The car ride was silent, I didn't even know how to say thank you. Should I even say thank you? He's the one who gave me back pain.

Xavier: I didn't know you had anxiety problems. You scared me there.

Me: sorry, thank you for helping me.

Xavier: sure. I'm just gonna take you to my doc then get you to Kayla's apartment okay?

I just nodded. I hope the doctor can give me something for this back pain. It's unbearable.

~~~~~

When we got to Kayla's apartment, she was



there alone. Thank god! Xavier made sure I got in safely, and then he left.

Kayla: Zay huh? \*frowns\*

Me: not like that. He was at my brothers' house. They had business to discuss. I bumped into him, hit the corner of the kitchen counter and here I am with my sore back.

Kayla: serves you right for running off like that. Poor Cardo thinks you hate him.

Me: what? I hope you told him I just don't like spending in time with people I don't know

I limped to her room. My back was a little better since, Xavier told the doctor to give me a massage and some pills then something to rub on my back. Now all I wanted to do was sleep. I got on Kayla's bed and tried to sleep my pain off

[02/21, 08:19] +263 77 556 7430 : ~I

CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 3

.

.

.

.

--LONA'S POV--

.

.

I woke up to noises like men were talking, scratch that. They were shouting, I got up with the little pain I had. It was better but still, it was painful. I went to brush my teeth since I had a bad taste in my mouth. The room had a door that led to the bathroom. I looked for my phone around the room but I didn't find it. Gosh, I don't want to get out the room. There's probably a lot

of people out there. After 15 minutes of thinking whether I should get out or not, I gained the courage and finally came out the room, as soon as I got out, I saw Xavier. I got stuck at the door, why does Kayla also have men around? This is so uncomfortable.

Xavier: hey. Why are you standing near the door?

I wanted to answer, but as usual. Words got stuck in my neck, not coming out my mouth. I looked around the house looking for Kayla. I know she didn't leave me in her apartment with a stranger!

Xavier: she went out with Scrappy. They went to get food. They just left now

I just nodded, as I was about to get back in the

room, he cleared his throat. But I didn't even care, I just went in and looked at my pills. I decided to take them again, since the pain was coming back now, then I rubbed the cream on painful part. When I went to the kitchen. I couldn't see him at the living room/kitchen so I thought maybe he left. I took off my sweater leaving my only in my tank top and sweatpants. I hate being in my tank top because it's way too tight for my liking. I drank the pills.

Xavier: are you always this paranoid?

Me: i-i'm not paranoid

Xavier: finally, she talks to me without tears in her eyes.

I wanted to say I wasn't crying at the party, but I didn't. I remembered I didn't talk to him at all, at the party. I was gonna remind him of the times I

talked to him without crying, but I decided not to. I wore the sweatshirt again, even though I was feeling extra hot. I looked around for my cellphone. Xavier went back to playing the Xbox since when did Kayla have an Xbox? I'll take a wild guess and say it's theirs and maybe that's why I heard noises they were from Scrappy and Xavier. Once I finally found my phone, I saw the 6 missed calls from my brothers each. In total I had 12 missed calls and 6 messages. Most of my texts were from Vodacom, but I opened the text from King first.

King : going to Pretoria for a week, if you're uncomfortable with being in the house alone. Stay with Kayla. Love you ♥

Me: okay, I'll just stay in the house alone. Just woke up, didn't see the text. Are you gone already?

My phone rang, it was Muller. They're probably together. I sat down on the other couch carefully. And far away from Xavier.

Me: big brother?

Muller: you're safe?

Me: yes. I'm with Kayla.

Muller: okay. I don't like you staying alone at the house. I'll get Bobby to stay on guard at the house.

Me: okay, be safe. I love you.

Muller: love you too lil sis.

I watched as Xavier played racing cars on the Xbox. It looked cool but I wouldn't tell him that. An idea came into mind that I should go home, and I'll probably meet Bobby there. I got up and went to the room to see if I left anything. When

I saw it didn't, I took my bag and I thought I was gonna go without him talking to me, but he decided to talk! Why!?

Xavier: Where are you going?

Me: home.

Xavier: just sit down.

Me: I want to go home

Xavier: didn't I hear you? Sit down, Lelona. I'll take you home, when I'm done chilling with Scrappy.

I didn't want to argue so I took a seat, watching him play his game. I'm so scared to even make him angry because he always has an angry face. He could not stop playing it and I wanted to go. I needed to study, it was way past my studying time. The time now was 16:34. I got on WhatsApp asking Kayla where she was. I don't

like that she left me with a stranger. She videocalled me.

Me: Kayla.

Kayla: chomie. We're on our way I'm sorry, we got held up.

Me: I know your type of "I got held up" .

Xavier chuckled because he knew I was right she was probably having sex with him while she left me in a house with a gangster! Who knows what he could've done to me. But nooo my best friend only cares about her quick nut, then my safety.

Kayla: we're at the parking lot now. Chill, I love you vha.



I dropped the call because I was angry. I know you'll say I'm overreacting but come on this is Cape Town where girls get stolen and they never come back. She decides to leave me with someone I don't trust! Xavier looked at me, I didn't even want to look his way. Luckily for me, Kayla came back in 10 minutes.

Kayla: last time I'm doing you dirty. I swear.

Me: okay.

Kayla: wanna help me dish up?

Me: I want to go home. That's what I want.

I mumbled getting up, thank god nobody heard me. I helped Kayla dish up, they bought chips with burgers and alcohol. I wasn't interested in anything. I checked her refrigerator and I saw an old apple. I shook my head throwing it in the bin.

Scrappy: isn't she hungry?

Kayla: nah. She's on a strict diet.

Scrappy: \*laughs\* why? She looks fine to me.

Kayla: don't know. She's too insecure I guess.

I heard them even though I made it seem like I didn't, I proceeded drinking water.

Xavier: if you knew she's on the diet, why didn't you get her something she might like?

Kayla: because I know how picky she is. I don't want to waste money.

Xavier: Lelona, let's go.

He got up, grabbed his car keys. He dapped Scrappy, then he woke his black outside, red

inside bomber jacket. That went in with his white plain tee and one line knee ripped black jeans he topped it off with red and black sneakers.

Xavier: I'll be back, just going to get her something to eat.

Scrappy: fede fede (sharp sharp). Nina? (a gun?)

Xavier: always. Let's go.

Me: I'm not hungry.

Xavier: I wasn't asking you.

I sighed following him out. I really don't like eating in front of people. I walked behind him slowly not to hurt my back. It was fine but I didn't want to trigger it so the pain could come back. He opened doors for me, which was a shock to me. Maybe he was just scared of my brothers; he didn't want to treat me badly

because he thinks I might run to them with teary eyes; only if he knew I don't like people pitying me, even my brothers. We drove in silence, that's until he played his music through the aux cord. He started rapping along lowly, it was trap music, I don't know a lot of trap music.

Xavier: "got a family to feed, got a family to feed. they're depending on me, they're depending on me. If you don't believe in me. I'm like fuck ya, fuck ya! Thought you believed in me, I thought you had them racks but you got evicted!" . . .

He stopped once he realized he was getting too loud and I was staring at him. In my head I was thinking what would happen if there's at shootout here? At Checkers. Wherever there's a gangster there's trouble, and I'm in the car with one.

Xavier: you scared of me?

Once he realized I wasn't gonna answer that because it felt like a rhetorical question! Of course I'm scared of him. No doubt about that. I'm also scared about what Muller will say when he finds out I'm in a car with a male. Muller's the overprotective one, and King is the sensitive one that I can talk to.

Xavier: \*laughs\* let's just go. So we can hurry back you back home, it's getting very dark.

Me: I can go in by myself. Just wait here.

Xavier: \*angry\* you're fucking crazy

Me: \*shocked\* uhm... I. ...

I decided to keep quiet. Why was he so angry at me wanting to go to Checkers alone? He got

out and I followed. It was an okay weather, thank the heavens above! We went inside the shop.

Xavier: what do you want?

I went to the direction of the things I wanted, he held me back by my elbow. Then he held my hand as we walked through Checkers. I was so scared, what if my brothers have me followed and see this ? I quickly removed his hand. He glared at me, then he held my hand again. This time he tightened the grip so I could know not to remove it again. It hurt a bit, I winced. He didn't care though. After a while the grip loosened and I was okay.

??- Rellik.

We both turned around. I was amazed by the beauty of the girl I saw in front of me. Xavier wasn't though. He was straight annoyed.

Xavier: Nandi.

Nandi: who's this?

Xavier: I'll let you know when it concerns you.

Nandi: you left all of this for a pig? What a downgrade.

I didn't even respond because she was getting too loud for me. I just removed Xavier's hand and continued searching for what I wanted. I'm not into drama at all, the only drama I'm into is the one on TV.

---

-- KAYLA'S POV --

Me and Scrappy continued kissing as his hand travelled to my ass. I moaned, removing his hands. He doesn't have condoms and I don't have condoms so that means no sex.

Me: no.

Scrappy: I'll pull out just in time, Kay.

Me: no, thanks.

Scrappy: baby come on-

Me: where's your homeboy with my girl? They've been gone 30 minutes now. And Xavier is never this slow.

Scrappy: they'll be back. What's up with shawty anyway?

Me: she got bullied in high-school. She has trust issues, and insecurity problems.

Scrappy: that's it? You'd swear big shit popped



off.

Me: right!? I think she's overreacting. Yeah we were wrong to bully her like that but it's all in the past. She needs to grow up. But I love her so I'll support her stupidity. What worries me is that she's too naive

Scrappy: \*laughs\* you bullied her?

Me: yeah! She used to be so scared of us \*laughs\* that's what made us do it more, her fear was our motivation . I remember one time we paid our guy friends to mess with her, just a little. She came back crying the next day saying they tried to rape her. The principal suspended them, but they never came back to school and nobody knew where they were. Nobody still knows where they are.

Scrappy: mess with her how? \*laughs\*

Me: like touch her boobs and ass. take off her panties all that stuff, I heard she was naked in the boys toilet. They took off her uniform and

the video was spread all around the school  
\*laughs\* then one time the girls tried to rape her,  
that's the best memory. I wish you were there to  
see her face \*laughs\* priceless, but the cleaner  
stopped them. Man she was a pussy back then!  
But now I wouldn't let that shit happen to my girl.

Scrappy: damn. y'all were some bad ass kids  
\*laughs\*.

Me: those were the days! \*laughs\*

I actually don't feel bad for what I did, without  
those high-school memories she won't grow  
tough. And she still hasn't. I'm praying for her  
to man up and take life by its horns and enjoy  
the ride. But I know she's fragile, that's why we  
bullied her in high-school because we can. The  
easy targets were always the best. I still love  
my best friend don't get me wrong, I just wish  
she was more tough.

---

-- LONA'S POV --

after he paid we left. I insisted I paid but he almost threw a fit at Checkers. I have noticed that he has anger issues. So I let him be. In the car he looked angry that I insisted that I paid. He should be happy I didn't want to spend his money, why was he angry?

Xavier: don't do that ever again! You made me look like I can't afford shit. I hate that.

I just nodded, I was very scared of this guy. I didn't want to say anything that might make him more angry. He drove and went to a gas station, to fill his car up. Once he got out, I took the money and put it on his bomber jacket that he took off. It was hung on the head of the seat he

was sitting in. I don't like people buying me things especially males, they'll want something in return. Xavier came back and he drove back to Kayla's apartment. I just want to go home...

Xavier: since your brothers are going to Pretoria. Who are you going to stay with?

Me: their friend.

Xavier: okay. Bobby right?

Me: yeah.

I looked outside the window, I really don't like him talking to me. It's uncomfortable, maybe because I'm scared of him, he's so violent for no reason. And I can't speak up because I'm scared. We arrived at the lot, he left his jacket in his car, and we walked in the apartment building. I saw Omar, a friend of Kayla but we never really talk. He stays on the apartment

building. I used to have a crush on him

Omar: Lona \*smiles\*

Me: O \*grins\*

Omar: walk with me to the shops, please?

Xavier: she's busy.

Me: I'll walk with him.

I gave Xavier the bags, he pulled me roughly triggering my back pain.

Xavier: I said she's busy!

Omar: \*confused\* okay, talk to you later Lona.  
I'll text you.

I just nodded with mini tears in my eyes, as soon as Omar walked away, I was now crying

silently. I'm a crybaby I know. Xavier was pissed, I didn't care. I just wanted to sit down. I wiped my tears, he looked at my red eyes.

Xavier: such a crybaby. What's wrong now?

Me: maybe if you would stop manhandling me, I would stop crying!

I burst out, frustrated with him roughly touching me like I don't feel pain. He was surprised at my outburst. I was now embarrassed, so I walked to Kayla's apartment not wanting to look at him ever again. That was so embarrassing gosh

.

.

.

.

.

.

## BOOKERS MEET LELONA

[02/21, 08:19] +263 77 556 7430 : ~I  
CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 4

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV--

.

.

As soon as we arrived I wanted to go home immediately. I texted Bobby to please come and get me at Kayla's apartment, Bobby is like a brother to me since, he has been friends with my bros for years. He replied with a simple okay. Kayla could clearly see my eyes were red, so now she was breathing fire.

Kayla: where the fuck is he!? I'm gonna cut off his dick.

Xavier: she's being a baby.

Kayla: okay so? Does that mean make her cry? You know what? Get the fuck out of my apartment.

Xavier: nah.

He sat down, Kayla glared at Scrappy to fix his friend. Scrappy acted as if he didn't hear or see anything. I now wanted to really leave because this was awkward.

Kayla: both of y'all can get the fuck out. This is my best friend, and y'all think it's okay making her cry and shit-

Me: Kayla, it's okay.



Kayla was being weird and she was angry, I know she cares just not this much. I wondered if she was high or drunk. Now I really have to leave before she starts turning on me. I know how she gets with the mood swings. One minute she'll love you, the next she's shouting our ears off. She glared at me, pulling me to the other room.

Kayla: what did he do?

Me: he just manhandled me-

Kayla: manhandle you!? fuck no! Lemme call Muller real quick-

Me: no! Kayla calm down. It's okay. I promise.

Kayla: I never want you to think it's okay for guys to manhandle you, especially guys like Rellik. We left that weak personality in high school. Don't let them walk all over you

Me: I know. But can we at least let this slide.  
It's probably the last time I see him anyway.  
Please.

Kayla: okay, but I don't like this. Guys shouldn't think it's okay to handle us however they want, whenever they want. It's not okay! We feel pain, and we have emotions too.

I just nodded, something must have happened for her to be this passionate about it but I didn't want to ask her now because it'll tear her spirit down for the rest of the night. We'll talk tomorrow when we're alone

Me: I'm going home with Bobby. I love you, be safe.

Kayla: Bobby, the hunk? Damn. \*sneaky smile\* you're so lucky and you don't even see shit.

Me: bye Kayla.

I chuckled leaving the room. I took my bag, also the Checkers bag, I made sure I didn't leave my phone as I headed for the door.

Xavier: I thought I told you, I'll be taking you home.

Kayla: well she's going home with Bobby now. So sit down, you've been lacking \*grins\*

Me: \*chuckles\* see you tomorrow for our brunch.

I walked out without saying goodbye to the guys. They didn't deserve it anyway. I waited for Bobby outside, he was always late. I saw Omar approaching me with his friends. My heart started beating a thousand beats. After they passed, Omar stayed behind standing next to me . gosh if Bobby sees this. I sighed

Omar: I see you're rolling with the big dogs now

Me: \*confused\* huh?

Omar: Rellik?

Me: oh... no oh no! He's just, he's Kayla's friend.

Omar: you don't have to deny it. Just be careful.

Me: no I'm not denying anything, he's just Kayla's friend. I'm serious

Omar: I'm just saying be careful. He's Rellik for a reason.

Me: what does that mean?

Omar: you're still behind?

Me: on what? What are you saying Omar?

Omar: Rellik spelled backwards is...?

?: Killer.

We both turned around, and Xavier stood

behind us shocking me. I held my chest because I didn't expect him there, I would've felt someone watching me but my guts failed me this time.

Xavier: thanks for giving her an introduction on me. Been meaning to do it myself, just caught up counting stacks. \*smirks\*

So conceited. Omar shook his head, he gave me a hug and left. Where is Bobby!? I was about to text him when I saw his car pull up, thank God!

Xavier: I need to talk to you.

Me: I have to go.

Before I could go, he roughly pulled my arm, Bobby got out the car, I could clearly see he was

strapped ;he had a gun; Not today, Father. I don't want to die today!

Xavier: I'm still talking, don't turn your back on me while I'm talking.

Bobby: Lelona . In the car. \*angry\*

I nodded and hurried in the car, I was worried, that they'd fight, but they talked after a while I saw Bobby laughing, they dapped and Bobby returned to the car. Thank you, Lord. No blood was shed, today.

Bobby: and then? What's up with that?

Me: he wanted to apologise for my back. Where were you in the morning?

Bobby: girlfriend drama. Hence I didn't go to Pretoria. I wasn't in on the plan

I nodded, he continued telling me about the girlfriend drama he had while I was still worried about Kayla. She got so angry when she saw my red eyes, that's unlike her. She'd usually tell me to stop being a crybaby. I'd have to Skype her tonight. We arrived at the house, I limped a bit to my room, I mixed up my food, and started eating. On the mist of watching a movie, my phone rang. It was an unknown number. I ignored it, but it wouldn't stop calling. I picked up my phone.

Me: hello?

?: Lelona

I looked at the phone shocked. I pray this is not who I think it is. I remained quiet, waiting for the caller to introduce himself.

?: it's Omar

Me: I know. How did you get my number?

Omar: Kayla texted it to me. Look tomorrow, can we meet up for a date?

Me: really? Yeah Omar, I'd, uhm, I'd like that. What time?

Omar: 6pm sharp. I'll pick you up. Wear something formal.

Me: okay, see you tomorrow.

Omar: cool.

He dropped the call. I smiled giggling for the first time this year, I was blushing. Omar was a hot guy that every girl wanted. He had a car, his own apartment, after 5 minutes of excitement. The questions started floating in my head; all those girls why would he want me? Is this a bet



between his friends? Is he trying to prank?  
Does he just want to get between my legs? Will  
he stand me up tomorrow? What does he really  
want with me?... I texted Kayla how I felt. She'll  
have an answer she's good with these guy  
things.

me: K. I have a problem, Omar asked me on a  
date. I don't know if it's genuine or not. What if  
he made a bet on me?

Kayla ♥ : wait what?! He asked you on a  
date, bitchhhh you're on fire

Me: you're not helping Kayla.

I waited for her to respond but she videocalled  
me. I responded quick, she removed Scrappy  
from her neck once she saw my face pop up on  
he screen.

Kayla: bitch I need all the details! I knew he was up to something when he wanted your number! That sneaky bastard! I'm glad he did it though, your eggs were about to die from the drought they're in.

I heard Scrappy laugh, then I saw Kayla's glare, it must be targeted towards him. I shook my head embarrassed that she'd say that in front of him

Kayla: let me know if I'm fucking a sis'bhuti

Scrappy: fuck does that mean? \*angry\*

Kayla: your gay ass all up in women's business. Go smoke with Xavier and stop being in our shit. It's unattractive \*laughs\*

Scrappy: fuck you.

Kayla: right after you get condoms babe.

Me: Kayla!

Kayla: one would swear you never took life orientation as a subject. You even got a distinction there, yet your life is a spider's web.

Me: that's not why you called...

Kayla: tell me what happened. I'm all ears.

I started telling her everything. From the chat we had at the parking lot while I was waiting for Bobby to the phone call.

Kayla: I was wondering when he was gonna make a move. The game y'all were playing was tiring.

Me: huh?

Kayla: Lelona that guy has always had a crush on you! How am I friends with a blind person, dear lord!?

Me: he didn't show any signs though.

Kayla: oh, did you?

Me: that's different-

Kayla: actually the same. He wants you but he doesn't know how to get you. You want him but you're scared of falling. We're all gonna fall sometime it's part of life, you fall you get up. Don't wait for someone to get you up. Get up yourself! Now stop pitying yourself and look through your wardrobe for a cute formal body hugging dress! You gotta break his neck tomorrow. \*smirks\*

---

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I smoked my weed while I passed it on to Scrappy. He has been my homeboy for years now. I trust him with some of my secrets. But

some I just have to die with them.

.

Me: Omar? The nerd kid? \*laughs\*

Scrappy: \*laughs\* man, that girl is too fine for a nigga like that.

I just stared at him not replying to him. He chuckled shaking his head. I looked at him. He's high already?

Scrappy: so jy wil gaan aan soos jy weet nie sy is al dat nie? (so you're gonna act like she's not all that?)

Me: ek het nie gesê sy was lelik ( I didn't say she's ugly.)

Scrappy: dan? (then?)

Me: she's just not my type of pussy

Scrappy: since when did you get a type, my

nigga?

Me: hoe jou bek! (shut up)

Scrappy: \*laughs\* I'm just wondering

Me: sy is 'n kind (she's a kid.) She's also Muller and King's little sister. I don't even look at her like that.

Scrappy: you act like we're that old! She's 18 we're only 25. If you don't claim that, I'm hitting it.

Me: nobody's hitting anything. Have you forgotten your "chick" Kayla? Her best friend? You'd be the last nigga she'd smash.

Scrappy: Kayla's just a pussy. She knows that too. I know she'd hesitate since I'm fucking her friend. But don't underestimate my game.

\*smirks\*

Me: \*laughs\* underestimate your game? All your hoes are whack bruh.

Scrappy: look at you talking, thinking she'd fuck

you. All the time she's next to you, she's crying  
\*laughs\* I doubt she even wants to see you  
again.

Me: die verskil is, ek wil nie om haar te fok nie.  
Jy doen. (the difference is, I don't want to fuck  
her. You do)

Scrappy: the difference is, I don't lie about  
wanting to smash and go. Jy doen (You do)

Me: fuck off

Scrappy laughed at me as I continued smoking.  
Okay I'll admit. She's beautiful, and I don't see  
why she's so insecure. Then at the same time I  
can't ignore the fact that her brothers are like  
friends to me since we're in the same big gang  
just different blocks. I decided to go home  
since I knew I was third wheeling.

Kayla: where are you going?

Me: home.

Kayla: oh. I thought you guys were gonna stay for a bit.

Me: Scrappy is staying. I'm leaving.

Kayla: oh. Bye. \*smiles\*

I shook my head, Scrappy keeps telling me I'm crazy when I tell him this girl got a crush on me. I see right through her hoe shit though. I left, when I got in my car, I heard my phone ringing. I took it out my bomber jacket, when I took it out money fell out. I was confused because I never put money like that, it's always in my wallet. I answered the call without looking at the caller ID.

me: yeah?

ghost: waar is jy? (Where are you?)



me: out. What do you need?

Ghost: daar is 'n probleem. (There is a problem)  
Fly Boyz money is R80 000 short. I need you to sort it out.

Me: fede fede (sharp sharp)

I hung up. Ghost is my uncle whom took me under his wing when both of my parents died in a car accident. My dad was a lawyer and my mom was a housewife. They died when they went out for dinner, cops say it was an accident but I say it was murder. It was covered up but I heard they were also shot. And I have to find out who killed them, and when I do. It won't be pretty. I looked at the money again, then she popped in my head.

Me: Lelona.

I smiled chuckling that she returned the money when I told her not to. Stubborn as hell. I went to visit the Fly Boyz by their trap house. I got in easily, these kids are always weak on security. That's why their money is always short.

Me: where's Q?

They pointed to his room/ office. When I opened, a bitch was giving him a blow job. I chuckled shaking my head. The naked girl got up and hurried out the room.

Me: now I see why the money is always short-

Q: look Rellik-

Me: don't cut me off while I'm still talking.  
(takes out a gun) now we gon do this the easy way or the hard way?

He sucked his teeth and went to his safe, he took out R60 000. I shook my head, then I went to take out his prized possessions in the safe while aiming the gun at him. This will make R80 000 and more since he wanted to bitch about money. He tried to aim a gun at me.

Me: \*chuckles\* toets dit (try it). And see what will happen to your precious sister and daughters. And the secret son? Oh I can't begin to think what will happen to the sexy baby mamas. Make sure you kill me, because if you don't. I'll make sure you watch them die.

He aimed his gun down. See why I don't date? I only fuck bitches. Falling in love becomes your weakness. I don't want that bullshit happening to me, I'm on the verge of controlling the Americans gang. I know Ghost will hand over

the ropes to me, I'm his right hand man. I'd rather fuck then date. I smirked taking the money and the possessions putting them in a sports bag.

Me: next time, don't cross Ghost. Or you'll be watching over your weaknesses from above

I walked out and still nothing happened to me. See? Weak security in this trap house.

---

-- LONA'S POV --

I was panicking because I didn't even have a formal dress! What type of girl am I? I let people walk all over me, I'm not that pretty, I'm fat and

most of all I have no friends! My life is horrible. I sat down on the floor trying to calm myself down. The memories just came back, and tears started falling down. I don't want to wear something hoeish because I'll get looks from people that think I'm disgusting. I thought about the time when a video of me naked went around the school and everyone thought I made it viral to become Kim Kardashian but I'm was being bullied. They tore my clothes off, they called me names, I was touched sexually by males and previously by females but not one. Not one single teacher came and asked me what was happening. They all just assumed I was a whore who got a short end of a stick. Nobody in that school ever asked me what was happening they all just distanced themselves from me. I started remembering being called fat, ugly, a nerd, a whore. I breathed heavily, like the walls were closing in on me. I just felt dizzy. The last thing I remember was seeing my light

being blurry.

~~~

I groaned waking up, I saw Kayla next to me, Bobby was near the door. I looked around and unfortunately for me, I was at the hospital.

Kayla: hey.

I could see she had been crying, I just smiled weakly at her. I love that she cared.

Me: hey.

My voice was very raspy. She gave me water to drink, I had a massive headache. I hope none of

them called my brothers.

Me: I hope you guys didn't call King & Muller.

Kayla: don't worry. I stopped Bobby before he could even do it. You scared us.

Me: it's an anxiety attack. It doesn't kill.

smiles

Kayla: don't say that. I already feel bad. I'm so sorry. You're my best friend I don't want to lose you.

Me: I don't want to lose you!

I smiled at Kayla, Bobby gave us some privacy.

Me: who found me?

Kayla: me, Bobby was sleeping *rolls eyes* I wanted to sleepover so I can help you with your date. And I just saw you laying there, I got very

worried. But I remembered every step you said I should do if you get an extreme anxiety attack. I know you hate hospitals, but I had to call the paramedics.

Me: thank you. I wanted to talk to you about something.

Kayla: don't tell me you're cancelling the date!?

Me: no *chuckles* when you got angry at Xavier for manhandling me, what was that about?

Kayla: what do you mean? You're my best friend. I'm supposed to be there for you.

Me: I know, but it's deeper than that.

Kayla: *sighs* can I talk about it when I feel like I'm ready?

Me: I'm always here for you.

Kayla: thank you.

I smiled at her, she smiled back. We started

talking again. But her phone rang. I wonder where my phone is. She decided to put it on loudspeaker.

Kayla: hello?

Scrappy: where are you? I'm at your place, and you're not here.

Kayla: I told you I was leaving to go to Lona
rolls eyes

Scrappy: where are you? I need to give you this.

Kayla: *grins* we're at the hospital, baby.

Scrappy: hospital?

Kayla put it off loudspeaker and went out and I was now all alone in the room, I watched the TV but it was boring. A doctor came in. I didn't know this doctor. I'm used to my doctor. I was now feeling uncomfortable, I played with my

fingers as I tried to calm myself down. I don't want a male doctor.

Doctor: hello. I'm Doctor Davidson. Doctor Vane is currently on sick leave so she asked me to look over her patients. You are.... Lona Daniel?

I nodded. I was feeling so uncomfortable. I don't want this at all.

Doctor: and I see you have anxiety attacks. You have suffered from depression, you were suicidal in the past. Mhm have you ever seen a therapist?

I shook my head meaning no. I don't need a shrink. I'm not crazy

Doctor: I'll have to assign you to one.

Dr. Vane already tried getting me to go to a therapist but I don't want to. It's just another person who'll say I'm a whore without knowing my story. I nodded to what the doctor was saying but I knew I'll never do that.

~~~

Luckily for me, I got discharged from the hospital that same day of the date. So I had to do shopping. I took the R5 000 King gave me and started browsing through the mall with Kayla. I got a text from Cardo.

Cardo : hey are you busy today? I need help studying.

Me: not really. I can help you. What time should I arrive?

Cardo : how about 14:30?

Me: okay, I'll be there.

Cardo: thanks

I looked at Kayla who was looking at something for me to wear. I just dragged her over to the plus-sized girls clothing.

Me: I'm fat remember?

Kayla: stop playing, you're thick. And you're losing a lot of weight.

I grinned. Someone was seeing my improvement. Thank you, Jesus! I looked at the time it was 14:15.

Me: can I trust you to look for an outfit for me?  
Cardo needs help studying.

Kayla: okay \*chuckles\*

Me: don't do that.

Kayla: just go! I'm gonna choose something that will make you look amazing!

Me: I'm trusting you Kayla.

Kayla: hamba! (Go!)

~~

I finally arrived at the library in 30 minutes so I was late I felt so bad. I saw Cardo there, trying to studying. I'm saying trying because he looked so frustrated with it.

Me: I'm so sorry I'm late. I was at the mall, it's quite a distance. And I don't have a car, I really am sorry. I don't know-

I cut myself off when I realised I was blabbing.

He just looked at me and smiled. Now I was really embarrassed. So I sat down and kept quiet, he chuckled.

Cardo: first time hearing you talk that much.  
Without mentioning books

Me: and please let's just forget it.

Cardo: okay \*laughs\*

I helped him study and I used my gang examples theory, still it worked. At 16:45 I decided we were finally done. I was thinking about the date. Cardo thanked me and offered me a ride home. I didn't want to but I thought about the time so I agreed.

Cardo: thank you again for helping me.

Me: okay, you're actually doing better. All you

need to do is study at your house and you'll understand them better now.

Cardo: \*smiles\* thanks.

I nodded and got out of the car, when I finally arrived at the gate, he waved and drove off. I ran inside the house.

Me: Bobby!

Bobby: lounge.

Me: well I'm getting ready for my dinner with Kayla-

I was shocked to see Kayla in the lounge with Bobby. I wonder what they were doing. She looked at me and chuckled. I was not telling Bobby I'm going on a date. My brothers would come back home within an hour, very fast. I'm

not even joking

Kayla: bestie date. Let's go get ready.

~~~~~

I looked at Kayla upset. She wasted R1500 on these hoeish outfit. I'm not wearing it. I'm not!

Me: what the fuck Kayla!? He's gonna look at me like I'm a whore. *frowns*

Kayla did the breathing exercises with me, the anxiety died down.

Kayla: I'm gonna get Bobby to go to town with me. Omar will come get you. He knows your

address. When you have left, I'll lie to Bobby and say you texted me and said we'll meet at the restaurant and you'll sleepover at my apartment. Then when the date is over, you'll come to my apartment.

Me: okay. But Kayla I don't feel comfortable wearing this.

Kayla: you look beautiful. Stop worrying!

She ran downstairs. After a few minutes I heard the door close and then a car driving off. I took my anxiety pills since it was getting hard to control it. After it felt fine. I looked at my outfit again, I did not like it one bit. I hated the blonde wig more than the outfit. This is not me! I heard at car stop and after at while, I heard the bell indicating someone wanted to be let in the house. I rushed downstairs in these hard heels, I let the car in. I walked up and down as I'll rehearsed how I'm gonna greet him. I heard and

knock on the door, and I was surprised by who it was.

Me: Xavier? *confused*

[02/21, 08:20] +263 77 556 7430 : ~I
CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 5

.

.

.

.

--LONA'S POV--

.

.

I was really confused as to why he was here. I felt more uncomfortable when he looked at me outfit, it was a black crop top with a high waist

black skirt. He kept looking at my breasts, when I covered them up in felt that one was a bit revealed underneath but not that much. The nipples were totally covered though.

Me: Xavier!

xavier: yeah?

Me: what are you doing here? I... I have a date in a few minutes.

Xavier: *chuckles* I know.

Me: you know? *confused*

Xavier: look I came here to give your money back.

Me: money?

Xavier: I found it in the bomber jacket. I don't need it and I told you, I don't like you making me look like I don't have money.

Me: and I don't like you buying me things I can

buy for myself

Xavier: *mumbles* stubborn.

Me: what?

Xavier: just take the money.

Me: no.

I was feeling bold all of a sudden, Xavier's face changed I could see he was very frustrated and his anger was rising a bit. My phone rang, and I attended to it. It was Omar

Omar: hey, I'm sorry I'm a bit caught up. My car broke down, but I'm right around the corner. I'll be there in a few minutes.

Me: oh. Do you need help?

Omar: no no. I got it.

Me: I'll be there right now.

I grabbed the house keys, and looked at Xavier.

Me: I have to go.

Xavier: he's not picking you up? Here I was thinking he's a gentleman *smirks*

He took out the money and placed it on the table near the door next to the telephone. Then he walked out. I locked the house and walked to the corner. On the way, I saw Bobby's car, I quickly hid away from him. He was helping Omar with his car. Now I was stressed. I texted Kayla.

Me: what's going on? What happened to the car?

Kayla ♥ : wait you're here? Hide. It looks like something messed up in his car.

Me: what!? Please don't tell me King and Muller know.

Kayla ♥ : don't worry, they don't. And they're almost done with the car anyone. It's a minor problem. Don't stress man. It's a problem that occurs every day to anyone

I blueticked her. It's a minor problem but it happens the day of our date? After a while, the heels were killing me, Omar and Bobby were done with the car. Then Bobby drove off with Kayla without noticing me. I rushed to Omar, he was absolutely shocked when he saw me. Like no words shocked now I was embarrassed that I looked like a hoe.

Omar: you look... you look. .. wow

Me: *smiles* really?

Omar: yes. More than wow. No words can

describe how amazing you look, you looked great before the makeover not that you looked ugly then I'm just saying you're... *sighs*

It got quiet until I cracked a small laugh. He looked so cute when he was nervous. He smiled at me, and shook his head.

Omar: sorry I'm a bit nervous. Shall we go?

Me: yeah.

He opened the door for me, I got in the car. Once he got in too, he played music through the aux cord. The car boomed with Drake's music, until we arrived at the place. I was shocked to see it was the Aubergine Restaurant. I heard everything was fancy here. I hope the date goes well, gosh what if I have a panic attack? I took the pills at home but I'm still nervous about

what people will say about this outfit. He opened the door for me and we walked in. It was empty and decorated with beautiful lights and roses.

Omar: Kayla told me about your panic attacks so I didn't want you to get uncomfortable.

Me: you rented the whole place just for me?
shocked

Omar: you're special to me.

He smiled his million dollar smile. I didn't even know how to reply to that flirty line. Should I let it pass or just say thank you? Geez I'm a lame.

Me: thank you? *smiles confusingly*

He laughed at my facial expression now I was

way more embarrassed. He kissed my hand when he saw I was not at ease with him laughing at me.

Omar: sorry, you should have seen how adorable you looked.

I blushed and chuckled. We sat down, and starting getting to know each other before eating.

--MULLER'S POV--

.

.

I parked inside the yard and King followed after me. We went inside our hotel room going over

the plan again because I can't afford any mistakes. This is how we provide for our family, we tried the right path and they just have us peanuts so we went on the road everyone took... being in the game has its pros and cons. Putting my sister's life is one of the cons, the quick money and respect is one of the pros that I love so much.

Me: kunga bhatyazwa ngomso majita. (No mistakes tomorrow gents)

X: fede fede (sharp sharp)

~~

The plan worked accordingly but Trigger almost got us busted. X handled it quickly though before anything could blow up. The money was stacked in the back of our cars. We waited for the other niggas Ghost sent to take the money. We were in an isolated place no one ever goes to and luckily we lost the police far away. We

saw cars approaching, quickly we took out the bags and placed them in the same place on the ground. I was a bit shocked to see Ghost himself here.

Ghost: well done boys.

King: didn't think you'd be here.

Ghost: had to see for myself how smooth things will go

Gunz: we have about 3 hours before the Internet knows about the heist

Ghost: no identities right?

We all looked at Trigger, he was the one who took off his mask before we were out the scene. He'd be a lucky nigga if it isn't caught on camera.

Me: no identities

I never rat one of my niggas out. Even if Trigger is caught I'll still stand by him. I'll never turn my back on my gents.

--LONA'S POV--

.
.

I got up and did my morning routine, Kayla was still asleep. I wore my sweats Kayla came with from home, then I went to the gym and after 3 hours I went back to Kayla's apartment.

Kayla: I was wondering where you went.

Me: the gym

Kayla: I have guests coming over in about 15 minutes.

Me: and that's my que to go. Ciao

Kayla: *laughs* they're girls

Me: I don't like any of your friends

Kayla: you're acting like they like you. *laughs*

Me: mxm *rolls eyes*

Just on time the girls entered the room. It was Zikhona and Khanyi, they are the biggest hoes I know. And they always influence Kayla to do wrong things, it frustrates the hell out of me.

Khanyi: I was wondering why Kayla's fridge always looked empty.

Zikhona: kucweli'hagu kaloku apha *laughs*
(there's a lot of pigs here)

They all laughed, I know it was a joke but I was offended a lot. I don't even eat when I'm here.

Kayla: khaniyeke uLelona. (Leave Lelona alone)

Zikhona: it's just a joke girl! Damn, she's so sensitive. *laughs*

Khanyi: anyway enough about her. Chomie siyabangena eRands today right? (Friend, we're going to Rands today right?)

Kayla: sipha! (We're there!) Lona you should come with us.

Me: no thank you, I have to study today.

Kayla: uyabhala ngomso? (Are you writing tomorrow?)

Me: no. I don't need a test to study.

Zikhona: thixo lomntana akana mpilo (Lord, this child doesn't have a life)

They all chuckled. I decided not to respond to that remark, I know it'll end up with my feelings

hurt in the end and I don't want to cry in front of them it'll be the joke of the whole year.

Me: bye guys.

They all said bye and I walked out, I would've appreciated if Kayla had my back when her friends were being bitches. I walked home and Bobby was still there. He was watching TV and texting at the same time.

Bobby: you're back.

Me: yeah.

Bobby: how was the date?

Me: huh? *shocked*

Bobby: *chuckles* I wasn't born yesterday.
Omar is a good boy though. He's good for you.

Me: you saw me. *sighs*

Bobby: you think? *sarcastic* I didn't want to ruin your night though I didn't like your outfit one bit. Why did you change the hair?

Me: it was a wig. Kayla chose the outfit

Bobby: is she pressuring you into this? Because if she is in swear I'll -

Me: no! I wanted to go. I sorta had a crush on him. Please don't tell Muller and King. I'll be in a lot of trouble.

Bobby: *chuckles* okay. Now tell your big bro how the date went.

I told him everything, how me and Omar connected and he was a gentleman all night. Who would rent the whole restaurant for one girl? He is really rich! To me it was easier to talk to Bobby then it is to talk to my brothers because they'll act all crazy whereas Bobby is very calm.

Bobby: I'm glad it went okay. Just don't rush into-

Me: that's the last thing on my mind.

Bobby: anything. Wait a few months before kissing him

Me: *laughs* so you'd wait months before kissing a girl.

Bobby: I am me, he shouldn't be me.

Me: I'll let him know *laughs*

I went up the stairs and studied since it's been while since I did that. After 2 hours I was hungry as hell, I went downstairs and made food for myself. As I was eating, my phone rang, I looked at it and it was Omar. I breathed then answered it when though I hate talking on a phone call. I prefer texts.

Omar: hello beautiful.

Me: hey *smiles*

Omar: is it too soon to say I miss you?

Me: yes especially when you dropped me off at Kayla's apartment at 1am

Omar: I didn't want the date to end

Me: me too. I had fun

Omar: me too, can I call you?

Me: *confused* what are we doing right now?

Omar: *laughs* no man, I mean video-call you. Your smile is too precious and I would like to start off my day wonderfully.

Me: so my smile will make you day wonderful?

Omar: yes.

Me: *laughs* you're very good at words. You're making me blush

Omar: it's my job to make you blush

me: you make it seem like you're forced to do it.

He dropped the call and I was hurt a bit. Then a few seconds later, a video-call request appeared on my screen. I giggled and answered. His face appeared and he was shirtless. Wow.

Omar: I love doing it. The best job in the world. And nothing beats the payment I get.

Me: and what is that?

Omar: spending time with you

Me: is this your way of asking me out for second date?

Omar: yes.

Me: I'm always free.

Omar: tomorrow let's go to the Waterworld or the Playland

Me: you want me to sleep in the hospital?

Omar: pardon?

Me: panic attacks.

Omar: you won't. I'll be there. I got you

Me: *smiles* okay. I would love a second date.

Omar: there's that smile, I have been waiting for.

Me: *blushes* stop!

Omar: I can't help it. It's amazing.

Me: bye Omar.

Omar: but we're still talking *pouts*

Me: wait I have to take a screenshot of this.

Omar: smile first.

I smiled and took a screenshot of him pouting,
he took a screenshot of me smiling.

Me: I'm going back to studying.

Omar: okay. See you soon.

Me: bye.

We both hung up and I'm smiled looking at my phone. I feel so free around Omar he brings an excitement feeling in my stomach. Butterflies can't even describe the feeling. I went back to studying and just like always I studied for 2 hours. After the studying session I browsed through my Instagram with the house WiFi. I posted the screenshot I took of me and Omar's video-call and posted it on my Instagram story. Then I remembered King and Muller will see it so it quickly deleted it to and just smiled at it.

Bobby: Lona?

Me: yes?

Bobby: later on we're leaving.

Me: we?

Bobby: can't leave you alone in the house.

Me: siyaphi? (Where are we going?)

Bobby: race show.

Me: but those are illegal if we're caught there we'll -

Bobby: chill you wouldn't even spend an hour in jail *chuckles*

Me: I'm staying behind. Thanks though.

Bobby: I wasn't asking you.

Me: eshee *chuckles*

Bobby: I'm serious.

Me: Muller will go crazy if he hears this.

Bobby: Muller will go crazy about your date too.
smirks

Me: unfair.

Bobby: really unfair. I need some fun while

babysitting you. I have been stuck here since forever.

I really have been a bit unfair so I'll go but I'll nag him your take me back home in an hour.

Me: what did people wear at races.

Bobby: just wear something casual. Not sweats though, you'll feel every hot.

I nodded and he left. I looked through my wardrobe. I wore a light blue jeans with a tank top and a buttoned up cardigan. I tied my hair into a tight up bun and wore my white sneakers. I threw my phone, lip gloss, my pills, wet wipes, and tissues in my small black bag then I went to the lounge. Bobby was still not ready so I had to wait for him. I drank my pills. My phone vibrated in my bag, I answered without looking at the

caller ID.

Me: hello?

?: finally she answers my calls.

I looked at my phone to see who this is, it was Cardo. I wanted to hang up so bad, why is he calling me?

Me: hey.

Cardo: you're free today?

Me: uhhh-

Bobby: okay let's go.

Cardo: oh you're busy?

Bobby: who's that?

Me: not really. I'm going to a race. Bobby is dragging me there.

Cardo: funny thing is I was actually going to invite you there. See you there.

Before I could even respond he hung up. I don't know if Cardo wants me or he just wants my brains or he's just being nice and he feels pity for me. I hate that.

Me: Cardo. He says he'll meet me at the race. Is he always this persistent on hanging out?

Bobby: Cardo as in Cash?

Me: yes.

Bobby: *chuckles* one crazy motherfucker. He's an extrovert. He doesn't like it when people are too much in their shell. Maybe he's trying to break you out of your shell.

Me: but I love my shell.

We got in his car and he started driving off, the radio was off it was just us talking in the car.

Bobby: I know

Me: he doesn't seem like a gangster though.

Bobby: oh really? What are gangsters like?
laughs

Me: tough and rude.

Bobby: am I rude?

Me: no. But that's because you're my brother's best friend, you have to be nice to me.

Bobby: Cash is still young. And he hasn't done hardcore stuff yet, he's still in the 'studying, selling weed plus being a lapdog' phase.

Me: then there'll be the killing phase, and-

Bobby: let's not talk about gangster shit. How's varsity? I haven't asked you this in a long time.

Me: it's cool.

Bobby: no one is messing with you?

Me: nope. All is well.

Bobby: and we're here.

There was a big gate that looked shady, the place looked abandoned. Guards were standing there and as soon as they saw Bobby, they opened the gates then he drove it. Then we drove further information saw a lot of cars.

Me: in the middle of the road. A site full of nothing.

Bobby: Ghost bought it. We use it for races.

Me: There are quite a lot of people.

Bobby: and we're not going to get a panic attack.

I chuckled as I drank my pills again, thank god I bought them and water. He parked the car and

we walked out of it. I browsed through the crowd and right there I knew I was gonna be stuck to Bobby's side because I'm very scared of these people.

Bobby: Lona, let's go over there.

Me: why do I smell weed?

Bobby: try to act like you're used to this?
chuckles and not a word of this to Muller.

Me: *laughs* don't worry I can keep a secret.

We walked over to his friends. They all greeted and I just waved. They continued talking. My phone vibrated just then, I looked at my phone. It was Kayla. I moved a bit away from them to answer the call

Me: skeem.

Kayla: uphi? (Where are you?)

Me: out with Bobby.

Kayla: oh. I was just checking up on you.

Me: really? *laughs*

Kayla: yes. Now bye.

She hang up. I was confused but I decided not to dwell on that. From afar I spotted Scrappy with another girl. My eyes popped out. Bobby came and stood next to me

Bobby: what?

Me: Scrappy is with another girl.

Bobby: so? How do you know these people?
Well what did i expect you were talking to Rellik

Me: mxm. He is dating Kayla.

Bobby: Rellik?

Me: no. *rolls eyes* Scrappy.

Bobby: *laughs* yeah right.

Me: I'm serious they're always together and Rellik is always third wheeling.

Bobby: they're just fucking.

Me: maybe that's why she called me she wanted to tell me about how hurt she is he came here with her.

Bobby: or she's angry she's not invited because this is more like a limited area. We don't want no outsiders amarhadi abamba njalo. (that's how the police catch on.)

Me: so she can't come alone.

Bobby: yeah *laughs*

Me: and if I was alone-

Bobby: you'd probably be killed because all these people will think you're an undercover officer.

Me: what if the police works with a gangster?
Then what.

Bobby: then we're all going to jail *shrugs*

Me: *laughs* uyadika (you're irritating)

My phone vibrated and it was Omar, he was video-calling. the music now was playing extra loud and it was Madness ft. Tipcee.

Me: hey there.

Omar: someone decided to have fun without me.

Me: sorry, Bobby forced me out the house.

Omar: where are you guys?

I can't tell him it's a race, but I doubt he'd snitch but I can't take chances.

Me: at a party of some sort. Where are you? I'm hearing music.

Omar: dinner with my dad.

Me: and you're calling me!? Oh god.

Omar: chill *laughs* he went to network with his business associates.

Me: I was about to hang up.

Omar: *laughs* you love hurting my feelings.

Me: I don't do it all the time *laughs*

Omar: first you left me for books now because you're scared of my father *smirks*

Me: well the books part-

Omar: I totally understand. I love a career driven woman.

Me: *blushes* and you're doing it again.

Omar: *smiles* I told you. It's my job, if I don't make you laugh, smile, and blush someone else will take my place.

Me: your place?

Omar: you'll understand later on. *smiles*

I shook my head smiling, I understood clearly.

BOOKERS MEET OMAR

[02/21, 08:20] [+263 77 556 7430] : ~ I
CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 6

.

.

.

--LONA'S POV--

.

.

I made sure to always stand close to Bobby, and thankfully he wasn't annoyed he understood. A girl tried to offer me alcohol, Bobby glared at her and she left instantly.

Bobby: will you be fine on your own? I'm going to race.

Me: you're going to do what!? What if you die?

Bobby: *chuckles* I've been doing this for a long time. Phola. (Chill)

Me: ndizohlala nabani? (Who am I going to sit with?)

Bobby: nobody will try anything. *laughs*

Me: ha'a suhamba. (No. Don't leave)

Bobby: uligwala wena. (You're a coward.)
laughs I'll call Scrappy

Me: no!

Bobby: axe, ring'u Scrappy. (Yo! Call Scrappy)

He orderes a guy, the guy whom I didn't know called Scrappy and right on time Cardo came to us. Well he's better than Scrappy. I'm scared of Scrappy and Rellik

Me: I'll sit with Cardo then.

Bobby: we're racing against each other
chuckles lomntana ugwaja uScrappy *laughs*
(this child is scared of Scrappy)

Cardo: uzoba'sterr (she'll be strong) *laughs*

Scrappy came and they had this handshake together then he did it with Cardo.

Scrappy: smoko? (What's wrong?)

I was utterly shocked he spoke the language and not afrikaans! I always thought he was a dark colored guy.

Bobby: jonga man, khaw'beke lomntana.
Ndiyo'race'a (look man, guard this child, I'm going to race.)

Scrappy: fede fede (sharp sharp)

They left, and I was scared to even speak to Scrappy. He texted something on his phone then sat on the camp chair Bobby sat.

Scrappy: thirsty?

Me: I'm not allowed to drink alcohol.

Scrappy: It's just an energy drink *chuckles*

Me: oh then that's OK.

He gave me a monster can that was sealed.
Once I took my first sip, I heard cars making noises, then in a few seconds they raced past. Everyone was all hyped, I was fascinated a lot by the racing cars I won't lie.

Scrappy: nja ye'game. (King of the game)

I looked at who he was talking to and it was Xavier. Why is he following me everywhere I go? They did this handshake that was the same as Cardo's and Bobby's. I figured maybe it's a gang thing

Xavier: sharp?

Me: yes. You?

Xavier: sharp. Who's racing now?

Scrappy: Bobby and Cardo.

Xavier: Cardo won.

They both laughed, I'm guessing Cardo is good or Bobby sucks.

Scrappy: kyk die kind vir my, Nella wag vir my.
(Watch the kid for me, Nella is waiting for me)

Xavier: fede fede (sharp sharp)

Scrappy left and I was a bit scared to even be left with Xavier. I'm still scared of him.

Xavier: this fear of yours. What are you going to do when nobody's there for you?

I just shrugged at that question because I didn't know how to answer it. I understand I need to be tough and handle my own situations but I

didn't ask for the hardships I had in my life that made me the way that I am.

Xavier: you need to -

?: Relik! You're up for 5K?

Xavier: azitshe (let's go)

He is not about to leave me in a place like this alone! Bobby said they should watch over me! Gosh why did I even agree to be here?

Xavier: let's go.

Me: I'm not racing.

Xavier: and I'm not leaving you here alone.

Me: what if we get a car accident?

Xavier: you worry too much. Let me, the driver, worry about that. Now let's go.

Me: I still have my whole life ahead-

Xavier: I could just drag you in the car and everyone will be looking at us, or you could just come with me to the car

Me: seems like I don't have a choice.

He chuckled then we walked over to his car. He opened the door for me, then rushed to his side and got in. As he started his car, I saw Cardo's car pass us. He won the race, then he started spinning his car. I smiled, it looked so dangerous yet so cool. Everyone was hyping him up. Then Bobby's car followed and I chuckled at the fact that he lost. Xavier slowly drove to the starting line. I wore my seat belt and tried to put on Xavier's seat belts.

Xavier: what are you doing?

Me: safety precautions.

He smiled at me when I finished buckling him up. It was a genuine smile, it gave me a chance to admire his looks. Although he had a big head. He was cute in a hood gangster way. He screams 'dangerous' as soon as you look at him but, it's quite cute that his eyebrows almost connected and he always has this angry look on his face that could scare anyone off. But despite all that, he was cute.

Xavier: like what you see?

Me: focus on the road.

He laughed and then the other dude's car pulled up in the starting line. A gorgeous girl stood in the middle of the cars with an American flag printed bandana in her hand. She lifted her hands up and in a few seconds she dropped

them and Xavier drove off fast as hell I squealed. I was scared for my dear life. He looked at me and laughed, this was not funny to me. He took off his seat belt with one hand, the car curved a bit.

Me: what are you doing?! No!

Xavier: I'm used to driving without it. Chill.

I tried relaxing but damn it was hard. The constant turns and speeds. How large is this site? After a long time we finally arrived and Xavier won. I couldn't wait to get out. He stopped me when I was about to open the room. He got out and opened it for me.

Me: thank you. Didn't think you were a gentleman.

Xavier: I'm not. I'm just trying to get in your

pants.

My jaw dropped. He laughed and hugged me.

Xavier: I'm just playing with you.

?: I see you had motivation.

He down at me and licked his lips. I looked away trying to hide my smile.

Xavier: something like that.

?: 5K.

I watched as he gave Xavier R5000. No wonder this stuff is illegal not only is it dangerous but they're paying off with dirty money.

Bobby: Lelona!

Me: I told him I shouldn't get in the car.

Bobby: let's just go home before Muller finds out and kills me.

Xavier: what were you thinking bringing his sister to the race? *laughs* King would understand. Just not Muller

Bobby: we know.

~~~

--KAYLA'S POV--

.

.

I took another shot with Zikhona and Khanyi.  
We were in Rands and it was lit.

Khanyi: K, even now you can't get Rellik?

Me: friend. He must be gay! I give him all the signs. What's there not to see!?

Khanyi: maybe just because you're having sex with Scrappy

Me: just to get closer to him!

Zikhona: have you tried the hoe trick?

Me: bewitch him!?

Khanyi: unxilile \*laughs\* (you're drunk) that's the last option. Now the hoe trick is easy. Invite him over, wear nothing and reveal what goods he's missing out on. And he'll be in your bed in no time!

Me: what if he reacts angrily?

Zikhona: okay, drug him with pills that will get his solider up, that way he won't be able to resist you.

Me: this is why you guys are my bitches!

Khanyi: Lona probably would've said "leave him,

you'll find someone better"

We all laughed at her imitating Lona, it was really hilarious.

Me: heeh! Ndinixelele bane'spark bona boy2.  
Phof sizophela kwezimini. \*flips hair\* (let me tell you guys, they have this spark together. Well it's gonna end in these days)

Zikhona: pussy power mntase!

Khanyi: in full force! \*laughs\*

Me: I donated Omar her number because he likes her and she likes him. That way she'll date Omar and play far away from Rellik.

Zikhona: she's too boring for Rellik anyway.  
Uzolala ngexesha lokutya! (He'll sleep instead of having sex) \*laughs\*

This is why I love hanging out with Khanyi and Zikhona we're always laughing and we have great discussions about sex, men, booze, and money.

~~~

--LONA'S POV--

.
. .
.

It was the next day, and Cardo had texted me after class to help him with the topic we did earlier in class today. So we went to the library. I explained it to him slowly, and he understood it without me using gang examples so I guess that was progress?

Cardo: thanks again for doing this.

Me: no problem and I know you're going to ace tomorrow's test.

Cardo: yeah right. *sarcastic*

Me: I'm serious.

He just nodded and we finished studying then he offered me a ride home. I was anxious but I took it anyway. We arrived at my home, and I saw King and Muller's cars, and other cars

Cardo: they're back.

Me: thank god.

He chuckled and got out of the car with me. I didn't want him to go inside the house with me but I guess it was okay because my brothers would've thought another guy dropped me off. I heard noises soon as we walked in. I'm

guessing the heist went well and they're celebrating.

Cardo: bought her home safely.

King: beniphi? (Where were you?)

Cardo: library.

Muller: izithi kanti uyazidalela kumntana wasekhaya ndizokubetha unye. (if I find out you're having sex with my sister I'll beat the shit out of you.)

Me: Khazimla!

Cardo: no, bruh.

Me: I'm so sorry. I-

Cardo: it's cool. I'll see you later.

I just nodded and he left, the guys just laughed at me because I was so embarrassed.

Muller: I was just pulling his leg.

Me: not funny. *annoyed*

He tried to hug me laughing, I pushed him away and went to my room. This is why I would never talk to my brothers about Omar, they would never understand. I figured Bobby went home since I didn't see him downstairs with Trigger, Gunz, X, and my brothers. Since I had nothing to do, I decided to study again. 2 hours passed and I was very tired. I think I'm very ready for the test I will write tomorrow.

Muller: still studying?

I jumped shocked, we both chuckled at my reaction.

Muller: look harde (sorry) about earlier on.

Me: what you did was very embarrassing and awkward.

Muller: I know, it was just a joke. You think I'd be laughing with him if I thought he was having sex with you?

Me: like beating him up would be better.

Muller: it would. Boys should be the last thing on your mind right now. Focus on your studies.

Me: so if you found out I was dating-

Muller: I'd beat the fuck out of that guy for trying to play my sister.

Me: what if they are really genuine?

Muller: I don't give a fuck. How do you know they're genuine? Do you read minds?

Me: let's just stop talking about this.

Muller: the problem is you're too naive-

Me: Khazimla please, just drop it.

My phone vibrated indicating I have a text. It was Omar.

O : we're still on for Waterworld?

Me: sure. I'll be in Kayla's apartment in 30 minutes.

O : cool. Can't wait to see you.

I smiled at my phone. Muller cleared his throat. I looked up at him and he had this look on his face that scared me a bit.

Muller: who was that?

Me: Kayla. We had this little fight but now she wants me to sleepover at her apartment.

My heart started beating fast. I hope he didn't realise I was lying. I texted Kayla to be my alibi.

Me: I'm going on a date with Omar, if my brothers ask I'm with you.

I looked at Muller again, he looked like he didn't buy my story one bit.

Muller: but you were at her house the day before yesterday.

Me: yeah, uh... we had a fight then.

Muller: okay. Guess I'll see you tomorrow.

Me: you will? I mean yeah you will. *chuckles nervously*

For the first time ever Muller believed my lie.
This is a shocker to me. He's usually on top of things and always knows when I'm lying.

~~

I knocked on Kayla's apartment and she opened after a long time.

Kayla: hey.

She looked like shit. Her hair was messed up and her makeup was still on but it was also messed up. She was wearing a short red sparkling dress. I'm guessing she went out last time and hangover is killing her.

Me: I'm going on a date in about 10 minutes and I need you to cover for me when my brothers ask where I am.

Kayla: Omar is that good?

Me: he rented the whole restaurant for me

Kayla: what!

I never told Kayla the full details of the date because I came back to her apartment at 1am

Me: I know right?

Kayla: if I knew he was THAT rich I would've taken him for myself. But I'm pretty occupied.

Me: with?

Kayla: can't tell you until he's mine.

I felt bad because I saw Scrappy with another girl last night.

Me: I saw Scrappy with another girl last night.

Kayla: I know. That's his girlfriend. Poor girl

can't even satisfy her man that much that he comes crawling to me every night *laughs*

Me: but that makes you a hoe and dirty.

Kayla: whatever I'm not even worried about him or anyone's opinion on what we have.

Me: okay.

I was wearing a black dress that was just above my knees with my white sandals. Underneath I had one piece swimsuit that wasn't too fancy just a black, all covered, swimsuit with an open back. My braids were in a bun. There was a knock on the door.

Me: that's him. Bye.

Kayla: have fun, kiddo.

I waved goodbye and opened the door for Omar,

he looked amazing. He was wearing black ripped jeans with brown shoes and a white shirt that was only buttoned on his stomach and below so his chest was revealed.

Omar: you get more beautiful every day.

smiles

Me: thank you. You look amazing too. *smiles*

Omar: shall we?

Kayla: yeah, leave. Please.

Omar: hangover?

Kayla just nodded and he laughed. We left her there annoyed and he drove us to Waterworld. It was packed and I was a bit nervous, I took my pills in the morning before my classes but I knew I should've bought them with me for assurance.

Omar: trust me. You'll be okay.

I just smiled and we both got out. He held my hand and smiled at me, then we walked to the place.

~~

I was having a lot of fun, and I was very happy he even took me to a place like this. It's my first time, in a long time, having fun in a place full of people I don't know. I really am at peace when I'm with Omar. He's a nice guy, he's good looking and he does even look like danger.

Omar: I have to thank Kayla

Me: for?

Omar: pressuring me to talk to you otherwise I would have never had the courage to.

Me: pressuring you?

Omar: not that she forced me. It's just that I was scared. I know crazy right?

Me: yeah a guy like you, scared to talk to me. Really crazy.

Omar: you're just so beautiful and I thought I was way out of your league.

Me: funny thing is, Kayla said you wanted my number from her.

Omar: nah, she gave it to me and said your life needed excitement.

Me: wow.

Omar: I never understood why you hang out with her.

Me: she the only friend I have. She knows me, having a new friend would mean-

Omar: starting all over again.

Me: yes! And I just don't have the energy for that.

Omar: you started over with me.

Me: that's different.

Omar: how? I know your situation and I didn't judge you. I accepted you for you. Kayla just rubs me off in a wrong way, and you not seeing her for who she really is worries me.

Me: okay enough about Kay-

Omar: don't protect her because she wouldn't protect you.

Me: she would! And I would really love it if you would stop talking about my best friend!

He raised his hands up in surrender. He sighed.

Me: I'm sorry, it's just that-

Omar: no I totally understand. My future wife is very protective of the people she loves, I have chosen well. Our 5 children are lucky

Me: 5!? That's too much *laughs*

Omar: minimum 5 maximum 7 *laughs*

Me: no way! I am not pushing out 7 babies.

Omar: so you admit you'll be my future wife.

smiles

Me: Omar-

Omar: I know. You want this to go slow because you're scared of getting hurt. I understand, but at least give me the permission to call you my girlfriend.

I blushed and nodded. He smiled more like a goofy grin, he baby kissed me. I froze. Like literally froze. I didn't know what to do, should I kiss him back? I don't want to move too fast, Bobby said I should wait and not rush things.

Omar: I'm sorry, if you're not comfortable with

kissing, it's okay. I can wait for as long as you're ready-

I shut him up with a french kiss. It wasn't all bad, I was enjoying it. We both broke it off and smiled at each other, he gave me little pecks on my lips and cheeks that made me giggle.

?: Lelona.

I jumped when I heard Muller's voice. I was stuck, my mouth got dry in seconds. How am I going to explain this? In a matter of seconds. Muller was beating up Omar, I screamed trying to break it off. Some people were taking videos and others were breaking the fight off. Omar was bloody as hell and I felt bad. I was crying so hard, this is why I don't want my brothers knowing I'm dating. They're way too crazy.

Muller: azitshe wena (let's go)

me: no!

Muller: what?

Me: I have to go with him to make sure he doesn't press any charges against you. What are you even doing here!?

Muller: that doesn't matter! Why the fuck are you going around kissing boys and going on dates!?

Me: i-i...

Muller: you want him to try and rape you so you can come crying to us again? You think we enjoy seeing our little sister hurt!?

Me: n-no. (sniffs)

the paramedics came running in, as soon as Omar was in the ambulance I got in too. Muller

did not even say a word. I knew he was every disappointed in me. I felt bad because it looked like I chose Omar over my brother and that would never happen I love my brothers to death. But i needed to make sure Omar was okay, and he doesn't press charges against Muller whom I'm still confused how he found me. Did he have me followed? We arrived at the hospital, since he wasn't that injured he needed a few bandages but the doctor said he'll keep him over for the night, just to regulate everything. I was now in his room, ashamed to even look at him.

Me: I'm sorry.

Omar: it's not your fault your brother is overprotective. I might just call him Floyd.

Me: *laughs* please don't joke about this. It's serious. I really feel bad.

Omar: you don't have to, I understand. I mean

if my little sister went through so much in high school and she starts dating I'd go crazy too.

Me: please don't press charges.

Omar: you owe me a date again *smiles*

Me: I'm your girlfriend. I have to go on dates with you, it's my job. *smirks*

Omar: you make it seem like you're forced to do it. *smiles*

He copied what I said to him after our first date. I chuckled.

Omar: give me a kiss and make everything go away.

I smiled and pecked his lips. He pouted, I laughed and kissed him again. After the kiss he smiled at me. Now I have to worry about the

lecture Muller and King will give me when I get home

BOOKERS MEET XAVIER

[02/21, 08:20] [+263 77 556 7430] : ~ I
CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 7

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

me: what's gonna happen with your car?

Omar: damn. I forgot about that. You can drive right?

Me: yeah I just don't have a license nor a

learners.

Omar: at least you can. When the doctor comes I'll ask for my keys that were in my shorts, you'll do to the administration department I'm sure they can help you.

Me: okay, I'll park in at the apartment building parking

Omar: how are you going to go home?

Me: walk.

Omar: it's getting late. Why don't you take the car to your house?

Me: King and Muller will probably burn it after they have damaged it.

Omar: *chuckles* well that's extreme.

Me: I know. *sighs*

Omar: but I still don't like you walking at this time. We're in Cape Town remember? *laughs* ouch.

I felt bad because he couldn't even laugh without feeling pains.

Omar: at least call one of them to come get you from the apartment.

Me: they'll give me a long ass lecture.

Omar: it's better than walking. Safety first. And you can take my shorts so you don't get stares when you leave this place *smiles*

That's when I realised I was in my swimsuit and I had a towel wrapped around my legs. The doctor walked in and after checking him out he assured him he'll go home tomorrow and Omar asked for the car keys. And the doctor said I should follow him.

Me: okay, well let me go.

Omar: bye, text me when you get home.

I nodded and kissed him goodbye then followed the doctor. Finally I had the keys and wore the shorts, then I remembered I left my purse at Waterworld. How was I gonna go there? I walked even though it was a long walk that I hated so much because it gave me time to think about what happened. I am the reason my brother hurt Omar. The poor kid was showing me good things and treating me good but my brother just doesn't want to admit I am growing up and I'm not a little girl anymore. Finally I arrived at Waterworld and my feet and legs hurt like hell because I was walking so fast. I went in panic mode when I didn't see his car and the place was closed. It was also getting very dark. I don't even have my cellphone with me. My emotions got the best of me and I was crying

struggling to breathe. I sat down, I didn't even know how I was going to go home. I was already receiving stares from people when I walked here. The breathing got bad and I saw a two guys approaching me, they looked young.

?: hey are you okay?

I didn't answer I just cried. He tried to hug me and I screamed backing away.

?: I'm sorry. Look we're not trying to hurt you. We're just taking a walk.

My breathing got stable knowing I'm not getting raped today.

?: utheni lomntana? (What's wrong with this

girl?)

?!: I think she's crazy.

?: masambe sumshiye. Akayonxaki yethu
(let's leave her. She's not our problem.

?!: hey, I'm Zuko and this is Liya. Is there
someone we can call to come and fetch you?

I nodded repeatedly like and crazy person. Zuko
took out his phone and punched something on
it, and slowly gave it to me trying not to scare
me. I instantly dialled King's number. And luckily
for me, he answered quickly.

King: speak.

Me: Yanga, I'm at Waterworld. I don't know how
I'm gonna go home it's too dark to walk I'm
scared.

King: we'll be right there. Who's with you?

worried

Me: 2 guys I don't know.

King: 2 guys you don't know!? Give them the phone! *yelling*

I sniffed and gave Zuko his phone. They were talking on the phone and I could hear King shouting.

Zukho: no-no sir. We weren't trying anything. We saw her in the pavement crying and struggling to breathe so we helped her... stay with her?... okay.

I could see he had fear, my brothers had that affect on people. Both a disadvantage and an advantage. It didn't even take more than 30 minutes and they arrived. I ran to them, well King, because I was scared Muller was still

angry at what happened earlier on. Muller went to those guys, he talked with them and then dapped them. I was still crying in King's arms. I know how dramatic I am, it's just that I was scared something would happen to me. Cape Town is a dangerous place.

King: let's get you home.

I nodded and he got me in his car, and he drove off, Muller followed. In the car, I kept sniffing. Maybe this would mean my getaway from the lecture? Finally we arrived at home and I was shocked to find other cars, and Omar's car still in one piece.

Me: that's Omar's car.

King: Muller bought it home with your stuff.

Me: I thought they were stolen. Thank god. Is he

mad at me?

King: uyavutha ngumsindo. (He's burning with anger)

Me: why can't he see I'm growing up?

King: why can't you wait until varsity ends before dating? Why did you lie about your whereabouts?

Me: if you guys knew Omar you would approve of him.

King: let's just go inside.

I nodded we went inside. Muller was still in his car, I felt bad because I'm the reason his mood changed all day. I felt like what I did was selfish, my brothers at least deserve the truth when I'm starting to date because they were the ones who had my back through whatever I went through. They felt my pain, and they were there to pick up the pieces that were broken and for

that I'll forever love them. Their friends were in the house too. I was embarrassed I had on a swimsuit and boy shorts on. I just waved and went to my room, I showered, did my routine then wore sweats. When I walked in my room from the bathroom. I jumped at Muller laying on my bed and looking at the night stars graffiti on the ceiling. I wanted it in my room because it was beautiful so my brothers made it happen for me they hired someone to do it. I joined him by laying on the bed and looking at the ceiling.

Me: I'm sorry.

Muller: sorry you lied? Or sorry you got caught?

Me: Khazimla I'm going to start dating, sooner or later you know that, and it just happened sooner-

Muller: I don't have a problem with you dating-

Me: you don't? *shocked*

Muller: I don't have a problem with you dating Omar, he's a good kid, and now he knows that if he messes up I won't hesitate to pop a cap up his-

Me: okay!

Muller: I respect that he took a beating for you and he didn't fight back. He has good academic scores-

Me: you researched about him?

Muller: I hired Kurt for a reason.

Kurt is the private investigator they always use to find out things.

Me: is that how you found out where I was?

Muller: nah.

Me: well how did you know?

By now we were not laying down but just sitting on the bed.

Muller: Kayla. *shrugs*

Me: you're lying.

Muller: a few hundreds and threatening words were enough to have her talking.

Me: you threatened my friend for information and you bribed her.

Muller: she's not a real friend if she doesn't cover for you.

Me: mxm. *rolls eyes*

Muller: look I can't choose friends for you, but that girl will lead you in the wrong path if you keep defending her while she doesn't give 2 shits about you.

I need to talk to Kayla tomorrow. I may be naive

but I don't like how people always say she's bad for me. I need to talk to know what's really going on.

Muller: next time don't lie about your whereabouts. It makes us worry more.

He said getting up, he collected my laptop, took the extension for the TV, took my cellphone and all my other gadgets.

Me: how am I supposed to contact you guys.

Muller: You're only receiving it when you're out of the yard, and if I find out you're back on social media. It's gonna be a bigger problem than this one. And I'll track all your calls

Me: for how long?

Muller: i think a week will do. And no Kayla

visits

Me: it's better than being beat up.

Muller: you know I'd never do that to you.

I smiled, and he kissed my forehead and left. I was left in my boredom so I decided to sleep.

~~

The following day after class I went to the hospital with a taxi. I got there just in time before they released Omar, he smiled once he saw me. I got him his clothes from his apartment after I told the landlord the story, well not the whole story, and Gunz was going to bring the car since Muller nor King wanted to and I couldn't drive the car to school because I was scared I was gonna wreck it.

Omar: the Queen of my heart.

Me: hey.

Omar: what's wrong?

Me: let's just say I'm not liking the punishment one bit.

Omar: no gadgets?

Me: for a week.

Omar: how am I will going to contact you.

Me: I don't know. But I think I'll have to cool it off because I don't want more trouble.

Omar: I understand even though a week without you will be hell.

Me: you survived 21 years without me *laughs*

Omar: but that was before I met you.

chuckles now I'm addicted to you *sings*

Me: never do that again! *laughs*

I couldn't stop laughing he looked so cute but

he couldn't sing at all! He laughed also and then he went to change, and luckily Gunz came and gave us the keys. I thanked him and he nodded, he stared at Omar.

Gunz: ithambile ilightie yakho. Uyayithemba?
(Your boyfriend is weak. Do you trust him?)

Me: yes. And thank you. Bye.

Gunz: *laughs* eziTrustfund babies zenu.
(These trust fund kids you girls choose)

Me: thank you! *laughs*

He hugged me and left. I could see Omar was a bit offended that Gunz thought he couldn't protect me.

Me: you're okay?

Omar: yeah...

Me: he's always like that, joking around. Don't take it into the heart.

Omar: it's really fine. I guess being raised by white people does have a disadvantage after all.

I faked a smile because I didn't know how to respond to that. Gunz was just joking, well I think he was, should I have defended Omar? It wasn't anything serious, Omar is sensitive what I've come to realise. We're like almost the same, and if I was in his shoes I'd want him to defend me, I guess I have to talk to Gunz about the joke.

Me: I'm really sorry.

Omar: hey, I told you. It's okay. *smiles weakly*

He drove me home, and once I was inside the yard, he drove off home. Luckily for me. My brothers weren't home. I placed my phone in

Muller's bed. And walked out. The test today was actually easier than I thought. Maybe because I studied a lot? And those things I studied were there. I looked over at the topic the lecturer wanted us to look over, I ended up reading it and understanding it. After a while, I was hungry. I checked the fridge and it was empty like really empty and I was dying in hunger. I took my phone from Muller's room and walked to Pick 'n Pay. It wasn't that much of a distance it was a 30 minute walk. I bought my food, at the store I saw Xavier with another girl, I quickly hid myself in the toys section. I hope he doesn't see me. Why in the hell is Cape Town so small? Everywhere I turn he's there!

?: toys section?

I turned around and he was looking at me with his sexy look, and it was so mesmerising. He

licked his lips. I was in utter shock at how hot he looked. What is up with him today? He was wearing grey jeans with a white t-shirt that was written "LOVE THE HUSTLE" and these fly sneakers. His tattoos were in display. I saw that he had a new haircut and his waves were on point. He smiled at me, and that's when it came down on me that I was staring too hard. Worse I have a boyfriend now, I can't just stare at other men. Especially taken men, I'm assuming the girl is his girlfriend.

Me: yeah. I just love the toys.

That was so awkward. My response is so lame. I silently sighed at my awkwardness. He chuckled, then his girlfriend came to us. She tried to touch his hand, he folded his hands. Maybe trouble in paradise?

?: hey I'm Dineo

Me: Lelona.

Dineo: Lelona? Mhm. . Doesn't ring a bell, he never told me about you.

Me: see you around, Xavier.

Xavier: sharp.

I was about to leave, then he hugged me. She looked at me shocked. Now I felt bad that I disrespected the poor girl like that. I quickly went to go pay for my things before my brothers arrive at home. After I just was done, I walked home. On the way, I heard a car beep. I looked at the road, and there was Xavier in his black Range Rover.

Xavier: need a ride?

Me: no. Home is just around the corner.

His girlfriend in the opposite seat was angry as hell. I didn't want to upset her even more.

Xavier: get in the car Lelona.

His voice boomed with so much firmness and strength. I got in the car, at the back though. I know he has anger issues so I did not want to upset him more. He glared at his girlfriend. She folded her arms, and look out the window.

Xavier: Dineo.

Dineo: what?

Me: I can walk guys, it's really not a problem-

Xavier: no! Don't fuck with me Dineo ...

I was scared for her, and I didn't even know what they were arguing about.

Dineo: want this seat Lelona?

Me: no I'm fine, thank you.

Dineo: please. I... I insist.

She looked at Xavier with the saddest eyes ever, I just wanted to hug her, him though. .. He did not care one bit. To please the poor girl, I switched seats with her, she bumped me purposely along the way. I flinched at her rudeness. I got in the car, then he started driving. He parked right in front of the gate. When I was about to open the door, he got out.

Xavier: don't.

I couldn't help but smile as he opened the door for me.

Xavier: what? *chuckles*

Me: still getting used to you being a gentleman.

Xavier: don't push it.

I laughed, then I said goodbye. I waved at his girlfriend who looked more pissed. Yeah, her boyfriend was disrespectful but she let it slide. Why stay when someone's disrespectful towards you like that? He made sure I was inside the house and then he left.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I smiled just thinking about her, she's so peaceful and not into the bullshit these Cape Town hoes have.

Dineo: you let her call you by your name...

Me: not now.

Dineo: you never let anyone call you by your name besides Rellik, she calls you by your name. You open doors for her, she touches you but you're not having sex with her. Who is she to you?

Me: I said not now! I'm gonna drop you off at your home.

Dineo: we all have rules to follow, what's special about her? *crying* all the past girls have been the same, you're different with her.

Me: that's because she's not a hoe like the rest of you. Now get out of my car.

She sniffed and got out, she looked at me hoping I said would feel bad and say she shouldn't leave but I was annoyed by her presence at the moment. I went to my uncle Ghost's house. His wife opened the door when my car parked inside the large yard. They had guards everywhere and I never understood why. He is one of the most powerful gangsters in Cape Town, I doubt they'd try anything on his territory.

Fifi: I'm so happy you came to visit *smiles*

Fifi is always happy no matter what happens she remains with a smile on her face, that's why I respect her a lot, she doesn't let situations tear her down.

Me: I missed the best Tannie (Aunt) in the world.

I kissed her cheek and hugged her. She led me inside the house, I haven't been in about 2 weeks. I never visit a lot these days because I've been busy.

Me: the old man is around?

Fifi: you know he's always in his man cave
rolls eyes

Me: *laughs* it's where his peace is at.

She laughed and said "mxm" I went to his man cave. He was watching old boxing fights and drinking some beer. I sat down, and looked at the fight.

Ghost: everything okay?

Me: yes.

Ghost: then smoko? (What's wrong?)

Me: I'm just visiting.

Ghost: *laughs* zimedi? (girls?)

Me: *laughs* you could say that.

Ghost: *laughs* wie is die spesiale meisie?
(who is the special girl?) You never ask me for
relationship advice.

Me: I'm not asking for advice. My gekom hier is
te besoek (I came to visit) and you asked me
who the special girl is.

Ghost: wie is die spesiale meisie? (who is the
special girl?) *smirks*

Me: sy is nie my meisie nog (she is not my girl
yet)

Ghost: Fifi will be happy. She was getting
worried you weren't going to give her
grandchildren.

Me: sy is te vorentoe (she is too forward)

laughs I think she has a little boyfriend though.

Ghost: eliminate the problem simple as that.

Then the boxing fight got heated, and he started getting hyped.

Ghost: you're about to run the West Kaap [western cape] with the big dogs. Don't have little problems like this in your personal life that you can't fix. I taught you how to deal with a problem. Kry jou meisie (get your girl)

Me: I'm on it.

Ghost: that's the Rellik I know. *laughs*

BOOKERS MEET MULLER & KING

[02/21, 08:20] 𐀀 +263 77 556 7430 𐀀 : ~I
CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 8

.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

I know you're probably thinking why did I rat Lelona out... well I was not going to get killed by Muller for Lelona, who might not even date Omar. She'll friend zone him, if my predictions are right. I'll have to bring back her depression because there's no way in hell I'll let her take Rellik from me. Even if it's the last thing I do, I will have Rellik. Lelona is too weak for Rellik, she'll probably cry if he does something bad to her unintentionally. He'll need a real woman to understand that men make mistakes and I can forgive him when he buys my forgiveness with expensive gifts. I can already imagine being

respected by these bitches in Cape Town because they'll know I'm the main. I can finally improve my family's life and stop hoeing around for money. I'll just be a hoe for one man. I texted Rellik to come to my apartment.

Me: hey. Can you please drop by? I need to talk to you.

Rellik : what is it that we need to talk about?

Me: I can't say it over the phone.

Rellik : we have nothing to talk about.

Me: please it's important. I wouldn't have texted if it wasn't.

Rellik : I'll be there in an hour.

~~

I paced up and down the apartment. Knowing Rellik I know he'll be rude to me, so I decided to

rush to get the penis enlargement pills so he won't resist me. Once I drugged his drink I heard a door knock right away. I jumped and almost spilled the drink, that's how nervous I was. I quickly wiped the little drink mess I made. If Rellik found out about this he would be very angry to a point where he kills me. So I have to make sure, that I don't make it obvious I drugged him. That's why I didn't add too much of the pill, he should just think it's his hormones and after I fuck him he won't resist me and it that doesn't work. Lona won't ever want to fuck my seconds. I rushed to the door, I was naked underneath the gown.

Rellik: what do you want?

Me: please sit down. Do you want something to drink

Rellik: I'm not here for your bullshit, Kayla-

His words got short once he saw I was naked. I smirked. He chuckled and shook his head. I smiled because I got him where I want him.

Rellik: you'd think I'm dumb enough to fuck with you?

Me: I... but-

Rellik: who sent you?

Me: what? No one, I'm not a traitor.

In a matter of seconds he was strangling me. I was really struggling to breathe and he did not even care that I was about to die. There was a knock on the door, but that didn't stop him

Lona: Kayla? Are you there?

Right now I was in tears, he let go of my neck. I

breathed very loudly, and I was still crying.

Lona: Kayla are you okay? What's going on?

Rellik: doen iets snaaks en ek sal jou doodmaak
(do something funny, and I'll kill you)

He rushed to my room, while Lona banged on the door. I ran to her, she looked worried once she saw that I was crying.

Me: I'm not really good company right now.

Lona: are you okay?

Me: yes. Lona please just go!

Lona: okay. We need to talk later on though.

Me: yes. Now go! *shouting*

She shook her head lightly and left. I didn't even

feel bad for one bit. It's not my fault she's gullible. Her family should've taught her at a young age to stand up for herself. I tried making her tough, now I'm like fuck it!

Rellik: what the fuck were you doing?

Me: telling her to go.

Rellik: don't you ever speak to her like that again! If I ever hear about you damaging her even more, I won't hesitate killing you next time.

He held my face roughly, I whimpered in pain. He pushed me away with so much force that I fell on the floor.

Me: you think she'd go for a guy like you!?! You're crazy! You're too much for her. She wants the simple guys, the sweet ones. Not gangsters who go around beating up women,

who are involved in human trafficking and drug dealing. You're an even bigger fool if you think Muller and King will let you date her. She'll never go against her brothers. She wants guys just like Omar-

Before I could finish talking, he knocked me out with a huge punch in the face and everything went black.

-- LONA'S POV --

I rushed to the house before my brothers could be back home. And luckily they weren't back. Where could they be? I watched TV , because I haven't done that in a long time. At 21:00 my brothers arrived. At least they were safe!

Me: a quick text would've been nice.

Muller: I said no TV.

Me: I was worried about you guys.

King: *laughs* really?

Me: yes! I needed a distraction.

King: okay, we're back now.

Me: where were you guys?

Muller: room.

Me: you were in your room?

Muller: *chuckles sarcastically* uyahlekisa yazi
(you're real funny) go to your room.

I chuckled and strolled to my room. I didn't want to be there anymore. It felt like prison, and I knew I would be too bored. I wanted to study but I didn't feel like studying. I forced myself to study, and eventually the information started getting in. After an hour, I was tired and I went to sleep.

~~

The following morning after I went to the gym, I went to school. There I didn't see Kayla so I had no friends. It was so awkward sitting alone, then I was surprised by Cardo and his friends coming to sit next to me, I closed my eyes, and breathed slowly to prevent a panic attack from these people I barely even know surrounding me.

Cardo: why don't you guys go, ndizonibamba eroundin (I'll see you later)

?: fede fede (sharp sharp)

They left, and I tried handling my breathing, which didn't work so I had to take my pills again. I took them this morning but I guess it wasn't

working. I need a stronger dosage.

Cardo: have you tried speaking to a therapist about your panic attacks?

Me: I'm not crazy.

Cardo: I didn't say you were, but drinking pills so many times will make you addicted and crazy.

Me: Cardo...

Cardo: that's not why I'm here though.

I looked at him to proceed talking. He put his hands in his hoodie and chuckled shaking his head like a person who doesn't believe what he's about to tell me. That made me more curious to know what was going on.

Cardo: Mr Maybank thinks I cheated on the test.

Me: *chuckles* told you you'd pass

Cardo: he wants me to rewrite the test just for his assurance

Me: is he allowed to do that?

Cardo: I don't know and I don't care. If it'll just get him off my back.

Me: we can go over the stuff again.

Cardo: no. It's your lunch, you should take a break.

Me: dude, I really don't mind. Come on.

I took out my books, and he did the same. I noticed he looked around a lot I guess he was embarrassed to be studying at his lunchtime?

Me: you know they won't give you marks nor assure your degree.

Cardo: what?

Me: you don't want to appear as a nerd. But the

people you don't want talking about you won't give you a degree, they'll just talk. They won't do anything besides talk.

Cardo: okay, let's do this.

~~

After I helped him, he felt like he was ready for the test, and I agreed with him. Although there were stares, he didn't pay any mind to them. He thanked me and then he left, I went to my next class. After the class I wanted to call Omar so bad because I was having this bad feeling, and I hate to admit it. I was missing him. I bumped into someone, I quickly apologized picking up my textbook. I heard feminine giggles, looking up I saw who it was. Khanyi, Zikhona and Kayla were looking at me like I was something disgusting. I was shocked by Kayla's huge black eye.

Me: Kayla! Are you okay?

Kayla: oh please. Don't act like you care, this is your fault.

Me: what? My fault? Did Muller do this? I'm so sorry. I didn't know he'd beat you-

Kayla: just shut up! And get the fuck away from me. Ugh I never wanted to be friends with you, I just felt sympathy for you. You decided to take it into something more. Get the fuck away from me. I'm tired of seeing your fat face.

Me: Kayla...

Kayla: gosh here she goes. She's about to beg me to be her friend.

Me: I. .. you know what? Fuck you.

I walked away, they all laughed at my anger. I should've listen to everyone but then again, I decided to be fucking naive and listen to that hoe! I was so pissed off, I felt a panic attack resurfacing so I took pills again. Maybe I do

need to talk to someone before I get addicted I don't want my life to be ruined because of pills that, I think, are helping me. I wanted to call Omar, but I knew Muller would track my calls. So I went to town when I found a public phone I tried calling him but it rang straight to voice-mail. I sighed then tried again, but no luck again. Trying my last time was a bit hard because I was scared he wouldn't pick up and I needed to talk to him. I missed him. Luckily he picked up.

Omar: hello?

Me: Omar!

Omar: Lona?

Me: hey, I thought you weren't never gonna pick up.

Omar: I don't usually answer unknown calls. Are you okay? Did something happen?

Me: no I just missed you.

Omar: damn, that's the first usually I'm the one missing you and you would be playing hard to get.

Me: *chuckles* just because I don't tell you I miss you doesn't mean I don't miss you.

Omar: *laughs* you know I was listening to my favourite song before you called-

Me: oh, I'm sorry!

Omar: you didn't let me finish.

Me: sorry, go on. *laughs*

Omar: *laughs* the song is my favourite because it reminds me of you.

Me: *blushes* what's the name of the song?

Omar: Ed Sheeran Perfect.

Me: but we weren't young when we fell in love.

Omar: so we are in love.

Me: you're way too forward. *chuckles*

Omar: and you love me for it

Me: I didn't even say I love you, fool.

Omar: "but we weren't young when we fell in love"

He copied my voice. I laughed out loud people starting looking at me.

Me: one. I do not talk like that. Two. I'm in front of people stop. *giggles*

Omar: let them see you glow. I should make you a t-shirt that says "Omar's girl" just so they can stay away.

Me: *laughs* I'd like that t-shirt very much.

He started speaking to someone in the background, so I knew he was busy.

Me: I'll try and call you tomorrow.

Omar: okay, bye baby.

Me: bye.

Omar: bye who? *chuckles*

me: your friends are waiting for you. *laughs*

Omar: and I'm not leaving until you say baby.

Me: I'll just hang up.

Omar: so rude to your beloved boyfriend.

Me: bye baby.

Omar: that's all I wanted to hear.

He made kissing sounds and then we both hung up. Then I went to the hospital I usually go to. There I asked to speak to Doctor Vane, I was very happy she wasn't busy.

Doctor Vane: Leona!

Me: Lelona

Doctor Vane: sorry *laughs*

Me: how about you just call me Lona from now on? *laughs*

Doctor Vane: yes. We have an appointment?

Me: no. But I would like the numbers for the therapist you recommended so I can contact her.

She looked very happy that I was actually giving the therapist option a chance.

Doctor Vane: I'll email them to you. Do not worry. I'm happy you have decided to take a chance with her, I promise you you won't regret it.

I just smiled at her, I hope this works because I

need to stop being dependant on my pills

~~

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I walked out of Dineo out of my house after we fucked for like 5 hours. I have several hoes in my life. And plenty of women jump at the opportunity to be my bitch. I don't want a relationship because it's a weakness, that's why I just have hoes. They like the money I give to them, and I like the sex they give to me. But I hate it when it gets messy and the girls start developing feelings. That's when I cut them off, and I'm planning on cutting Dineo off, she's becoming too clingy for my liking. On the other hand. I was still pissed off Kayla would try to have sex with me, that dirty bitch has been

fucked by everyone. I was feeling a little hungry so I ordered some pizza, while debating with myself how I'm going to kill Omar.

Me: suicide?

Nah. That'd be too obvious it's planned because that kid the perfect life. He was adopted by white parents at a young, he went to the most expensive private schools. All his life he has had his 2 white friends and his 3 new black varsity friends. I even know his schedule. So I should make it a car accident? It's more believable, and if I bribe a few cops. The case could be thrown away. I don't even think I'll be a suspect to the case. I called Scrappy.

Scrappy: praat. (Talk)

Me: I need someone dead. Car accident, I want

a clean job.

I told Scrappy the rest of the details regarding what time he'll be on the street, how the car accident should be planned and what should the cause be.

~~

I checked out my 2 clubs and business was going well as usual. The restaurant I own was also doing great so I could clean the money in these businesses. The businesses are just a front so the police doesn't catch on to me. My phone vibrated it was a text from Scrappy.

SCRAPPY: all done.

I smiled then placed my phone back to my

pocket, and proceed looking at the restaurant's finance books.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I finally arrived at home, Muller wasn't in the house. King was in the house, he was playing with his Playstation 4 and drinking a dumpie of Black Label.

Me: brother.

King: no.

Me: what did I do?

King: you want your phone and I said no.

Me: just for a few minutes. Muller won't know
sighs

King: no. You could spend all this time you're
wasting on talking, watching me play PS4 on TV,
while you can.

Me: but you're playing soccer.

King: *laughs* since when did you start hating
soccer?

Me: since my favorite team became a team of
losers.

King: I forgot you're a Pirates fan *chuckles*

Me: was. Past tense

He ignored me and got hyped when he scored
a goal.

Me: let's play Grand Theft Auto 5 instead.

King: no, I'm busy. Phola (chill)

I rolled my eyes, I watched him play his game and after a while he got annoyed by me sighing a lot and placed GTA 5 in the PS4. I smiled and we played the game.

~~

At night Muller came back I ran upstairs to make it seem like I was in my room, I almost fell and King kept laughing at me. But my toe hurt so bad it was hard for me to laugh. I limped downstairs, King and Muller laughed at me, they even laughed harder when I was crying. Then they saw it was serious then they attended to my toe.

Muller: ubutyhu nani? (What were you doing?)

Me: running.

Muller: if you would've followed your rules then this wouldn't have happened.

Me: can't the punishment stop? I learned my lesson, I'll never lie about my whereabouts. And I'm sure you guys will be happy to know Kayla isn't my friend anymore.

They both got hyped. I just looked at them being insensitive about the issue. I just lost my only friend and they're happy about it.

Muller: for that smart decision. I'm taking off your punishment.

Me: really?

Muller: yeah. Your phone is on my the left side bed drawer. The other things you'll get them tomorrow.

I ran to his room, and took my phone. First thing I did was text Omar.

O : got my phone back

He didn't reply, maybe he's with his friends. I shouldn't call it'll be too much. I was on WhatsApp now, and I saw Kayla posted plenty of statuses. One even said "there's a Kelly Khumalo in Cape Town † ♀ " I decided to ignore her petty drama. That's until I saw her post a picture of Omar with the caption. "R.I.P Omar, only the good die young. I'll miss you babe " I don't know what pissed me off more her playing with death like that or her calling Omar babe like he cares about her. But what she posted really bothered me I went to his Facebook account, on his timeline there were people writing R.I.P posts. My hands started shaking, this cannot be true. I talked to Omar earlier on, he was perfectly fine. This cannot be true. I saw another girl called Skylar

wrote on his timeline "how I wish I didn't invite you over for the party . Then the accident wouldn't have happened . I'm sorry Omar, farewell dear friend " . Right then I screamed as loud cries instantly left my mouth without my control. My brothers were in my room so fast, I balled myself up and cried. Omar must be fine, I just talked to him earlier!

BOOKERS MEET CARDO

[02/21, 08:21]┐ +263 77 556 7430┐ : ~ I

CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 9

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I couldn't sleep the whole night, my brothers tried comforting me and it didn't help at all. My heart was broken into a million pieces. Omar was the only guy I saw a future with, he loved me and I couldn't even say 'I love you' to him. I didn't even say a proper goodbye to him. We just started dating! He understood me, he never judged me and he was always so sweet to me. How did the accident even happen?

Muller: I know this is painful, but I promise you.
Izodlula (it'll pass)

I don't know why, but that made me even more angry. How could he speak about Omar's death like it wasn't something serious! It was to me, then it all clicked!

Me: you!... you did this! you didn't want us to date! You pretended to be okay with it so you could kill him! *crying*

Muller: that's bullshit. And I'm not going to listen to it.

He walked out, and I followed him in anger with tears falling down my eyes. King just looked at us, not even saying a word

Me: he was the only guy that liked me for me! He never asked for something in return. He was sweet, loving, funny and everything I ever wanted. And you had to ruin that for me! You're oppressing me because you want me to be a child, I'm 18!

Muller: hey! andiy'bodisanga lebharu yakho. (I didn't kill your fool) why would I lie about something so stupid?

Me: so stupid!? Wow, how fucking insensitive can you be!

I started beating him up, he seemed unfazed by it though, King came in between us, and just held my arms.

Muller: listen to me! I would never do that to you. I didn't kill him.

He looked sincere. Now I felt bad for even accusing him. But I still think he did it.

Me: sorry.

Muller: I understand. How about you go sleep for a while? maybe you'll wake up okay.

I nodded and went to my room. I couldn't sleep

though, I checked my phone and Facebook became the first app I visited. Omar's wall was filled with more R.I.P posts. I didn't want to post because I didn't want to do too much, and have people questioning me what we were, it'll just break my heart more. In our time together we never really took pictures. I feel like people will think I was lying and I'm doing it for attention. So I just stalked his wall and didn't comment on anything. I received a call from a number I didn't know.

?: hey.

Me: who is this?

?: no need to be hostile *chuckles*

Me: Xavier?

Xavier: yes?

Me: why are you calling me?

Xavier: I heard, about what happened and I just

wanted to check if you were okay.

Me: that's nice of you.

Xavier: yeah, I know losing someone you like is tough. And in that moment you just need a distraction to take you away from that pain.

Me: yeah. I guess so.

Xavier: this is probably the first time you're talking to me and you're not scared.

Me: *chuckles* yes

Xavier: that's good. I don't want you to be scared of me. I'm human just like you.

Me: well stop being scary then.

Xavier: how? *chuckles*

Me: try smiling next time. Or be nicer.

Xavier: smiling and being nice? Nah that's not me

Me: I know, that's why I'm scared of you. You've got this scary look.

Xavier: people will walk all over me if I'm smiling all the time, and I'm being nice to everyone. When people fear you, they respect you.

Me: I didn't say smile to everyone just a few people.

Xavier: I do smile.

Me: like 2 times a day. *laughs*

Xavier: I'm not a children's show where I have to be happy all the time. *chuckles*

Me: and you still want me not to be afraid of you. I wonder what it was like growing up with you *laughs*

Xavier: yeah I was a bad kid *laughs* Juvi was like my second home.

Me: what? *laughs* the stress you must've brought to your parents!

Xavier: they died before I was corrupt...

Me: oh.. I'm so sorry

Xavier: no it's fine. I got over it.

Me: yeah let's not talk about depressing things.

I wiped a tear as I thought about Omar, I miss him so much. He would be calling me right now and probably sing Perfect for me since he said it was his favourite song.

Xavier: I'm sure your childhood was clean.

Me: uh... I wouldn't say that *laughs*

Xavier: why not?

Me: just a complicated family and verbal abuse from them then high-school bullying. Just a lot of stuff.

Xavier: yet you still look ncaa (nice) and smile through all the fucked up bullshit you went through.

Me: qing qing qing. His colored side comes out.

Xavier: just by saying "ncaa"? *laughs*

Me: ja my broer (yes my brother) *laughs*

He laughed at genuine long laugh, usually he'd chuckle or just laugh like a little laugh. But now he was laughing like really laughing. I laughed because his laugh was so contagious and weird if that's understandable. We continued talking and talking. I found out more about him and he kept asking about me. I was sleepy but the conversation was nice, or "ncaa" as he would say. I actually felt like I could talk to him and he wouldn't judge me because he always has his own dark secrets. He didn't tell me his job exactly even though I know he's a gangster. He didn't want to tell me what he really does, so I assumed he only sells drugs.

~~

The next morning I woke up, and I was surprised that he still hasn't hung up! I felt bad

because I must've fell asleep when he was talking.

me: Xavier?

He didn't reply.

Me: Xavier!

I heard him chuckle. I rolled my eyes. Of course he was not asleep he just wanted to hear me shout.

Xavier: I'm up, Lona.

Me: your airtime must be low.

Xavier: trust me, it's the last thing I worry about.

Me: well I have to go to the gym. Bye.

Xavier: sharp.

Me: that is not a proper goodbye. *laughs*

Xavier: it's how I say it.

Me: well I might just call you Rellik then-

Xavier: Lelona.

He doesn't want me calling him Rellik I still don't know why. He said it last night in the mist of me asking him how he got the name Rellik. He didn't want to tell me, and he doesn't want me to call him Rellik. He wants me to call him Zay but I'm not doing that so I'll call him Xavier.

Me: say goodbye properly *laughs*

Xavier: so you're going to force me to say goodbye?

Me: yes!

Xavier: well you are the one that is going to be

late for the gym and classes. Not me

me: ugh *rolls eyes*

Xavier: *laughs* bye.

Me: finally! *chuckles* bye.

I hung up the phone. I rushed my morning routine and headed to the gym. I kept thinking about Omar, how sudden his death is. Just when I was receiving pure happiness. It gets taken away from me. I am grateful for Xavier though, he really was a great distraction for me. Otherwise I wouldn't have slept and I would have been depressed the whole night, even though I only slept at 3am talking to Xavier.

~~

After the gym, I walked back home. On the way I thought about Kayla. She called me Kelly Khumalo on her status. I will never understand how a person can turn their back on you after

you have given them your all. I really don't.
Taking someone for advantage because they care for you is really spiteful. And I hope karma gets her bad. For all the times she has verbally abused me and blamed it on the alcohol, and for all the times she belittled my anxiety attacks.

King: how are you feeling?

Me: I'm going to be late for class.

King: sit down.

I sighed and sat down. He looked at me, and I didn't really want to have this talk.

King: I heard you laughing at midnight.

Me: I was on the phone.

King: you're cool with Kayla again?

Me: no, uh. .. it was Cardo.

It was the quickest name that came in mind because no way in hell am I going to tell them their "gang" boss, well almost boss was helping me deal with Omar's death. I know about Xavier being second-in-command through Cardo.

King: Cardo?

Me: yes. He was being a great friend and was trying to console me last night.

King: you're friends with Cardo?

Me: well since Kayla ditched me, he's been having my back.

King: what happened?

Me: no! Nothing happened... it's just that, I was alone during a break before my class and it just so happened he had a break too so we ate lunch together while it helped him with the one module he is struggling with.

King: okay.

Me: I have to go.

King: I'm going to drop you off. We won't be here when you return.

Me: why?

King: dad has fallen sick so we're going to see what's wrong.

Me: I want to go!

King: no. You're still in school. We'll give you more details when we return.

Me: so unfair. *crying* Why do people I care about keep-

King: hey! Stop that.

He hugged me as I cried hard. Maybe Kayla is right . I am Kelly Khumalo. Everyone I am close to I bring bad luck.

~~

-- KAYLA'S POV --

I didn't feel like attending classes today, so I didn't. I stayed in my apartment, right when Patrick left I made myself food and ate. I guess I'll watch movies all day, my phone beeped so I checked the message. It was Khanyi.

Khanyi : humpty dumpty just arrived in the campus with her hot brother

Me: I don't give a fuck about that bitch.

Khanyi : you should since she's gonna be your ticket to getting Rellik.

Me: he doesn't even want me in his bed.
Remember?

Khanyi : that's what muthi is for, idiot!

Me: what no! I'm scared of those things and I don't believe in them. I have to find another way.

There's a party at his club tonight. I'll pay someone to put something in his drink then, when he'll be drowsy. I'll take him to my apartment. Then we could do it all night.

Khanyi : I have a better idea.

Me: that is?

Khanyi : I'll let you know when we meet for lunch. And you're going to love it.

I just laughed, Khanyi always has the craziest ideas. I can't wait for lunch to hear this plan she has for me.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

Cardo: so you're home alone?

Me: yes. *sighs*

Cardo: how about we go to the club?

Me: no!

We were in my home, my brothers were already gone. And I'm guessing Bobby is busy because he isn't here.

Cardo: come on. If you're here alone you'll get depressed thinking about your dead guy.

Me: as soon 12am hits, I'm going home.

Cardo: that's when the fun begins! *laughs*

Me: I don't care. *laughs*

Cardo: okay. I'll come by to get you at 8pm.

Me: cool with me. I just have to find an outfit.

Cardo: no sweats.

He shook his head in a dramatic way. I laughed, he loves dissing my clothes. Yet he's wearing

American flags like that's normal.

Me: don't talk to me about clothes when you're still wearing flags.

Cardo: ohhhh! *laughs*

~~

I wore my long sleeve turtleneck dark peach dress that wasn't too short nor too long. It showed off my ass though. I don't even know why I bought it, it looked cute in the store but I didn't know it was a bit tight. I wore my black heels, since earlier on I took out my braids, and washed my hair. I tied my hair in a tight ballerina bun. I didn't want to apply makeup because I'm not used to makeup. I heard the house phone ring. I rushed downstairs and let Cardo in. I don't think I'll need a purse because I don't want to attract thieves. It's bad enough I'm already going to the club with a gangster. I opened the door, and Cardo was still in his car.

He whistled when I got in the car.

Me: don't start.

Cardo: how don't you see how hot you are!?

Damn.

Me: *rolls eyes* don't start please.

Cardo: I'm just playing. *laughs* but you do look beautiful.

Me: thank you.

He cleared his throat, I know he wanted me to compliment him back. I laughed at his craziness.

Me: you look okay.

Cardo: I'm going to have the ladies crying tonight! *smirks*

me: I'm just happy you're not wearing flags.

Cardo: I know all colors suit me.

Me: keep telling yourself that. It might come true. *shrugs*

~~

At first I was nervous, but Cardo bought me a glass of cocktail. He said they'll calm me down. I only drank a bit because I didn't want to get drunk. It tasted good though.

Cardo: let's go.

Me: where? *confused*

Cardo: VIP *laughs* stop acting weird I'm not trying to fuck you.

I was shocked at how blunt (honest) he is. He laughed at my facial expression then we walked to the VIP section. He dapped everyone and I

was shocked to see Xavier here. He was wearing a black t-shirt, and black pants and black sneakers. Then his black cap was backwards.

Cardo: Lona, meet the gents.

I just waved, Xavier's stare was scaring me so I looked away. I drank my cocktail, I could see that it was finishing up. I need another one. I slightly pulled Cardo to the side.

Me: I want to go home now.

Cardo: we just got here.

Me: and I feel uncomfortable.

Cardo: okay, I'll take you home-

Xavier: sy sal bly. (she will stay.)

Cardo looked at me, I looked down. This club environment was uncomfortable for me. Cardo nodded at Xavier and he left me there. After Cardo was a bit far, Xavier smiled.

Xavier: am I still scary?

Me: not if you're smiling. *chuckles*

Xavier: why do you want to go?

Me: I don't know anyone here and it's awkward.

Xavier: you know me, the owner of the club, so you will have fun.

Me: owner, huh? *smiles*

Xavier: yeah. Nothing major.

I laughed at him being cocky, he took my hand and walked with me to his friends. There wasn't a space for me to sit, it got more awkward for me and I looked around. Xavier pulled me to his

lap. I was shocked, my breathing got short. But no one could see I was struggling to breathe.

Xavier: relax. I'm not going to try anything.

He whispered in my ear. When he did that, I felt something weird inside of me. Am I just like Kayla? Why am I in another man's lap when my boyfriend died last night? Guilt was eating me alive. Xavier looked at me and winked. I gave him a weak smile. He grinned and I ended up chuckling.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

I was very angry at that bitch! What a hoe she is! It hasn't even been a week Omar died and she's already in Rellik's lap.

Khanyi: how are you going to do that plan with her here? He's caught up with her.

Me: I'll find a way. She's too easy to manipulate. I'll just make her cry, and run away to her home. I know he hates weak people so he won't run after her. He'll get frustrated soon. Trust me. I know him

Khanyi's plan was very good. She said I could make sure he cums then take his cum to this other fertile clinic, she knows people there. Then they'll get me pregnant with his child. That way, we'll always be stuck together. And I won't tell about the pregnancy until after 5 months when he can't force me to abort. Like I said, there's no way in hell I'm letting that fat bitch take Rellik away from me.

Khanyi: she's going to the toilet! Let's go.

Me: chommie you have to talk. She'll recognise my voice.

Khanyi: what's the problem with that?

Me: incase this doesn't work. And I'll have to go ask for "forgiveness" this won't be added to the list.

Khanyi: why would you ask for forgiveness?

We walked to the toilets, on the women side. There weren't a lot of people there, probably like 3 then 4 then Lelona.

Me: to get Rellik through her.

Khanyi: smart move.

I faked a smile. I couldn't tell Khanyi that Rellik said he'll kill me if she cries again because of

me. Khanyi would've backed out of the plan. We walked inside.

Khanyi: I always known she was a hoe. It hasn't even been a week yet and she's already on another guy's lap. A disgrace shame!

I just laughed silently. The other girls in the bathroom laughed out loud. But they didn't even know who we were talking about, Khanyi's dramatic actions made them laugh. I went to one of the bathroom stalls so that when she comes out she doesn't see me. But to Khanyi I made it seem as if I wanted to pee.

Khanyi: I wouldn't be surprised if she has already slept with him. Rhaa lamantombazana (eww these girls) poor Omar, he was a good guy. He didn't deserve the embarrassment from

that fat hoe. Wakhe wambona umntu
abeyi'hagu kodwa uhamba azonaya kwezibhedl
zabantu. Thixo elovumba *laughs* (Have you
ever seen a person who's a pig but goes around
sleeping in other people's beds. Jesus that
smell) I think the pig is here.

They all laughed. I heard another bathroom stall
open, it got quiet then they all laughed again. I
kept my laughs in.

Khanyi: iyabaleka le'bitch. Izoyeka uthanda
amadoda wabantu (this bitch is running away.
She'll stop loving other people's men)

I laughed and walked out. I gave Khanyi a high-
five.

Me: chommie!

We walked out smiling. I checked the VIP section, she wasn't there. Maybe Rellik went to check club management because he also wasn't there. Aw my future bae is so business orientated.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

Lona was crying walking out of the club, and I chased after her. I tried holding her hand but she pulled it away roughly.

Lona: leave me alone!

Me: tell me what happened? What's going on?

Lona: just leave me alone! Delete my number! I never want to see you or talk to you again.

Now I was very angry. What the fuck did I do? I swear if Kayla has something to do with this. I'm killing her without a second thought.

Lona: me being called a hoe just because I sat on your lap is not the attention I want from people. Please just stay away from me.

She got inside a car, I didn't even know was parked for her I think it was an Uber car. I let her go so she can recollect herself. I'll call her later to check on her. Right now I gotta deal with who the fuck disrespected me by making my baby cry.

BOOKERS MEET KAYLA

[02/21, 08:21] +263 77 556 7430 : ~ I
CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 10

- .
- .
- .

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I stormed towards the VIP section. I told one of my gents I'll be back. Quickly I went to the girls side of the toilets and there's wasn't anyone in sight. Frustrated, I slapped the wall hard. Checking the club I didn't see Kayla at all. So that led me to believe it wasn't her because I didn't see her at the club today. I'm more pissed at myself that we don't have cameras in the toilets. I need to talk to security to organise that quickly.

Cardo: waar is sy? (Where is she?)

Me: sy het huis toe gegaan. (she went home)

Cardo: she came here with me.

Me: Uber.

He nodded and didn't ask anymore questions because he could already see I was annoyed and angry at the same time.

Cardo: I'll call her to check-

Me: no. I'll call her, and I swear I'll find out who did this.

Cardo: what happened?

Me: someone must've said something to her, she left here crying. And when I find out who they are. They'll regret ever messing with me.

Cardo nodded and left me alone. I went back home. To calm myself down, I smoked weed. After it kicked in, I called Lona. She didn't

answer the first time. I called her again, she didn't answer. I got up and took my keys. If she won't answer then I'll go to her house to talk to her. I tried her one last time. She answered the phone sniffing.

Lona: what?

Me: what happened?

Lona: Rellik-

Me: don't. *angry*

Lona: please Xavier, I don't want to talk about it. I'm just upset and I'm going to sleep.

Me: so you're going to sleep upset? You think I'm going to let you sleep upset? Jy is maal. (You are crazy). Now tell me what happened before I arrive and force you to tell me.

Lona: * sighs* Khanyi happened.

Me: who's that?

Lona: Kayla's friend.

Me: I knew Kayla has something to do with this!

Lona: she wasn't there. I didn't see her. I only saw Kayla and some other girls I didn't know. Khanyi always hated me I just didn't know that much to embarrass me in public.

Me: I'll handle it.

Lona: don't. Please, I just want it to be over and done with. And I don't want people calling me a hoe again when you fight my battles for me.

Me: you're not a hoe. It's okay to let loose sometimes. Life isn't about being perfect all the time. Your imperfections are perfect.

Lona: thank you.

Me: it's cool.

Lona: no I'm serious. After Omar's death you called me and really cheered me up. You're not so bad as I thought you were.

~~

After hours of us speaking on the phone, she fell asleep again. I loved hearing her sleep. And I'm glad I could make her happy when she's really down. This girl is really something special. From the moment I saw her in her home's kitchen. She had the peaceful yet broken spirit, it just attracted me. Everyone looked at her weirdly for wearing sweats to a party but it showed me how beautiful a girl can be even in her natural form. I still don't understand why she feels insecure when she's the most beautiful human being I have ever laid eyes on. I'm not the emotional nor romantic type but this girl I want in my life. And I'm going to get her because I am Rellik, Killer some may call me and I always get what I want, with no hesitations. This time I decided to hang up in the call because I wanted to call Kurt to get me info on this Khanyi.

Kurt: Rellik

Me: get me information on Khanyi. She's friends with Kayla.

Kurt: the hoe Kayla? She's fucking with Scrappy?

Me: bingo. I want Khanyi's details by tomorrow morning

Kurt: that's a short notice it's still 2am.

Me: I wasn't asking you Kurt. Tomorrow morning, don't make me hunt for these details.

Kurt: yes, boss.

Me: good man.

~~

--LONA'S POV --

I woke up and rushed my morning routine.
Yesterday I slept at about 2am talking to Xavier.

He's really a good listener. I like that in him.
He's a great friend. Especially since I need
friends in my life now. Going to the gym I
received a text from my brother, Muller

Muller : dad's okay. We'll be back in 3
days. Bobby went out of town, so you're on your
own for a few days. Will you be okay with that?

Me: yes. I need the time alone anyway.

Muller : don't do anything crazy.

Me: I won't. I promise

Muller : okay. I'll send you some money.
Love you.

Me: thanks. Love you too

I walked to the gym and after the 3 hours. I
walked back home. I had no classes today
since it was Saturday. So I just studied for an

while then watched some TV. TV also got boring and I played GTA 5 on the PS4.

~~

After 2 hours. I couldn't even concentrate at all, all I kept thinking about was Omar. And Khanyi calling me a hoe. I don't even deserve the stuff happening to me. I couldn't enjoy my high-school life now I can't enjoy my varsity life? Maybe I shouldn't enjoy life at all. Maybe if I talked to Omar more a lot that day, we would've hung out and maybe he wouldn't have died that day. Gosh how I miss his sweet words. He always knew how to make me happy. I can't bear the pain of knowing that I'm never going to see him again. I searched around the house for blades. I couldn't find any and that pissed me off. I checked for knives there wasn't any, even in the cabinets. I was upset my brothers

removed everything that would be harmful to my life. I checked the garage for a rope and it wasn't there! I screamed angry that they would decided to hide all harmful things. I should be grateful but right now I was angry, hurt and annoyed with my life. So I just cried and cried until there weren't tears anymore. Omar really meant that much to me. I checked my emails to pass by time before I have the need to kill myself again. I saw Dr Vane's email. She had given me the contacts of the therapist so I will contact her now. I set up an appointment with her, and she said she could see me today at 4pm. It was now 3pm so I prepared my outfit, it was military blue, black and white printed pants and jacket with a white tank top underneath it. I wore white sneakers and let my hair loose. Then I went out, I arranged an Uber since it was far.

~~

I was 20 minutes early and she was still busy

with another client so I wasted my time on WhatsApp. Looking at statues, I saw Kayla was on the beach with another man I didn't know. She looked beautiful though. Her body was amazing, she is lucky. I'm even surprised she didn't block me from seeing her statues. In the mist of checking statues I saw Xavier's picture it was a picture of him shirtless in his car. His bottom lip was in his mouth and I won't lie he looked good. So I commented on the post as a friend.

Me: † ♀ awusabaseleki (you're being cocky)

Xavier : by taking a picture shirtless?

Me: yes! try taking a picture with a funny face, and wear a t-shirt. Nobody wants to see your tattoos † ♀

Xavier : for you to comment it meant you liked what you saw.

Me: whatever. I have to go. Bye

Xavier : you can't even deny it lol.

I blueticked him and he texted me again. Before I could turn off my phone I made a decision to reply to his WhatsApp text.

Xavier : where are you going?

Me: therapy session with my new therapist Dr Zwide. I'll be out in about an hour.

Xavier:

Me: I believe we talked about this goodbye thingy

Xavier : lol bye

I didn't reply I just smiled at it. Then switched my phone off.

Dr Zwide: Miss Daniel I'm ready for you.

Me: hello.

We walked to her office, it had a home Interior decor. It was really cute, Dr Zwide had that motherly love hug. I felt it when she hugged me, it made me feel safe.

Dr Zwide: good afternoon. I'm sorry if you feel uncomfortable with the hug. I give them out to all my children so they know they're not alone.

Me: children?

Dr Zwide: I don't call them clients. It makes it as if I don't care about them.

Me: oh.

Dr Zwide: so let's start from the beginning. Let me know about yourself and how you ended up

here.

Me: well, uh. .. I am Lelona Daniel, and I am 18. I have anxiety attacks due to being bullied at school and by my own family. And I am here now.

Dr Zwide: mind defining the bullying to me?

Me: no... uhm, well my family would call me fat, ugly, and a freak because I had no friends and I was always studying because I wanted better results. At some point I tried to kill myself. But at school it was worse. I was almost raped twice. First by girls then by guys. A video of me naked surfaced around the school. I was stripped and humiliated like having no friends is a crime and being an introvert is something bad.

~~

After the session which was an hour with Dr Zwide I was feeling very down. Reliving all those memories was just too much for me. My eyes were red from all the crying I was doing there.

She gave me a diary to write how my days go and my feelings. She was very kind and patient, she gave me her personal number to call her anytime I want to when I feel suicidal or my feelings get the best of me. I switched on my phone to organise an Uber but I had a text from Xavier.

Xavier : I'll be waiting outside for you.

I was confused which outside he meant. Maybe at my house? Or somewhere else. Maybe it's a wrong text. My guts told me to check outside before organising an Uber. I saw a black Range Rover, he was inside it typing on his phone. I went to him and knocked on his window. He lowered it down with a touch of a button

Me: really?

Xavier: I knew you'll need a ride.

Me: I'll call an Uber.

He got out of the car, I thought he was going to roughly pull me inside the car but he didn't. He just opened the the other side of the door. He was opening the door me. Heeee this guy! He's acting like I didn't say I'll call an Uber.

Me: Xavier, I just said-

Xavier: get in the car, Lelona.

Me: you're doing it again. You said wouldn't scare me *smiles*

Xavier: you're not listening to me so I have to scare you in order for you to listen to me.

I sighed and got in the car.

Xavier: now was that so hard? *smiles*

Me: mxm *chuckles rolling eyes*

He closed the door then went to his side. He reversed the car then got out of the parking and drove off.

Xavier: how was it?

Me: okay I guess

Xavier: you guess?

Me: it wasn't as good as I wanted it to be.

Xavier: it's still your first time. You'll get the hang of it

Me: yeah, I hope so.

From all that crying in the therapy session, I was feeling tired. I pushed the chair back and

rested.

Xavier: someone's feeling comfortable.

Me: I'm tired.

He drove me to my home. Along the way, we talked about a lot of random things and at home still my brothers weren't around I guess Muller was serious. They won't be back until they are sure dad is okay.

Me: thanks for the ride.

Xavier: you're alone?

Me: *confused* yeah.

Xavier: where is Bobby?

Me: he's busy. He has a life, you know.

chuckles

Xavier: i didn't say he didn't. *smiles* I'm just not too happy about you being in a house alone.

Me: I've stayed alone a lot of times. I'll be okay.

Xavier: I'll send someone to watch over the yard.

me: Xavier... *sighs*

Xavier: I'll call you later to check up on you.

Me: you don't listen to me.

Xavier: when it comes to your safety. I never will.
smiles

Me: goodbye.

Xavier: bye.

I smiled that he said bye without me forcing him to say it properly. I walked inside the yard then walked inside the house. I heard his car speed off once I walked inside the house. The time was now 5:45 pm. I made myself something to eat. After I ate I studied a bit more and after 2

hours I was tired as hell. The house phone rang, I rushed to answer it. I checked through the camera it was a buff dark guy. I was scared as fuck but then I remembered Xavier said he'll organise someone to watch over the yard for me. Xavier is such a good friend.

Me: hello?

?: it's JR. Rellik sent me.

Me: okay, thank you.

I opened the gate and he walked in the yard. I called Rellik to thank him. He answered the call after 3 rings.

Me: JR just arrived. Thank you.

Xavier: he just arrived? He was supposed to be there 2 hours ago.

Me: yeah. But it's okay. I was studying anyway.

Xavier: I'll talk to him about being late.

Me: no don't. I'm really okay with him being late.
It's not a big deal.

Xavier: I'll still have a talk with him.

Me: why am I even trying? You won't listen to
me *chuckles*

Xavier: *chuckles* I'm glad you know it.

~~

after an hour talking with Xavier he had to hang
up so I was back to my boredom. And Xavier
said I shouldn't talk to JR because he's
specifically there for a job. But I'm sure the guy
is hungry. I made him a burger with baked chips.
I poured him some of Muller's coke. Then I'm
placed it on a tray and took it to him. Once he
saw me, he was a bit surprised I made him food.

Me: I'm sure you are hungry.

He didn't talk to me, I then realised Xavier must have told him not to speak to me.

Me: I'm sure Xavier told you not to talk to me, don't mind him. He can be a bit extreme. I can't let you starve to death.

JR: ndiyabonga, boss lady. (Thank you)

Me: please don't call that. I'm Lelona but everyone calls me Lona.

He looked like he was at the age of 29 or 30. I can't have him calling me boss lady. It's too much.

JR: thank you, Lona.

Me: my pleasure, JR. *smiles* have a good

night.

JR: you too.

I walked inside the house, and walked to my room. I was tired so I slept early.

~~

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I walked in the warehouse where they kept her. It was me and Scrappy and 2 other members of gang. They removed the bag that covered her face. Her mouth was covered so we couldn't hear what she wanted to say except her mumbled cries and screams. I'm happy we couldn't hear her cries. Just by looking at this bitch I'm annoyed.

Me: Khanyi right?

She cried even more and I just chuckled. I don't give a fuck about her cries.

Me: now you'll learn not to mess with Lona. Kayla should've warned you I do not play when it comes down to her. And you decided to play, now you have to pay.

I aimed my gun at her head, she shook her head crying. I clearly could see she was badly beaten up.

Scrappy: you sure you want her dead?

Me: she'll talk about this.

Khanyi shook her head quickly crying.

Me: I still think she needs to learn a lesson.

So she won't ever forget. I took a knife from one of the guys. I drew a L on her cheek so she knows to never disrespect Lelona or me ever again. She screamed crying from the pain she felt as the blood went down to her neck.

Scrappy: *laughs* you're one crazy motherfucker.

Me: I think this is a small pain to what Lelona felt. Don't you think?

Scrappy: she needs something more extreme.

Me: me too.

I chuckled, she looked at me in fear.

Me: if this goes to the police, you'll be in body

bag. Does this bitch even have a policy? I might want her dead next week.

The guys laughed, I took the kniknife and placed it on her eye.

Me: just to make sure you don't go around snitching.

She shook her head crying, I just laughed. She didn't feel any sympathy when she was making Lona cry, why should I feel any sympathy for her?

Scrappy: I'm tired of this bitch crying so much!

He punched her, and the gents just laughed. She had even more tears. Her left eye was becoming swollen. I bent down to the level of

the chair she was sitting on, well she was tied to.

Me: Khanyi, 20 years old. You live with your grandmother after your mom moved to the look for work and never came back. I'd hate for your grandmother to have a bad accident in her house

Scrappy: fall and bust her head *smirks*

Me: it really would be a bad thing. She's too old to be making mistakes. That all will happen if I spend even a minute in jail because of you. Because I would never spend a day edanyane (in jail). Trust me *chuckles*

Now I was annoyed by this whole thing so I did something that would make sure next time she speaks to Lelona she'll have respect. I placed the knife under her eye. She screamed but we

couldn't hear her properly because her mouth was covered. With no sympathy I took her right eye out.

BOOKERS MEET SCRAPPY

[02/21, 08:21] [+263 77 556 7430] : ~ I
CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 11

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

She screamed her lungs out. I just laughed, the

pain written on her face was my pleasure.

Me: you'll have to change to another varsity.
Wait this year out and get into another one next year. I don't want to scare my wife, with you looking like that.

I punched her, then knocked her out.

Me: untie her and put her in the boot.

I ordered the boys. They listened to me, I checked my phone and no new message from Lona so she really must be asleep. I called JR to talk about him being late.

JR: Rellik.

Me: wat gaan aan? (What's going on?)

JR: andiva? (Pardon?)

Me: my wife was unprotected for 2 hours, JR.

JR: harde, mjita. (Sorry, man) bekukho inxaki endlini (there were problems at home)

Me: I don't give a fuck. We'll discuss this tomorrow.

JR: yeah-

I cut him off by hanging up. Scrappy looked at me with a smirk. I know where this was going....

Scrappy: vrou, huh? (wife, huh?) *laughs*

Me: (hou jou bek) shut up.

Scrappy: a few days ago you saw her as a kid.

Me: we'll talk about this later on. Now we're going to deal with the Khanyi situation.

Then I walked out of the warehouse. Scrappy followed me when I drove off with Khanyi in my boot. Fuck, my car will have blood stains. I'll have to properly clean it off. Once I saw we were in the middle of nowhere. I stopped the car. Scrappy also stopped his and parked next to mine. He got out of his car. I got out too.

Scrappy: probleem? (Problem ?)

Me: yeah.

I went to my boot and opened it. I roughly shook her to wake her up. She whimpered in pain but I didn't care, she just sounded like a dog standing in the rain. I pulled her out and she fell on the tar.

Me: she's going to run home, you know you way home right?

She shook her head no. Her hands were still tied together behind her back and her mouth was covered. Her legs were not tied though.

Me: run before I change my mind and kill you.

She hesitated looking at me in fear. I took out my gun from my behind and fixed it to shoot. She quickly stood up and ran. I waited for her to run a little bit faster so she can taste freedom. I aimed and shot her. She fell on the ground hard. I went to her body, and just like always. I aimed correctly, the bullet went right through her head. This created a blood pool on the tar. I pulled her head up with her hair and dragged her towards the car.

Me: call the gents to clean up. Tell them I need

this body to get removed from here in 30 minutes, fast!

Scrappy: thought you weren't going to kill her.

Me: changed my mind. My guts told me she'll start ratting about this to everyone. It needed to be done.

He just nodded, and he went to his car. Put on some music and bought the weed. We smoked we waited for the boys to clean this place and get this body out of here.

~~

× 1 WEEK LATER ×

--LONA'S POV--

Omar's funeral went by fast, his family decided to burn his body and have his ashes, they said

his body was too ruined to even recognise him from the car fire in the accident. But they knew their son, and they were sure it was their son . So they only did a memorial service for him where they talked about him a lot. I didn't go to introduce myself there. But I was shocked to know that he told Skylar about me. Skylar was his girl best friend. She invited him to the party and that's when the accident happened. She still blames herself for it but I felt bad that she felt that way because Omar wouldn't want her to feel like that. The exams were here and the Easter holiday was approaching. I didn't want it to come because I'll have to go back to those demons I call family. I don't want that. I received a call from Xavier, he has really been a great friend these days. I might even call him my new best friend. Him and crazy Cardo. They always cheered up my mood.

Me: hey?

Xavier: ja.

I could hear he just woke up. His voice was raspy and so sexy. I can't even deny that he's good looking and sexy. His voice is already amazing when he's full awake but when he wakes up. It's incredible.

Me: aww you just woke up? You can go back to sleep.

Xavier: nah. I just saw your text. Talk to me.

Me: woah, are you always this grumpy when you wake up?

Xavier: talk, Lelona.

Me: I told you don't go to the party now the hangover is too much. *laughs*

Xavier: Lelona *groans*

Me: sorry. I need a favour.

Xavier: anything.

Me: there is a sale at Sportscene and there's these sneakers that I'm dying for. I'll send you the pictures. I just want you to stand there quickly before someone takes them first.

Xavier: I'll send someone over there. Why can't you go?

Me: I have to start at the campus first. Mr Maybank wants to talk to me.

Xavier: you have classes today?

Me: no. And send a picture of the guy you're going to send over there so I know who I am going to. I just want to get in the shop and pay. I would've asked Muller and King but they're -

Xavier: Lona, I really don't mind.

Me: I don't want you to think I'm taking advantage of your kindness. I really appreciate everything you have done for me.

Xavier: everyday you say thank you to me, and I

still don't know why. *chuckles*

Me: I'm being grateful.

Xavier: let's put an end to it now. I know you're grateful, no need to say it everyday.

me: okay. Well I have to go.

Xavier: cool. Talk to you later

Me: bye

Xavier: bye.

I smiled hanging up, then I sent him pictures of the sneakers I wanted. This week has been good, no Kayla drama, no Khanyi drama, my dad is healthy. And most of all my brothers are still okay and safe. The Omar case was still being investigated, I think. Because the last time I heard it was thrown out and ruled it as an accident. Who would want to kill Omar? He was always so nice and sweet whoever did it. I will never forgive them, ever! His parents hired a

Lawyer to bring evidence his car was made that way that day but there wasn't any. The judge dismissed the case after they just brought the case up on assumption. I know a lot can happened in one week. Dr Zwide's sessions help me a lot. I see her 2 times a week, the journal is also a good thing for me because no one knows about it but me and Dr Zwide. It's like I'm talking to someone who won't judge me. I can say whatever I want and not be scared of being judged because of the opinions I have. I rushed downstairs because I needed to rush to the campus. Muller was there, King was not though. He was with X. I just waved at them and rushed out. I walked to the campus and went on Mr Maybank's office.

Me: sir, you emailed me wanting to see me.

Was it even allowed for Lecturers to email

students? I didn't want him to notice I was uncomfortable with this so I forced a smile while my heart started beating fast.

Mr Maybank: yes, how are the sessions with Ricardo Damon?

Me: pardon?

Mr Maybank: he told me how he achieved such a high mark in my exam. You were tutoring him.

Me: yes, on certain days, sir.

Mr Maybank: how much do you charge him?

Me: he's kind of my friend so I don't charge him sir.

Mr Maybank: I want you to tutor 3 of my struggling students. They're willing pay R50 an hour .

Me: really! ? Yes I'll do it sir.

~~

I walked from UCT campus to Sportscene and it was a bit long and I was tired as hell. And the sun wasn't helping either. After a while of walking, Xavier called me.

Me: I'm arriving in the store now.

Xavier: already bought them. Come to Spur .

Me: what!?

Xavier: I already bought them for you.

Me: you can't do that. I don't want you spending money on me.

I know guys, especially guys like Xavier. One minute they're buying you expensive gifts, the next minute they think they own you because of the expensive gifts.

Xavier: already did.

Me: mxm.

I dropped the call, he doesn't listen to me and I hate that. When I say no I wish people would listen to me. I'm not comfortable with guys buying me expensive gifts and he did it, but I told him no already. He called again, and I just turned off my phone. The sun was burning me and it was way far to get home. I switched on my phone, called up an Uber. Then switched it off ignoring Xavier's texts and missed calls. Once the Uber arrived I went home, I was tired and heating up. I'll need a cold shower. Once the Uber parked next to my house, I saw Xavier black Lamborghini. I was shocked he was here already. But why am I surprised this guy's is a speed racer he does this more often.

Xavier: Lelona

Me: I don't think we have anything to talk about

until you start listening to me.

Xavier: I'm all ears.

Me: I do not need your money. I can buy my own stuff and I like buying my own stuff. It's a part of who I am. I understand your girlfriend or girlfriends love you spoiling them but I'm not them. I like spending my own money and not depending on anyone else besides myself and my brothers. Please understand what I'm saying and take it seriously.

Xavier: I do. And I promise this is the last time I do it.

Me: thank you. Now I have to go all the way to the bank to withdraw your R1 100 but I just would've swiped at the store.

Xavier: I'm not going to take the money.

Me: why do I even bother with you? Anyway thank you.

He nodded, I hugged him goodbye. He kissed my forehead then I went inside the yard. Once I was in the house that's when he drove off. The house was empty, I guess my brothers were out. I studied for the exam I was going to write tomorrow.

~~

I checked the time it was 6:00pm I guess I studied till late. I took a picture of my books and posted it on my WhatsApp status with the caption "it's dedication not luck" then I checked other people's statuses and I saw Kayla was partying but she's in the module with me. We're both writing the test tomorrow. I saw her status that was posted just now. It was written "bitches have no life whatsoever" something in me told me it was about me because why would she post that after I posted a picture of my books? She really loves breaking me down and I don't understand why. She has it all, I should be the one jealous of her

yet she's jealous of me. She's got the perfect body, she has a lot of guys that like her, and she has a lot of friends. I'm fat and all the friends I have are like 2 excluding her. Well she's not even my friend anymore. She's too caught up with Khanyi and Zikhona to even see that's she's losing the person that cared about her the most, and that's me. I didn't even reply to her petty drama. If I have no life why is she wasting hers stalking me? I'll never understand Kayla yaz, she bullied me in high-school and she's trying to do it again in varsity, and I can't believe myself! I'm letting her bully me. I'm letting her petty drama affect me. I should just have positive vibes and let karma deal with her. Because clearly she's not on my level. I'll pray for her to get better from all the bitterness and jealousy because those two things are what can kill a person or make them go on the wrong track of life then they'll regret it after it is too late to fix anything. I hope she doesn't

experience that. Although she hates me I don't hate her, I feel sorry for her. She needs love in order to give love and even though she wishes me bad things. I sorta don't want her to experience bad things. I went downstairs to eat, I saw my brothers. They were eating pizza. I just rolled my eyes, they eat so much yet they always stay fit!

Muller: you drank my coke?

I froze and cleared my throat.

Me: yeah. Just one glass.

How was I going to Muller tha Xavier organised someone to guard over the yard? because he didn't feel like it's safe for me to be here alone. I'd rather not because they both have huge egos

so it'll only cause too many fights. He won't understand that Xavier is only my friend and nothing more and nothing less.

Muller: I thought you were off acid.

Me: I am, just craved it for yesterday only.

Muller: you're lying.

Me: uh? What? I. I am not.

Muller: Lelona; I know you like the back of my hand. Who was here?

Me: no one-

Muller: Lelona!!! *shouting*

I was scared for my life. When Muller is too angry, he can not control his anger. Last time he beat up Omar. I'm scared he'll beat me up. Even though he promised he would never do that.

Me: it was just Cardo. We were studying here in the house.

I replied with glossy eyes. I hate being shouted. And he knows how vulnerable I am. He sighed once he saw I wanted to cry.

King: someone would swear you two are twins. You both can't control your emotions. You really act the same *shakes his head chuckling*

Me: mxm. He knows I hate being shouted.

King: wena uxokela ntoni? (Why did you lie?)

Me: I thought you guys were going to be angry about Cardo being here.

Muller: I talked to him a long time ago. He's harmless.

Me: talked to him? That's why he ditched his friends and came to study with me. Not

because he cared about the test, you guys really told him to look out for me and I was alone that day.

Muller: I told you I would do it. We said it at the party.

Me: i didn't think you were that extreme to force a varsity guy to not enjoy his varsity life because of me.

Muller: not to say he shouldn't enjoy it. Just watch over and hang with you so you don't feel lonely.

Me: so you're paying someone to be my friend? Wow my life is lame. I really have no life *sighs*

King: don't say that.

Me: it's true. My brothers have to pay someone to hang out with me. I feel like I am a failure.

Muller: by not having any friends? That's an fucked up failure then.

Me: you're not helping.

Muller: look, your goals should be about getting an education not friends. Why do you even need friends when you have us? Friends come and go but-

Me: family stays forever. *sighs* I want girl friends and friends that won't go around fighting everyone when I tell them how my day went. Nor fight my boyfriend in Waterworld.

Muller: I get your point.

Me: and please stop paying Cardo to hang out with me. I want a genuine friendship.

I texted Cardo. I am so disappointed in him.

Me: your payments are over. You didn't have to fake being my friend for money.

Cardo : sorry, Lona. I needed the cash but right now I enjoy your company kid. You not that bad.

Me: mxm.

Cardo: I'll make it up to you.

Me: Let's go to that vegan restaurant. You owe me.

Cardo: I'm not about to pay R100 to eat leaves. Let's go to this spot I know, they sell the best braai.

Me: I can't eat braai meat.

Cardo: come on. It's just for one day. Let loose. I'll pick you up in 30 minutes.

I looked at my brothers who were busy being idiots and throwing popcorn in the air and trying to land them in their mouth and laughing at each other when the other misses.

Me: I'm going to Debonairs with Cardo.

Muller: Debonairs? *confused*

Me: yeah, he's trying to apologize. Can I go?

King: as long as you get back before midnight.

Me: okay, thanks.

I rushed upstairs to wear something casual. I wore my light blue jeans with a light blue Jean jacket then a white poloneck underneath. I left my phone so I don't attract thieves I wore my white sneakers again. And right after I was done, Cardo was in the kitchen. It hasn't even been a minute and he's eating in the house. He loves food. I know many of you are thinking Cardo and me have feelings for each other. It's a no, because I would never date a gangster and Cardo sees me as his little sister just because he's a year older than me. I see him as my brother. Nothing more!

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

I took out all my frustrations in fucking the hell out of Nandi. She texted me earlier and I couldn't resist. I'm still single even though I want Lelona, and I want her so bad.

Nandi: yes! Yes! Ah ha! Rellikkkkk *moans*

I was slamming my dick in her doggy style. She came and I followed right after her. I pulled out and went to flush the condom down the toilet. I heard my phone ring in the room while I was peeing in there. Nandi bought it to me, she was still naked. I bit my lip and slapped her ass. She smiled and winked.

Nandi: hurry and come back to bed.

I answered the call, it was Cardo.

Cardo: we're going to the Mzoli's Place. Where the gang usually hangs.

Me: why the fuck would you take her to a place full of gangsters!?

Cardo: they don't even know her. They just think she's a friend of mine.

me: Cardo get her the fuck out of there before there is a shootout.

I heard air noises, then I heard my baby talking.

Lona: let me talk to him. He is too much...

Xavier I came here for a good time. I'm letting loose. You said it yourself.

Me: okay.

Lona: okay? Thank God you decided not to be stubborn today.

Me: *chuckles* I'll be there in 15 minutes.

Lona: what? Why? *laughs* we'll be fine.

Me: you know I'm not going to listen to you. And I never will when it comes to your safety

Why the fuck would Cardo take Lelona to the Mzoli's Place in Gugulethu!? Sometimes I wonder how that kid got in my gang. I quickly dressed up.

Nandi: where are you going? Rellik.

She tried to touch me so I quickly pushed her

back and she fell on the bed roughly.

Me: get dressed and get the fuck out of my house. You're done with what you were here for. I'll deposit money for those shoes you wanted.

She nodded wiping her tears and getting dressed. I took my black Range Rover. Then I dropped Nandi off and drove off to the Mzoli's Place.

LONA

[02/21, 08:21] [+263 77 556 7430] : ~I

CHANGED A MONSTER~

INSERT 12

.

.

-- LONA'S POV--

- .
- .
- .

We went inside the place and placed an order for the meat, then went to the place where they braai for us the consumers. It was packed, there were a lot of people. People I was even scared of. Some stared at us, I blame Cardo. He was wearing these American flags clothes and drawing attention to us. I breathed slowly to contain my panic attack. There were a lot of people! I closed my eyes and counted to 10 then I was okay. I smiled at Cardo, but he was looking at me confused.

Me: I was trying to contain my panic attack.

Cardo: I thought you were about to have a seizure or something.

We laughed together and I playfully punched him. While we waited for the meat, we talked. The meat finally arrived. He told me about his baby mama drama. I was shocked that he had a child. He loves his baby mother so much, even though he lies about it I see the smile he had on his face when he talks about her. We were eating and talking.

Me: why don't you just send items then?

Cardo: I want to take care of her too, because she might find another lightie (guy) to take care of her.

Me: and you don't want that.

Cardo: *annoyed* if I wanted that then I wouldn't care.

Me: don't get grumpy with me. *chuckles* just tell her you're low on cash and I'm sure she'll support you.

Cardo: *chuckles* you watch way too many TV shows. This is the real world where when you can't take care your girl, someone else will do it for you

Me: you'll never know unless you try.

Cardo: Lelona-

Me: t.r.y

Cardo: has anyone ever told you how annoying you are?

?: how can a beautiful face like this be annoying?

I looked back, and I didn't know this guy at all. He looked scary to me. He wasn't cute nor ugly just average. He had tattoos all over, even on his neck just like Xavier. He looked older and bigger than Cardo

Cardo: Kenny...

Kenny: hou jou bek, Ricardo! Ek praat met die mooi meisie. (Shut up, Ricardo! I'm talking with the beautiful girl)

He lifted up his vest and I could see a gun. My heart started beating up in 1000 beats. I was afraid Cardo would be stubborn and get us killed by not shutting up. And he did, Cardo got up, and displayed his gun.

Cardo: ek wil nie met jou hierdie te doen nie. Maar jy is uit van die lyn. (I don't want to do this with you but you're out of line)

Kenny: hoekom huil jy? Is sy jou meisie!? Sy is my meisie nou! *roughly pulls Lona's arm* (why are you crying? Is she your girlfriend? She's my girlfriend now!)

People were minding their own business, they couldn't even see what was happening. And it was too loud, there was no point for me to scream. As I tried to scream it's like no screams were coming out. He had a tight grip on my arm, now we were both standing up and I could feel his dick on my ass. He was too close to me, and it made me very uncomfortable. I literally just froze there scared of what might happen next. I can't die today, and I can't get raped today! Not ever! I know I don't appreciate life a lot but I just can't die! Not in a gangster spot where my murder case would lead no where because no one will snitch.

Cardo: sy is Rellik se meisie. Moenie speel met haar nie. (She is Relklik's girlfriend. Don't play with her)

Kenny: baby girl, tell me your name.

Me: uh, uhm i-

Kenny: Ricardo, haar naam? (Her name?)

Xavier: it's none of your business.

We both turned looked behind us, and boy was I lucky to see him!

Xavier: Lelona, come here.

I was scared to even walk over to him because the facial expression he had was very threatening and very serious. If looks could kill Kenny would be 6 feet under right now. Kenny had a tight grip on my arm. I tried to go to him but Kenny pulled me back.

Xavier: Kenny, you don't want to mess with me. May this be my final warning. I'm not a talker, so if I say something once. I want it to happen

quickly. When I tell Lelona she should come to me, she'll walk to me safely without me seeing any type of bruises on her. Or, Mzoli's will be a crime scene very soon.

He let go of my arm and I walked over to Xavier. I was scared to even hug him, when he's angry it's like he's angry at everyone. So I was scared to even touch him. To my surprise he was the one who hugged me.

Xavier: you're okay?

I nodded, I couldn't even say a word out.

Xavier: you're hurt?

I shook my head no. I'm just still scared, my arm

just hurts but I couldn't tell him that. I don't want this place being all messed up because of me.

Xavier: how's your arm?

I shrugged a bit. His jaw clenched I could see it through his hard cheeks. He was really mad.

Me: can you please just take me home?

Xavier: Cardo will take you home. I'll follow right after you guys.

Me: I want you to take me home.

I looked him into his eyes. His right hand ran through his face. He was trying to calm himself down.

Xavier: I'll follow right after you guys. I'll call you later on.

Me: Xavier-

Xavier: please listen to me for once and I promise you I'll call you later.

I looked down defeated because what if Xavier gets shot today and I will be the reason for that. I know he's a grown man and he's a gangster but I can't help but worry because he lets his anger get the best of him sometimes and that will lead him in darker paths.

Xavier: come on, don't do that. I'll be okay.

I nodded and he kissed my forehead. He motioned for Cardo to come with us, Xavier held my hand. We walked out the place. I didn't like the stares we received from people there. I

think they knew Xavier. He made sure I got near the car, safely. He stood with us near Cardo's car. I saw his Range Rover from a far. Why is he driving a Range Rover to a shisa nyama.
Heeeeh lomfana (this guy)

Xavier: drive her home, no quick stops. Call Scrappy to call OG and JR they should come here nou nou (now now)

I cried silent tears to get him worried and not go in back there.

Xavier: don't do that. *wipes her tears* I promised you I'll call you. You love worrying yourself.

Me: I don't want you to go back in here. You're gonna get hurt.

Xavier is the only best friend I don't have in the moment. He always calls at night and I don't sleep with a bad mood. And I don't to lose him too just like I lost Kayla.

Xavier: I need to teach him a lesson. He's disrespectful and I don't like him disrespecting me and the people I care about. He shouldn't even have talked to Cardo like that nor grab you like that but he did it because he likes seeing a reaction out of me well he's gonna see one tonight.

Him talking so angrily was worrying me because from where I look at it. People may die from that, gosh why did I even come to this place when I have a test tomorrow. More cars pulled up. I saw JR, Scrappy and some other guy that had a huge scar on his face.

Xavier: okay, now I have to go. No quick stops, Cardo.

I was about to cry and he looked at me in a firm, stern and serious way to stop what I was trying to do. I folded my arms and looked the way. Cardo was holding in a laugh. Death and beating people up is not a joke. Xavier kissed my forehead then he opened the door for me, I got in the car.

Me: don't forget to call me when you're at your house.

Xavier: and get some rest. You're writing exams. Don't stress about me, jy hoor my? (you hear me?)

Me: yeah.

He closed the door, then Cardo drove off.

Speeding off to be quite correct. I glared at him.
This is not at racing show, it's real life.

Me: why are you speeding?

Cardo: just want to go home quickly. Uligwala
kanene (you're coward) *laughs*

Me: we left the meat there! A total waste of
money.

Cardo: *laughs* I didn't even realise that we left
it there. I'll text Mzoli to keep it safe for me, I'll
take it tomorrow .

Me: you know the owner of the place!?

Cardo: yeah. We all do, even your brothers.

Me: is he also apart of the big gang. ..?

Cardo: you could say that. *laughs* he uses the
shisa nyama to wash his cash

Me: wash his cash like make it seen like the
drug dirty money is made in the shisa nyama.

Cardo: yeah. We're going to stop at the garage I need a quick refill.

Me: Xavier said no quick stops.

Cardo: if we don't stop there. Izofadala ipetrol.
(The petrol will end)

Me: okay, just a very quick stop.

We stopped at the garage close by to where we were. I waited in the car, while Cardo talked to the men outside. I could clearly hear their conversation about the petrol and then they went on to make small talk with each other about the rising price of petrol. After that Cardo drove off.

Cardo: told you nothing will happen.

Me: yeah yeah *chuckles rolling eyes*

I heard a car sound behind us so I looked back,
Cardo sped up but the car also sped up.

Me: I think we're being followed.

Cardo: shit.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

I angrily looked at Kenny. I called Scrappy, JR
and OG because I knew Kenny's crew was
around here somewhere.

Kenny: finally, Rellik has a weakness *laughs*

Me: if you ever touch-

Kenny: you're not going to do anything.

Me: you bullying Cardo because you know he's alone in here and all your boys are here is really a weak move I didn't expect from you.

I aimed my gun at him, that's when eyes landed on us. Some people ran out crazily but I knew all those who were gangsters stayed behind.

Kenny: kill me. Kill me en skep 'n oorlog (and create a war) you will ever win!

Me: I'll figure something out.

Quickly Mzoli rushed in between us. I couldn't shoot Kenny because I respected Mzoli a lot. And if I shoot Mzoli, I will be in deep shit.

Mzoli: Kenny, uit! (Out)

Kenny: see you around, Rellik. I hope I get to see her too. *smirks*

I wanted to beat him up so bad, but Mzoli held me back.

Mzoli: hey! Why is my business a fighting area for you?

Me: you know how Kenny gets under my skin. Eendag ek sal dat seun doodmaak. (One day I will kill that boy)

Mzoli: not in my shisa nyama. I am losing business because of this.

Me: askies. (Sorry)

Mzoli: you're lucky I'm very close with your uncle and you *chuckles*

Me: thanks Mzo man!

Mzoli: and don't go hunting for Kenny. It's been

an while since there has been a war, don't go around looking for it.

Me: I hear you.

My guys and I left. I told them what happened and they said they'll think of ways of getting back around at Kenny without killing him and creating a war. Kenny's father runs the streets in Eastern Cape, but Kenny came here just to live and enjoy life before he goes back to Eastern Cape to take over. He knows I can't kill him because it'll only create war that would never end. Ghost, who is my uncle, always warns me not to kill Kenny but his life is like a ticking bomb and it's soon about to explode because I won't take shit from him. I sped off home, and I didn't see any funny things along the road so I guess Cardo and Lona arrived home safely. I called Lona to make sure. Her phone rang till it was unanswered. For her sake

I hope she's not ignoring my calls because I'll go to her home looking for her. I called again and still it rang unanswered. Before my anger could rise up I called Cardo. It rang and it was answered after a long time.

Me: did you drop her off safely?

Cardo: uh...

I could hear that he was still on the road speeding. In my head I thought maybe he's racing today.

Me: what the fuck do you mean by "uh" Cardo?

Lona: we're being followed.

I was fucking so fucking angry she was in the car when I specifically told Cardo no quick

stops.

Me: what!? Where are you!?

Lona: I don't know.

Me: Cardo!?

Cardo: uh, we're uhm...

Me: you better fucking know where you are, I swear I'll-

Lona: Xavier! He's driving and I don't want him stressed while he's driving. This is my life here. He's not alone in the car

Cardo told me where they were and I was more angry that they didn't listen to me when I said no quick stops. I quickly got in my car.

Me: circle around the same 2 streets. They're following you for information. They want

Lona's address.

Lona: my address? Why?

Me: Kenny's orders. I'll be there quickly keep circling the 2 streets. Do not take her home Cardo!

Cardo: yes, boss

Me: don't hang up either. I need to make sure Lona is safe.

~~

I parked next to her home. I took care of the guy following them. in Lona's mind she thinks Cardo ditched him but me and Cardo know I killed him, so he can drive Lona home, but I took her from a bit far, she didn't see the other guy's car or dead body. I told Cardo to go to the car and wait until OG comes and cleans the bloody mess.

Lona: thanks.

Me: no problem. Next time don't go to Mzoli's, or any shisa nyama. If you want braai meat, I'll braai meat for you.

Lona: that's a bit extreme don't you think?

Me: no. It's the most perfect idea I have heard the whole day

Lona: mxm. If you want me to listen to you and do what you want you also have to listen to me.

Me: Lona-

Lona: no. When i say let's leave. Please let's just leave and leave the fights behind.

Me: I can't just leave. People will look at me like I'm a bitch

Lona: why do you care about what people say? You could've been killed there today.

Me: but I'm still alive.

Lona: you're not listening to me-

Me: and I never will when it comes to your

safety. How much do I have to say that for you to understand?

Lona: mxm

She opened the door angrily. And I just chuckled, my wife can be dramatic sometimes. I got out the car and ran to her. I pulled her quickly before she could touch the gate.

Me: come on, don't be like that. *laughs*

Lona: bye Rellik

Me: hay hay hay uyazibona ke. (No no no, do you see yourself)

Lona: *laughs* don't try Xhosa again.

Me: it's worth seeing you smile.

Lona: bye.

Me: bye.

I hugged her and kissed her forehead. I watched her get in the yard and then in the house. That's when I went in my car, and drove off. I called Cardo to ask if the body was taken care of.

Cardo: Rellik

Me: is it taken care of?

Cardo: we're doing it right now.

Me: I'll be there to check everything out.

Cardo: cool.

I hung up the call. Then went to the road where I killed the guy that was following Lona and Cardo.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I woke up the next morning and did my morning routine. Then I went to the gym. After the gym I came back home and washed again, then wore my white short poloneck dress with a crop Jean jacket and white sandals. I tied my hair in a tight ponytail and made baby hair with some gel.

Then I walked downstairs to the kitchen to eat some cereal. Then after I was done I walked to the campus. I was early so I revised the studying I did last night before the crazy incident at Mzoli's Place. Eventually time was approaching so I went to class. There I sat in the front. I saw Kayla getting in the class, she looked like hell. It looked like she was hungover. She was wearing shades and her weave was messed up. She was wearing jean shorts with a

pink crop top and pink, white, and black colored sneakers. I looked away from her, she just went all the way to the back.

~~

the exam was easier than I thought it would be. I smiled because I knew I definitely passed it. I was walking with my earphones on and listening to Beyoncé the album, I was waiting for Muller to come get back he said he's taking me shopping. He came to fetch me at the campus and he drove off, on the ride he made small casual talk by asking how the exam was.

Me: it was great. I even see a 80% pass. Kayla on the other hand came in the class looking like a girl who didn't take a bath after a party.

Muller: *laughs* I never knew why you liked that

girl.

Me: I'm starting to question my mentality too. I am happy she is out of my life.

Muller: are you really?

Me: what does that even mean?

Muller: you talk about her all the time. She's out of your life now, she shouldn't be something you're obsessed with.

Me: let me delete her number and block her from my WhatsApp. You're right. That Kayla chapter is over.

XAVIER

.

.

.

.

.

please let us take time to appreciate Xavier
being angry and sexy at the same time

[02/21, 08:23] 𐀀 +263 77 556 7430 𐀀 : ~ I
CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 13

.

.

.

× 2 WEEKS LATER ×

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I pouted in the airport. I was going home. The
exams were done and now I had go back home
for Easter's. My brothers couldn't come

because they're planning a heist for another bank. I didn't even want the full details. I was just upset that I was going home alone. I had a video call from Xavier and I just smiled on my own.

Xavier: I thought you landed already.

Me: flight got delayed. They said it should be ready in 30 minutes.

Xavier: you really have to go?

Me: yes otherwise if I had a choice I wouldn't go.

Xavier: look, let me know if you need anything. You know I'll always be there for you.

Me: it's just 2 weeks I'll survive.

Xavier: I know you can survive it. I just want you to call me if anything you don't like happens.

Me: and you'll be in Eastern Cape within a few hours.

Xavier: *chuckles* yes.

Me: you need to stop doing that.

Xavier: call me when you arrive so I know you have arrived safely.

Me: I will. Bye!

Xavier: bye.

I made a kissing face and hung up. No me and Xavier are not dating. The guy is too extreme if you ask me, and he's my friend. Imagine if we dated? I wouldn't be allowed to hang in certain places, he'll always ask where I am. He might even put tracking devices on me. I don't want that. I like my privacy, and he looks like the kind of guy to flash his money on his girlfriend a lot. I don't want that, I like spending my own money. That's why I'm just keeping Xavier as a friend because I won't lie, he really has been there for me through whatever obstacle I had in my life

these weeks, he fixed it for me and made sure I remained with a smile on my face. But I can't overlook the fact that he's older than me, way older. And Muller and King would go crazy if they learned I am dating a gangster. I don't want that "gangster wife" lifestyle it is too much for me to handle. It's been 2 weeks without panic attacks and I would like to keep it that way. My destination was called, so I stood up, did the process and went on the plane.

~~

I walked out with my bags and called my dad.

Me: tata uphi? (Dad where are you?)

Tata: ndiyeza! (I'm coming!)

Me: okay.

I hung up. My father is very strict towards me. Maybe it's because I am the only daughter he

has and he wants everything of mine to go perfectly. But sometimes I would just like it if he would just say "i'm proud of you." So I can know if I have done a good job or not. He arrived after an hour of me waiting. He came with my aunt, his sister, and my mom. I know I am going to hate this ride from East London to King Williams Town. I loaded my bags in the boot. Then I got in the car.

Me: molweni. (Greetings)

Mama: baphi abantwana bam? (Where are my children?)

Me: Khazimla noYanga bashiyekile, ma.
(Khazimla and Yanga stayed behind, ma)

Mama: ngobakutheni? (Why?)

Me: andazi, ma. (I don't know, ma)

My mom is the only family member who doesn't

know what her beloved "children" are doing. The reason she's so cold towards is because after she had me she was diagnosed with Postdrum Depression and she felt no connection at all with me. So everything started believing I was a bewitched child and my mom was also bewitched because she was a perfect mom to Muller and King then after me it was like she was losing her mind. So my mom started thinking I was bewitched too and wanted nothing to do with me, in her eyes. I ruined her life and now she refers to King and Muller as her "favorite" children. I have learned to get over it and accept that she will never come around and I won't receive a mother's love. My whole family started hating me because my mom's depression would sometimes be extreme and she'd just shut the whole world out. She would not eat, not talk to anyone the whole day. Luckily King and Muller do not blame me for mom's depression. These things happen to

most mothers but in my family "sithakathiwe"
(we're bewitched)

The car was filled with them talking about things i really didn't care about. I was sleepy so I slept through the the car ride from EL to King Williams Town. It wasn't long though so my nap was disturbed when the car stopped. I woke up and saw we were already in town. We stopped at the robots. Then the car drove off home in West Bank. Dad parked the car inside the yard, I got out and took my 2 luggage bags out. I went inside the house through the door that connects the garage to the house.

Mom: ukhawleze ke ntombi, singalambi ukhona.
(Hury up girl, we shouldn't starve with you here)

Me: ewe ma. (Yes, ma)

These people I call my family are very old fashioned. They think a woman is supposed to do everything in the household while a man just provides for his family. I would never marry just to be a housewife. Never! I placed my bags in my room then went to start dinner for them. I wasn't going to eat dinner because I'm on a diet meaning if I eat meat it has to be in cheat days only. And I cheat by just one peice. I finished cooking and dished for them. I took mom & dad's food to them in their room. They thanked me and I walked out again. My aunt and her husband have a flat outside. I took the food to them in a tray. After all of that, I washed the dishes and cleaned the kitchen counters. Then I went to rest in my room. It was still 7pm and I'm already tired so hard. I received a call from King.

Me: please come back.

King: what's going on?

Me: they're slaving me around. Dad doesn't even stop them anymore. He's becoming more and more cold towards me.

King: lil sis, remember dad was sick. Him not involving himself if a good idea. We do not want him to stress too much. We'll be there to sort everything out.

Me: fine, when?

King: not sure yet, maybe next week.

Me: ugh, forget I ever said anything.

King: I'll call you later. And don't worry we'll be there sooner than you think. Love you.

Me: love you too.

We both hung up and threw myself on the bed. Some would say I'm dramatic at least I have a roof under my head and I'm not physically abused. But I would love some little love. I would really love it if my mom or dad would just

rock up in my room and ask me how are my exams going or just tell me they're proud of me for always keeping my academics before anything. But I guess some families are not the same and my family may not be too much involved on emotions and I'm being dramatic. I played music through my phone I made it changed to different songs without my having to press a button every time. After LaSauce featuring Amanda Black "I Do" ended another song played. My heart sank down to my stomach when I heard it was "Perfect" by Ed Sheeran. Tears feel down my eye, I miss Omar even though a month has passed since he has passed away. I'll never forget the pain I felt when I heard the news. I miss him everyday, I called his number just to hear his voice mail. I know this will never make me let go and I need to because Omar wouldn't want me to be depressed and calling his number just to listen to his voice mail. I played the song again and

cried and cried until I felt like the hurt was off a bit. I was sniffing and thinking about our memories. My phone rang and I looked at it. It was Xavier. I let it ring unanswered because I really didn't want to talk to anymore right. I just want to talk to Omar. And he's dead, so right now I don't want to talk to anyone. But Xavier didn't stop he kept calling and calling. I ended up being upset that he wouldn't just leave me alone! I really appreciate his support I really do but I just need a little break!

Me: Rellik what!?

Xavier: moenie fok met my nie. (Don't fuck with me)

Me: I need to be alone right now.

Xavier: I don't care. Tell me what's wrong or I'll be in there by tomorrow.

Me: *sighs* nothing. I am here safe. I'm just

going through my emotions.

Xavier: you're just crying for nothing.

Me: yeah.

Xavier: you're a crybaby.

Me: I know and you need to let me cry when I want to. At Mzoli's you looked at me, well glared at me when I wanted to cry.

Xavier: because I know you weren't really crying you just didn't want me in that environment.

Me: one day my tears will work on you.

Xavier: *chuckles* I'm not the easily influenced type.

Me: what? You almost went home, don't act tough because we both you're too sweet.

Xavier: I am not sweet. Stop lying

Me: yes you are. *laughs* why are you denying it? I think it's nothing to be ashamed of.

Xavier: Lelona, I am not sweet. Weak people

are sweet, I am not. Being sweet is a weakness that can get you killed here. (here)

Me: speaking of getting killed. Who was following me and Cardo? We could've died because of him

Xavier: I took care of it.

Me: that's not what I'm asking.

Xavier: *laughs* why do you need to know because he'll never bother you again?

Me: please don't tell me you killed him....

The line went silent for a while, my heart started beating fast I was scared that I may be the reason behind someone else's death.

Xavier: no. Just roughened him up.

Me: you scared me there! I thought you did.

Xavier: if I did-

Me: I would have dropped my phone and never talk to you ever again. I would never have forgiven you because I'd have the conscience of a man is dead because of me

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

this is why I would never tell Lona what I do for her. She has a fragile heart and my baby can't take everything in. She cries a lot and always sees the good in someone and that's what I like and don't like about her. I dislike it because people will take that into their advantage because she's so sweet and sees the goodness in people they will use her and hurt her in the end. I like it because even though I kill people and do all types of wrong things she still sees the good in me and just smiles at me makes my dark life have brightness with just her smile.

That's why I don't want her to know the number of people I killed for her. We have known each other for like a month and I have already killed 3 people because of her. Because of what I feel for her. And because she's fragile, it's also a disadvantage I can't just ask her to be mine because she's still caught up with feelings for that weak boy Omar. She may not see it now, but she finds comfort in me. Her feelings will start to develop and I'll be all she wants. Then that's when I make my move, because I make my move now while she's still "in love" with Omar, she'll never fully commit to me. She will always feel guilty like she has moved on too fast. And she'll start comparing me to Omar, and that will piss me the fuck off. So I will rather wait then to lose her forever.

~~

I walked inside my uncle's house and I heard voices talking. I followed the voices and it was my uncle and aunt. They were all lovey dovey

watching TV, I came in while they were kissing.

Me: okay, I think I have seen enough.

Ghost: dis my tuis. (This is my home)

Fifi: your uncle tells me there's a special lady in your life.

Me: *chuckles* yes. And i need to speak to Ghost about something urgent.

Fifi: it's always business with you boys. I'll be in my room.

She kissed Ghost, and when she got up he grabbed her ass. I chuckled.

Fifi: stop. *blushes*

She kissed my cheek and walked upstairs once

I heard her door close, that's when I started talking.

Me: I want Kenny dead.

Ghost: woah. Not going to happen.

Me: since when have you ever been scared of war?

Ghost: you know I'm not scared at all. I'm thinking about the outcomes of the war. Plenty of people will get hurt and die because of a stupid gang war. No!

Me: I don't give a fuck. He has been disrespecting the fuck out of me and I want him dealt with.

Ghost: Xavier, you're not going to kill Kenneth. Think of all the family members that will die. The innocent people. And that special girl in your life

Me: I can protect Lelona. *angry*

Ghost: she will get hurt no matter what you try. Her family will get pulled into this what if you have business to take care of and she gets hurt when you're on business trips?

Me: I'll take her with me.

Ghost: I said no! *yells* and we're not talking about this again.

Then my aunt Fifi walked in again, that's when I knew she heard everything.

Fifi: You're about to run the gang. You have to learn that sometimes not doing anything is doing a lot. Murder does always solve every problem.

Me: so I should let him disrespect me? People will think I'm a pussy. I need to sort him out.

Fifi: there is no war that is going to happen! We had truce with them years ago and we're not

breaking it!

Me: we? Since when were you a part of the gang?

Ghost: hey! Ek sal jou bene breek! (I'll break your legs)

Fifi: no I'm not in the gang but all the bullshit you do costs us, the wives. We get kidnapped, we get attacked, all types of dangers happen to us just because we fell in love with "gangsters" the minute we fall in love with gangsters. We are in the gang because we get hurt too so you guys can feel the emotional pain from our physical pain. Don't start something your special gir, Lelona will play for. Be smart about your moves now Rellik. Think as a boss, not as a second in command where you want to kill everyone.

Me: isn't that why I'm Rellik? I am a Killer. It's who I am and I won't change myself because I'm about to be a boss.

Fifi: well you need to. No war, that's the final say.
Right baby?

Ghost: yes.

They pecked each others lips. I was annoyed by their love so much I stood up and went for a smoke to calm my nerves down. While smoking I thought about how Kenny could find Lona since she's in Eastern Cape now and I can't protect her like I want to. I called Kurt to check where Kenny's whereabouts were if he was in Eastern Cape then I'll send JR to watch my wife like a hawk to ensure she's all safe and nothing happens to her while she's there.

Kurt: Rellik.

Me: find out if Kenny is still in town, I need an answer in less than a day.

Kurt: okay.

I hung up and went back to the house and Fifi was preparing lunch.

Fifi: sit down, I'll make you something too. I want you to tell me all about this girl that has you going crazy.

I just chuckled and sat down as she proceeded finishing the meal on the kitchen counter. Then I started telling her about Lelona

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

I woke up the following day feeling really sleepy. I didn't enjoy my sleep at all. And on top of that I have to wake up early to do my chores. This is why I hate returning home. They are training

me to be the "perfect wife" and I just want to sit down and text on my phone all day.

Mama: ukhawleze ke ntombi, funeka siye kwaShoprite pha eMall. (Hurry up girl, we have to go to Shoprite at the mall)

Me: it's Checkers .

Mama: heh? (What?)

Me: nguCheckers mama lowo.

Mama: bayafana wethu. (they're alike)

I wanted to disagree but I knew it would be a never ending lecture about how I think I'm better because it know more so I just chuckled and smiled.

Mama: ukhe unxibe ilokwe Lelona, kushushu. (wear dresses Lelona, it's hot)

Me: ewe mama. (Yes mom)

Mama: ikhona enye bendikuthengele yona
uzoyithanda (there's one that I bought for you
you'll love it)

~~

I was strolling through Checkers looking for the perfect sauces for my mother who is very picky! I was wearing the dress she bought it was a bit cream and yellow. It was not tight nor was it too baggy. It was short though. I let my hair loose. Finally after I found the the Spur sauce she wanted I ran to the tills and she was still in line. We paid then went to the car. After I loaded everything in the car we drove off.

Mama: ukhe ufike uclean'e eza'curtains kudala zimdaka kodwa ngoku! (When we arrive clean the curtains. They have been dirty for a long time)

I mumbled under my breath frustrated that I am a slave apha.

Me: hay nindicapukela kakubi apha (you hate me badly here)

Mama: andiva? (Pardon?)

Me: andithethi, ma. (I'm not saying anything, ma)

Mama: Lelona sikufundisile, ezipahla uzinxibayo kungexayetu, utya ukutya kwendlu yam, zange walamba ebomini bakho bonke. Zange walala ugodola ngexayetu uphinde uthi siyakucapukela ngoba sikuthuma! ? Hay ukhe undibide. Ngoba sifuna nje ibreak ekusebenzeni uthi siyakucapukela? Sasi nganikwa neBreak'i ke thina mna ndiyakuyeka ukhe uphole ulala emini kodwa uyandixelela ba ndiyakucapukela. Inoba awulazi neligama capukela limele ntoni njeba ulisebenzisa nje. (Lelona we gave you an

education, those clothes you wear because of us, you eat the food in my house, you have never starved your entire life. You never felt cold because of us and you say we hate you because we order you around!? No, you confuse me sometimes. Because we only want a break from the work, and you say we hate you. We were never given breaks, and I let you sleep in midday but you tell me I hate you. Maybe you don't even know what the word hate means you're just using it.)

I regretted even saying that because I knew an lecture was on the way. I will never hear the end of this.

.

.

.

.

.

Please tag people to read the story, share it, like it, invite people. Do anything you can, I would really appreciate it

[02/21, 08:23] [+263 77 556 7430] : ~ I

CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 14

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

it was already 3pm and the load of the new girls was escorted out of the big truck and into the big ship. They were being shipped to Asia. I am involved in human trafficking dealings because it brings in a lot of money as well

especially when you convert it. The girls were all chained and crying. Tears don't work on me at all.

Me: that's all of them?

OG: yeah.

Me: they are 50 girls, meaning 2 are missing

OG: Rellik-

Me: find them quickly or you'll lose your hands since you can't use them properly.

OG: they escaped and-

Me: don't we put trackers on all girls?

OG: we do but-

Me: don't fuck with my money, OG. Call Kurt to track them. Those girls are worth a lot of money.

OG: yes, boss.

He hurried to make a phone call. I don't like it when people play with money. I am a rich man because I learned not to play with money. If I lose R150 000 because of OG. I'll kill him.

~~

Finally the girls were found and bought back to the ship. They were screaming, shouting and kicking but OG knocked them out and they were put in the ship.

Me: the ship needs to hurry up, we're already late in the deadline and the police could come in any minute.

Just 30 minutes after, the ship was gone. I drove back home. The time was now 5:04pm so I ate some food and watched some soccer. After the match, I texted Lona. I was missing her a bit.

Me: how are things in the EC?

wifey: great, just great.

Me: want to talk about it?

wifey: well my mom heard me say they hate me and she's been shouting in her room ever since.

Me: what happened?

wifey: they're slaving me around and I just said they hate me, she was offended and starting giving me a lecture all angry. Now she locked herself in her room, and she has been shouting.

Me: now I see why you're so fragile.

wifey: yes, because she's always shouting and ordering me around like I'm forced to do everything here. It's like she's not my mom, we are nothing alike. She's too bossy and judgemental. Way too different from me.

Me: but she still loves you. It's tough love

wifey: she has a funny way of showing it. She hates me. You wouldn't understand.

Me: yeah, I wouldn't.

She blueticked me. I hate it when she does that. I wanted to call her but Kurt sent a message.

Kurt: he's still in here, but my source says he's leaving town tomorrow.

Me: where is he going?

Kurt: the source didn't mention it. I think to his home.

Fuck! Now I need to go send one of my guys there to keep Lona safe. and make sure Kenny doesn't even get close to her. I'll send about 5 guys with JR incase Kenny and his gang want to start something then I'll really show him what

I'm made of. He clearly underestimates me, just because of a fucking truce. I smoked weed to calm myself down after 3 joints that's when I knew I was high. I missed my wife's face and voice so I video called her. She didn't answer at all. I tried her 5 times and she didn't answer at all. I called JR.

JR: bozza (boss)

Me: round the boys up, we're going to the Eastern Cape.

JR: fede fede, boss. (Sharp sharp, boss)

I dropped the phone call and went to the my room to pack. I only took needed clothes so the packing only took me 1 hour. After packing I tried video calling Lona again. She picked up and I was angry that she didn't the first time.

Me: why the fuck didn't you answer the phone, Lelona!?

Lona: *sniffs* Xavier I'm really not in the mood to get shouted because I have just been shouted right now.

Me: I am coming to that town.

Lona: what!? No!

Me: why not?

Lona: why are you coming over here?

Me: because you have been crying for 2 days straight. And it seems like Muller and King aren't going to be back soon.

Lona: but don't you have stuff to do? *sniffs*

I chuckled she says she doesn't want me there, but her pouting and crying tells me she wants me there.

Me: are you crying because you want me there, or are you crying because you got shouted?

Lona: don't flatter yourself. *smiles*

Me: finally a smile.

Lona: I'm serious though, do not come here. I'm fine.

Me: you say you're fine, but you crying is not saying you're fine.

Lona: you know I'm a crybaby. I'm just going through my emotions.

Me: *chuckles* you are one of the strangest females I know. Crying just for crying?

Lona: mxm, I have to go. I have to start finish cooking. I'll call you later.

Me: sharp

Lona: and don't come here.

Me: not promising

Lona: Xavier-

Me: bye Lona.

Lona: mxm, bye.

I chuckled then we both hung up. I'm still going to Eastern Cape because I need to make sure Kenny doesn't try anything to her. Because he also lives in King Williams Town

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I smiled after the video call because no matter how much he says tears don't affect him, as soon I cry he's willingly to fly and come see what's bothering me. He cares for me just as much as I care for him. I went to the kitchen

and finished cooking the mincemeat. The rice and veggies were already done, now all I had to do was dish up for everyone and wash the dishes. I did just that, then after the dishes. I went to my room, tomorrow I have to get myself some vegan food to eat because I might die in hunger here. I couldn't stand my hunger so I made myself some boiled eggs and took some bread.

Mama: wenza ntoni? (What are you doing?)

Me: ndenza amaqanda a'boil'iweyo mama. (I'm making boiled eggs mama)

Mama: ukutya oku ukuphekileyo kutheni? (what is wrong with the food you made?)

Me: I'm on a diet.

Mama: i'diet *laughs*

She was making in these noises while she was

laughing. She really laughed like I told a good joke, it made me feel so offended. But I faked little laughs.

mama: kawutsho ke uyiqalenini le'diet
chuckles (so tell me when did you start this diet)

Me: ngoJanuary. (In January)

Mama: yilonto uhlile eWeightin bendizixelela ba inoba utshaya intsango nala Kayla ndini (that's why you have lost weight I was telling myself maybe you're smoking weed with that Kayla)

Me: akayotshomi yam ngoku (she's not my friend now)

Mama: waze wabona ilight lomntana. Jonga ke ntombi, apha endlini yam kutyiwa lento iphekiweyo for wonke umntu. (finally this child sees the light. Look girl, here in my house we eat food that was cooked for everyone)

Me: kodwa mama- (but mom-)

Mama: hey! Sundiphambanela Lelona!

Uzokwenza ezonto zakho zokuziphakamisa pha eKapa! (Don't go crazy on me Lelona! You'll do your stuck up things in Western Cape!

Me: okay.

Mama: okay, ba? (Okay, who?)

Me: okay, mama.

Mama: cima esostove'u nale ketile (turn off that stove and this kettle)

I did as I was told with my heart broken into a million pieces. I was not trying to make myself look like I'm better than them I don't eat their food, but I'm on a diet. But I guess to my mom, I'm lying and I am being stuck up. I was about to go to my room when she pulled me back.

Mama: itya okukutya (eat this food.)

Me: mama-

Mama: hey! Itya okukutya uyeke lento uyenzayo!
(Eat this food and stop you are doing!)

She roughly pulled me towards the kitchen counter. She took my plate and opened it with so much force I was shocked that she was this angry because I wouldn't eat the food.

Tata: kwenzaka ntoni apha (what's happening here?)

Me: tata- (dad-)

Mama: lomntana uzenza umlungu apha akakutyi ukutya esikutyayo. (This child is acting like a white person she doesn't eat food we eat.)

Me: andizami ukuzenza betere mama, qha ndikwi'diet. (I'm not trying to make myself stuck

up but I'm on a diet)

Mama: uyaXoka man! *yelling* (you're lying!)

Tata: Lelona, iya eroomin yakho. Ndizothetha nomama wakho. (Lelona, go to your room. I will talk to your mother.)

I went to my room with tears, I quickly wiped them. I could hear their argument in my room.

Mama: umoshwe nini lomntana! Niyamtefisa! (you are ruining the child! You're baby'ing her)

Tata: usengumtana uLelona! Una18 (Lelona is still a baby. She's 18!)

Mama: uzotya lento siyityayo okanye ubuyela apha avela khona! (She'll eat what we're eating or she'll go back to where she came from.)

I decided to put on earphones to zone them out,

I took out my journal and started writing about how my mother just hates me like I didn't come out of her womb. She says she doesn't hate me but her actions say the opposite of her words. I am hungry, and I am being treated like a slave in my own home. My brothers aren't even here to defend me. It's like the whole family is against me. I am sure dad will take her side and i will just starve for today. Then tomorrow I will wake up and eat cereal. I wish Xavier was here, he would've parked outside and took me somewhere where I could have bought food to actually eat. He would just make my day brighter with his rare smile and he always licks his lips first then looks at me with the most amazing eyes ever and gives me a look I can't describe then he just chuckles. But he rarely laughs a genuine laugh. If he does then he'll first shake his head looking down and laugh. It's such a good look on him. When he smiles, I don't think anyone notices but his lower teeth

also appear when he smiles. And his eyes lit up, that's why I want him to smile forever because I just love his smile. I closed my journal smiling after writing a full paragraph about Xavier. I don't know what is happening to me but I miss him. I'm used to him calling me. Cardo plus me meeting him in town "randomly" but I know Cardo always tells him about our whereabouts. I went on my WhatsApp and decided to post in my status. I blocked Muller and King first from seeing my statuses before I could even post that picture. It was a picture of me and Xavier when he took me out for some ice-cream after Omar's memorial funeral. I captioned it "I miss you " then I looked at my phone. It was boring. Now new messages at all from anyone. Then my phone vibrated and I was shocked to receive a WhatsApp message from Zikhona. My heart told me not to open it but my curiosity and mind told me to open it. So I did.

Zee : so you're one of Rellik's bitches now?

She was replying to the picture I posted. I knew right away that she must have sent a screenshot to her "friend" Kayla. I didn't want to reply but I was pissed off that she would in my business.

Me: how does that concern you?

Zee : awuzithandi ntombi emtwini womntu (you don't love yourself dating a taken man)

Me: I wouldn't stoop to your level. I know my worth.

Zee : know your worth? Hay lol! then why are you fucking Kayla's leftovers? Phof Kayla's man.

I just looked at my phone in shock. Kayla is dating Xavier? Isn't she dating Scrappy?

Me: they're not dating.

Zee : I bet he told you that lie. you'll always be his hoe nothing more. Accept that

Me: mxm.

Then I blocked her. I was more angry that Kayla and Xavier had sex. In my anger I took a lot of screenshots from our chats then sent them to Xavier.

Me: please tell me this isn't true.

He didn't reply. It was one tick meaning he's offline. I tried calling him but it went straight to voice-mail. I paced up and down my room. I

can't believe Kayla had sex with Xavier!

.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

I threw my phone on the couch. I was upset about the conversation Zikhona had with Lelona. More upset that she blocked me because I was about to give her a piece of my mind. Zikhona even sent me the picture and I looked at it. He was smiling, like actually smiling not a mean smile that he always has but a genuine happy smile. Time to get this bitch out of his life. There's no way she's going to play the wife role to my man. I texted Skylar the picture of Rellik and Lona.

Me: she really didn't care about Omar. It has only been like what? A month and she's already missing another man. She never posted a picture of Omar nor even said R.I.P to him. She's really wrong for this. I can't believe she's like this. Thank God I stopped being friends with her.

Within 30 minutes Skylar read the message, and she replied.

Skylar : I never knew Lona was a bitch like this! I am truly hurt by this. Omar loved her so much yet she goes and fucks with a dirty low life gangster. She's a fool, I hope he takes his anger out on her and kills her for being like this.

Me: she's really a bad person that loves playing victim to everything.

Skylar : she'll pay for this. I want her so

humiliated that she'll regret playing my friend like that even after his death.

Me: right! She couldn't wait a couple more months. Maybe she didn't even want Omar, he was just a toy to her. She needs to pay for this.

Skylar didn't reply, I waited for her then 10 minutes later she did.

Skylar: check Omar's facebook account.

I quickly went to Facebook and searched for Omar's account I was found a picture Skylar posted it was the picture i sent to her and she tagged Omar and Lona. With the caption "it hasn't even been 2 months and already she has moved on from my friend. What a hoe " I laughed super hard, and smiled. At this rate, Lona will probably not finish this year. I will not

be shocked if she kills herself. She's too fragile anyway.

Me: Skylar! you're so good. I wonder how she'll feel if everyone on campus saw the pic of her and Xavier written HOE on it

Skylar: I'm going to do that especially on our first day back. This bitch messed with the wrong one.

I smiled. Skylar was easy to manipulate, so easy. I tried calling Khanyi again because I missed her. But as always voice-mail. I haven't seen her after the club incident. I heard she was at her boyfriend's house and he is no where to be found and her too. I hope she returns next semester because I miss her. She would be giving me ideas right now. I hope she's fine wherever she is. I don't even know her grandmother's number because I would've

called to ask where she is...

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I got up with my stomach upsetting itself. I was hungry so much that I had a headache. I woke up and the time was 3am. I sneaked to the kitchen to take some bread and make juice then I sneaked to my room again. I ate the bread then drank juice. I frowned thinking about what I'm doing. I am sneaking around taking food in my own home. After I was done, I was silently crying. I couldn't take it anymore. I called Muller because I know he'll react and he'll do something out fast. While King would want me to talk with mom

Muller: lelona... *tired*

I could hear he was still tired from sleeping but I was said so I was sniffed to do show him I was crying.

Muller: kwenzeka ntoni? (What's going on?)

Me: she wouldn't allow me to make food because I am on a diet. She wanted to force me to eat. She literally pulled me roughly to eat. If it wasn't for Dad, she would have forcefully pushed the spoon with food in my mouth. I didn't eat at all and I had to wake up at this time to sneak to the kitchen and get food. *cries* I want to come back to Cape Town.

Muller: I'll talk to her. Don't worry, she won't do anything else again. Utheni na umama (what's wrong with mama?) I'll send you money and you can go to the shops to get anything you want to

eat. Okay? We'll talk better later on.

Me: okay. Love you.

Muller: love you too.

We both hung up and I tried sleeping but it was no use, I was not tired at all. I tried calling Xavier again luckily this time he answered.

Me: finally!

Xavier: sorry, I was busy.

Me: oh, I can call next time.

Xavier: was, past tense. What's up?

Me: what do you mean what's up?

Xavier: you never call me. I'm usually the one that calls you, so that means you need some serious cheering up or you're being a crybaby and you miss me.

Me: I'm still mad at you.

Xavier: I didn't fuck that hoe.

Me: well that's not what I heard-

Xavier: well you need to stop believing everyone. That's why you get hurt so easily because you let people control you by your emotions. Why would I lie about fucking Kayla? Everyone has had her, I don't want her. She tried to fuck me but I do curved her.

Me: I... I believe you. It's just that Kayla-

Xavier: Kayla nothing. I'm sure you called me for something more important rather than Kayla.

Me: I'm starving that's why I called.

Xavier: what? *chuckles*

Me: my mom went crazy on me and I'm not allowed to eat unless I eat food that is the same as everyone else's.

Xavier: give me your address and I'll come pick

you up tomorrow to get some food.

Me: my address? You'll pick me up tomorrow?
What are you saying Xavier?

Xavier: I'm here. I must say, your town isn't all that great.

Heeeh! I told him he shouldn't come and he just didn't listen to me.

[02/21, 08:24] [+263 77 556 7430] : ~ I
CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 15

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

After my call with Xavier I decided to get some sleep, 2 hours later I woke up again because of my alarm. I rushed to do my morning routine

then wore a black sweats, with my new sneakers, that Xavier bought. I have to give him his R1 100 back for real. I made myself cereal and quickly ate before my mom wakes up and wants to start drama again. I quickly cleaned the house, and after I was done. I went to sit under a tree, I received a notification saying someone sent me R1000 in my account, I knew it was Muller.

Mama: Lelona! *shouts*

Me: ma!

Mama: iza apha. (Come here)

I got up from my chair then went to her, she looked angry. When I was close to her, she slapped me hard. I was so shocked I held on my cheek. I have been beaten before by my mom. Because I have woken up too late and the

house is dirty, or I wasted groceries by burning the food I cook or making the kitchen dirty and leaving it dirty. but today I was shocked because I didn't do anything. At least I don't think I did anything.

Mama: bubuxoki bantoni obu ubuxelela umntana wam!? (What lies are you telling my child?!)

I guess Muller called her, and if I'm right he shouted at her because she lets him do anything even shout at her but if I look at her funny she'll beat me up.

Me: mama-

Mama: hey! Sundinyela endlini yam, Lelona! Ungakhe ulinge! Into engasoze yenzeke kuphathwa nguwe mntanandini (don't shit on

me in my house, Lelona! Don't you dare!
Something that will never happen is being
controlled by you, you child!)

Me: ndiyakuva mama (I hear you mama)

Mama: khawsuke phambikwam tchin! Uzukhe
uxoke kuKhazimla ubone ba andizokubethela
into eyiyo na. (Get out of my sight! I dare you to
tell Khazimla lies that I beat you up, and see if I
won't really beat you up)

I nodded and walked away from her. I went
back to sit in the chair, I had tears in my eyes.
My father is gone and my aunt would never
stand up to my mom they are best friends. My
uncle is also gone to work. I looked at my cheek
through my front camera and it look like pink
and red bruise. I doubt it will be a permanent
bruise. Maybe in a few hours it will go down. I
didn't want to call Muller because I know my
mom is serious she'll really beat me up. Worse

than this little bruise. My phone rang and it was Muller. I breathed so I don't show that I have been crying. I answered it after it was ringing for a long time.

Muller: you got the money?

Me: yes, thank you.

Muller: I talked to mom.

Me: I know...

Muller: how about you find a B&B then let me know which one I'll cover the costs. Just until I get there.

Me: she slapped me.

Muller: what!? Maybe I need to come back home and really sort this out.

Me: no. It's okay, I'll just find the B&B, she'll beat me up if you confront her now.

Muller: *sighs* okay, I'll pay for the place. And

don't do anything crazy.

Me: I won't try to kill myself. Don't worry.

Muller: okay kid, I love you.

Me: I love you too Bro.

We both hung up and I was so bored that I went on Instagram to check my feed. That got boring, I went on my Facebook. I saw I was tagged in a post by Skylar. My eyes popped out when I saw that it was also picture of me and Xavier. How did she even get it? I quickly removed it but it was no use, most people saw it. There were plenty of comments that were hurtful to me. I found myself crying and I deactivated my Facebook account. I didn't even want to see the rest of those comments. How did Skylar get the picture she doesn't even have my number! I see Zikhona behind this! I received a call from Xavier. I dropped his call upset that hanging out with him always brings me trouble! He called

again and I just dropped it. He didn't understand and he sent a message.

Xavier : answer the fucking the phone.
I'm not playing with you.

I didn't reply to it, he sent me a message again. I just sighed wiping my tears.

Xavier : I'm going to track your phone, so if you know what's good for you you'll answer your fucking phone.

He called me again. if he comes here my mom will cause a big deal out of it. But then Xavier is just playing he wouldn't do that. I told him how crazy mom is he wouldn't do that. I went to my room to sleep because I was really tired. I slept with a heavy heart.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

Pissed off, I threw the phone on the bed. I was currently staying at nearby B&B. She wasn't even replying to my texts. I had this app that tracks people's phones on my laptop. So I tracked her down. I found out where she is. I quickly got in my new rental white Audi than drove to the place. It wasn't that far, I knocked the lock on the gate. The dogs went crazy. I just looked at them. The kept barking and barking all angrily. I texted Lona again.

Me: come outside.

The door opened and it was this woman that looked like Lona, I assumed it was her mother.

She had this weird look on her. I didn't even smile at all because I don't agree with her slaving my wife around.

Me: I'm looking for Lona.

Her: why?

Me: she knows

Her: she went out.

Me: I know she's here.

She went inside the house without closing the door. I waited for her to call Lona then Lona appeared. She had red eyes, and her eyes were puffy. I knew she must have slept crying. She came closer and opened the gate then stepped outside.

Lona: are you trying to get me killed?

Me: why weren't you answering my calls and texts?

Lona: so every time I don't do what you want you're going to come to my house angry.

Me: yes.

Lona: my mom won't like that.

Me: then I guess you have to stop pissing me off.

Lona: what do you want Xavier?

Me: what did I do now?

Lona: nothing. I just want to sleep then look for B&Bs when I wake up.

Me: B&Bs?

Lona: I'm moving out until Muller and King return.

Me: why?

Lona: my mom is being a bit crazy.

Me: how?

Lona: she slapped me this morning.

Me: what!? *angry*

Lona: chill.

She touched my chest, I looked at her hand then at her. She removed her hand and looked at me.

Lona: I don't want to cause drama. I'll just pack and I'll find a B&B.

Me: I know a place.

Lona: really?

Me: yeah. I could even pay for you. I-

Lona: hell no. Muller will pay.

She chuckled holding her stomach. Then I

remembered I was going to take her out to get her some food.

Me: let's go.

Lona: go where?

Me: to get you some food.

Lona: I have to tell mom I'm going first.

Me: okay, I'll be waiting next to the car.

She went inside the yard, and I walked to my car. This street was very quiet maybe because it's next to the town? I waited for Lona and I received a text from Scrappy.

Scrappy : how's the EC?

Me: nothing major.

Scrappy : well it's about to get major. I

need you here by next week. Kingston wants 30 girls. And you know he won't deal with anyone besides you.

Me: fuck! I'll be back next week then.

Scrappy : fede fede.

I looked at the time and Lona was not getting out the house. I didn't know if I should go in there and check on her especially when her mom might try something on her. At the same time there are dogs here. I brushed my face with my right hand in anger. She later came out, she had changed her outfit. It was a Jean with white sneakers and a "madness" t-shirt. Her hair was in a curly ponytail that was on her front like a bang and she was wearing these white shades. She had on this little bag with her. She looked great, I was just in awe. My wife never seizures to amaze me. Every time I look at her, she gets more and more beautiful. I opened the

door for her and she mumbled a cute "thank you". I got in the car and we drove off. She directed me towards Pick 'n Pay. There she went inside, I held her hand. She chuckled and browsed through the store with me.

Lona: I don't want your hoes beating me up.

Me: *chuckles* don't worry, they're all the way in Cape Town.

Lona: *rolls eyes* mxm.... Oh this is cute.

She said at this ugly black teddy. I picked it up, and she looked at me more like glare at me.

Me: stop that shit.

I chuckled and pulled her close, into a side hug. She just smiled up at me. She picked her food, it

was just something that looked like oats and some yoghurt. Then she took some peanuts, and we went to pay. And of course we argued on who will pay, and I ended up paying. I kept laughing at her pouting. I took the plastic and held her hand. We walked to the parking and I opened the door for her when we got to my car.

Lona: I'm still getting used to you being a gentleman.

Me: don't push it.

She laughed. I gave her the plastic then closed the door. I went to my side and got in.

Lona: aren't you going to eat?

Me: nah.

Lona: nigga-

Me: didn't you say you're hungry? Eat your food.

She laughed at my serious expression. She started mixing the oats thingy with the yogurt. I looked at her food, then at her. I don't understand why she wants to lose weight when she is this perfect. She took off her white shades and place them on the dashboard then started eating. She looked so adorable eating, and she had this cute little smile.

Lona: want some?

Me: fuck no.

Lona: come on, please try it.

Me: Lelona no. Why don't you eat proper food?

Lona: you sound just like my mom. *rolls eyes* please try this.

She gave me a spoon full of the food she was eating, she pouted and I just shook my head. I ate the food in the spoon, it wasn't bad but it wasn't nice at all. I don't know how she survives on this. She took the black teddy and I chuckled at how I'm changing for this girl and she might not even feel the same way.

Lona: what? *smiles*

Me: nothing, that teddy is ugly as hell.

Lona: don't diss my child.

I smiled and took out my phone. I went on WhatsApp, Lona was eating so I went to my statuses. I took a video of her eating.

Lona: this is good... wait, why are you taking a video of me?

She blushed hiding her face. I smiled and turned off the camera. I just put a caption of a black heart. I turned on some music and the song that played first was Post Malone ft Quavo- Congratulations. I didn't think she liked the song until she took out her phone and made of video of her singing it. I also rapped along, and she made of video of us singing the song together.

Us: "They was never friendly, yeah
Now I'm jumping out the Bentley, yeah
And I know I sound dramatic, yeah
But I know I had to have it, yeah
For the money, I'm a savage, yeah
I be itching like a addict, yeah"

She stopped the video quickly and pressed sent.

Me: I didn't even know you listen to these type of songs

Lona: King always plays them in the house. I just listen to them.

Me: *chuckles* will you pack everything at your parents house?

Lona: no, just a few stuff because I won't be staying at the B&B for long.

Me: what's something interesting to do here?

Lona: nothing at all. It's a boring town.

Me: it can't be that boring.

Lona: trust me it is. *chuckles* all the interesting things are in East London.

Me: damn, no wonder you don't want to come back here.

Lona: yeah ans the other thing too.

me: your mom can't be that bad.

Lona: trust me she is.

~~

Me and Lelona talked a lot to a point where it got dark. She was worried that I wouldn't take her home, earlier. But I wanted to piss off her mom. If she does something to Lona and I'm in town. She'll fucking kiss Lona's ass when I'm done with her. Since Muller and King don't do anything I will do something. I'm not going to sit around and let her abuse Lona.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I was very scared that my mom will turn everyone in that house against me and say that I went against her and went out with my boyfriend. And Xavier isn't even my boyfriend. She almost strangled me when I went out the

house to go to town with him. I didn't even want to tell Xavier about Skylar's post because he told me that I shouldn't let people's actions control my emotions. And people shouldn't control me by my emotions. So I just cried at home and tried to get over it. Now I'm learning to just deal it. Not everyone will like me. And Skylar is just stupid to let people control her because Zikhona is too much of a coward to do anything she's always fighting for her friend Kayla. But I wonder if Kayla will ever fight for her.

Xavier: she's not going to do anything to you, you'll just take your clothes and leave.

Me: she'll have my dad beat me up for bringing a guy over. I'm surprised she hasn't even called Muller or King to confront me.

Xavier: this lady will end up annoying me.

Me: she already annoys me.

Xavier: *chuckles* it's only 2 weeks.

Me: I want them to hurry up.

Xavier: to cheer you up, how about tomorrow we do something fun?

Me: let's go the Aquarium! *excited*

Xavier: what? *laughs*

Me: I have always wanted to go there. But it's in East London. You don't mind a long ride right?

Xavier: nah *smirks*

Me: umdaka *laughs* (you're nasty)

Xavier: you're the one that said it.

Me: well I meant literally not figuratively. I should've said excuse the pun.

Xavier: *laughs* yes you should have.

Me: excuse the pun, Xavier. *chuckles*

He looked at me with the look he always does,

it's like I'm the only person he sees, I doubt I'll get over this look.

Me: stop that. *blushes*

Xavier: stop what? *smirks*

Me: looking at me like that .

Xavier: I always look at you like this.

Me: no you don't. This is a different look. And it needs to stop *laughs* so what's the real reason you're in King Williams Town?

Xavier: for you.

Me: liar.

Xavier: I'm serious.

Me: you came all the way from Western Cape to me because I was crying. Yeah right.

Xavier: *chuckles* if you don't want to believe me than that's fine.

Me: wow. I thought you came for your shady businesses

Xavier: *chuckles* shady businesses.

Me: well you don't want to tell me what you do exactly I only know that you're a gangster

Xavier: and you don't need to know.

Me: you sound just like Muller and King. Why shouldn't I know? I can keep a secret .

Xavier: so we don't get you into a lot of trouble when the police get involved. So they can see you really didn't know anything and you can go off easily.

Me: okay, now I finally understand.

Xavier: *chuckles* took you long enough.

Me: shut up. Are you even ready to take over the whole drug empire?

Xavier: what?

Me: I heard you're going to take over.

Xavier: who said that?

Me: somebody.

Xavier: who?

Me: just answer the stupid question. *laughs*

Xavier: yeah only a few months left. You need to tell me who told you about that anyway?

Me: the answer is so obvious.

Xavier: Cardo.

Me: we were just talking about it. I feel bad for your girlfriends.

Xavier: they are my hoes.

Me: whatever .

Xavier: why are you even worried about them?

Me: since you'll be taking over. Just means that they will be in more danger.

Xavier: well they wanted that life, now they have it.

Me: don't say that, they're still humans.

Xavier: they are hoes who are willing to sell themselves to the highest bidder vir geld. (for money)

Me: you don't know their situation.

Xavier: *sighs* stop seeing the good in people. That's what gives fucked up people the advantage to bully people. You need to be more rude

Me: mxm I'm not going to change just because a person. I can't treat everyone badly because I was bullied, that will make me be just like them.

~~

After talking Xavier finally agreed to taking me home to get my stuff so I can move to the B&B he lives in but we'll have separate rooms. I was scared to even go in the house. Dad's car was not there, maybe he's working late. I went inside and Xavier waited outside for me.

Aunt: heeeh! Libuyile ihule *laughs* (the hoe is back)

I didn't reply, I just walked in my room. I was shocked to see my mom on top of my bed with my journal in her hands. I felt angry. How could she invade my privacy like that? She picked up her sjambok .

Mama: kutheni ndixakwa nguwe Lelona? (why are you giving me a hard time. Lelona?)

LONA'S OUTFIT

[02/21, 08:25] 𐀀 +263 77 556 7430 𐀀 : ~ I
CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 16

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I backed away from her, and going towards my door. Xavier was the only one I knew that could save me right now. I was so scared, tears were falling like waterfalls in my eyes. And I couldn't even get a word out.

Mama: kungona uzofumana isizathu sofownela uKhazimla kengoku (now you'll have a reason to call Khazimla)

Me: mama, uxolo. (mama, I'm sorry)

Mama: xolo for ntoni? Ukundiqhela endlini yam?

Tchin Lelona. Unezinza ngoku. Ubhala ngekwenkwe apha kodwa awukagqibi neVarsity le! Ufuna ubuya eCertificate seSisu? (Sorry for what? Disrespecting me in my house? You have grown. You're writing about a boy but you are not even done with university! Do you want to come back pregnant?)

Me: hayi mama. (No, mama)

She stood up, and I just ran out of my room, she whipped me once when I was running in my back. I felt the pain, I tripped and fell outside in the front. The dogs kept barking. She whipped me and whipped me as I cried covering myself up. I just hoped I didn't have bad bruises on me. I screamed in pain. She wasn't hitting me in much force but it was painful. I was crying begging her to stop. I doubt she even cared. That's when I heard the gate open. And Xavier pushed my mom so hard, she fell on the stoep

dropping the sjambok. The dogs tried biting him but he took the sjambok and started beating them up with it and they ran. He looked like he was ready to strangle my mom. I was still in pain on the stoep.

Aunt: hey! Kwenzeka ntoni apha!? (What's going on here!?)

Xavier took out his gun and he was about to shoot my mother. My aunt screamed and ran inside the house.

Me: Xavier no! *shouts*

My mom looked so scared. She was crying and she even pissed herself. I gained the courage to get up, and I stood in front of Xavier and his gun. He was very angry, and it scared me a bit.

His gun was now aimed to my chest because I was in front of him and my mother .

Me: no. Don't do this, please. She's still my mother no matter what happens. Please.

I got closer and hugged him, he calmed down a bit. Once I broke off the hug, he placed his gun back in the back of his jean. I winced because my body was painful

Xavier: you're in pain?

I nodded crying. I really don't understand why she hates me so much. He picked me up bridal style and went out the gate and to his car. I helped him by opening the door of the car and he placed me in it. Then he closed the door. Once he went to his side, he sped off down the

road.

Xavier: are there any doctors at this time that are still accepting patients?

Me: no. But there's a public hospital.

Xavier: direct me to it. I'll accept anything at this moment so you can be okay.

He sped off to the hospital. There it took a long time for me to attend to and he was very annoyed, and very angry.

Xavier: why the fuck are you standing there and talking when she's in pain!? *shouts*

Me: Xavier please calm down

Nurse: sir, she's not the only patient in this hospital and she doesn't even look like she has injuries. You have to wait. You do not own this

hospital.

Xavier: what the fuck did you just say to me!?

angry

He was about to take out his gun, I quickly stood up from the place I was sitting in and stopped him from doing something he'll get arrested for. What is up with him and guns!?

Me: calm down.

Xavier: this bitch really doesn't know me.

Nurse: tchin batheni na ababhuti bacinga sizozala ngabo ngexaba bene'mali.

Baphambene. (These men think we'll attend to them first because they have money. They are delusional)

Xavier was about to go to her, and really beat

her up. I quickly pulled him back, it was no use because he was stronger so I stood in front of him and hugged him holding his arms and hands, to prevent him from beating up the nurse.

Me: please. Don't do this, not here.

Xavier: I can't let her disrespect me like that.

Me: let's just go home. I'll drink painkillers then we'll go to the doctor tomorrow.

He took his hand, and we were about to walk out. I heard the nurse mumble something.

Nurse: ezinto ziphathwa ngabafazi babo bagulela thina. (These things are controlled by their wives, they go crazy on us)

I held Xavier's hand tightly to let him know he

shouldn't pay any attention to them. He opened the door for me and he drove off to the B&B he was staying in. The rooms were fully booked so I had to share a room with Xavier.

Xavier: let me call JR, maybe he has some meds. I didn't bring any.

I just nodded and just looked around. There was only one bed here. And I don't feel comfortable sharing a bed with Xavier because he's my friend, who happens to be so hot, and I don't want to develop feelings for him.

Xavier: come to my room... fede fede.

Then he hung up. He looked at me, I was still analysing the room. It was really good. EL Shaddai is really a good B&B. I heard a lot of

politicians and important people come here when they have business trips in King Williams Town.

Xavier: get on the bed.

Me: what!?

Xavier: not like that. *chuckles* I know you're in pain and standing up won't help.

He opened his suitcase and took out another t-shirt.

Xavier: you can wear this

It was a military printed t-shirt. I went to the bathroom, even though I struggled putting it on because of the pain I was in. Finally I wore it, it's wasn't long, kinda too short. I think he would be

able to see my ass and I was wearing a thong. I didn't even want to get out of the bathroom.

Xavier: JR is here with the meds, Lona.

I quickly took the towel and wrapped it around my lower body, then walked out. JR gave me the medication and the water then he walked out after the gang handshake with Xavier. After 30 minutes of me and Xavier talking and also us watching the "Smurfs The lost village" on his laptop, he downloaded it for me. I was tired. And I had removed the towel a long time ago because I was inside the bed.

Xavier: I can't believe an 18 year old is watching Cartoons.

Me: *yawns* cartoons make the best movies.

I smiled, and i felt drowsy and slept. Even though my curly hair was annoying me because it was all in my face. But I managed to sleep.

~~

After my morning routine, Xavier got me a new toothbrush and all the toiletries I needed. I still wore the same clothes from yesterday. Xavier went out to get me food. He was angry when he saw the bruises on my arms and legs. After he came back. We ate then he wanted to take me to the doctor. So we were on the road again

Xavier: direct me to a good doctor.

Me: my family doctor is Dr Fredricks.

Xavier: direct me to him.

I did as he said, he looked really angry as he sped off to Fredricks. While his hand was on the gear, I held it to calm him down.

Me: it's nothing major. I'm going to be fine.

Xavier: don't fucking tell me that! She was ready to kill you. Every time I think about it, It angers me more. I should do what she planned on you with her.

Me: don't touch her.

Xavier: what!?

Me: I'm serious. Khazimla and Yanga love their mom so much that they'll do stupid shit.

Xavier: I don't give a fuck about those two.

Me: I do because they're my brothers and that's my mom no matter what. And King plus Muller will put a stop to our friendship. Please don't act irrationally. I'll be fine, it's just a few bruises.

~~

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

She was told to wear a gown, the gown was dirty and I was pissed off that they would give her a gown like that.

Xavier: don't you have cleaner gowns?

Lona: Xavier! I'm so sorry, he's not always like this. He is under a lot of stress these days.

She glared at me, the nurse walked away.

Lona: what is wrong with you! ?

Me: this is dirty.

Lona: I know but we're not here for clothes but for the medical attention. Now please stop

being rude. Please.

She looked at me with a pout, and she hugged me not tight at all. I could see she was still in pain but she was trying not to piss me off.

Lona: you have to wait here, I'm going to be naked there.

Me: so?

Lona: don't start.

Me: wait, the doctor will see you naked?

Lona: duh.

Me: is it a female?

Lona: no.

Me: fuck no.

Lona: he has been my doctor ever since I was a child

She chuckled and quickly stopped. She was in real pain. I swear her mom is going to pay for this. After the doctor check, she came out. She went to change her clothes

Lona: we need to go to the chemist to get some of the medicine and ointment the doctor said I should use for the bruises. They're not that deep. Luckily the clothes I had on helped, and she didn't get my face. So there are no bruises on it.

Me: she still needs to learn her lesson.

Lona: Xavier we talked about this.

Me: why are you protecting her!?

Everyone looked at us because I was loud. She pulled me outside with my hand, I smiled at how tough she thinks she is. She had this serious

cute facial expression on her. Then she folded her arms.

Lona: I'm protecting you, if Khazimla and Yanga'inkosi find out that you have touched or offended their mom. I'm even scared she'll tell them about the incident earlier and turn them against me.

Me: I'm not scared of your brothers.

Lona: i know you're not. But please respect what I just decided on. You're going to leave my mom alone. I don't want my brothers hating me.

Me: why don't they do anything?

Lona: she never listens to them when they are not in town. But when they are, she becomes more nice to me and all of that motherly stuff

Me: are you sure she's your mom?

Lona: positive. She's just too strict. Because if I were to get into a street fight, that's totally

never going to happen, I know she would defend me.

Me: and how do you know that?

Lona: when...

She stopped and looked down. I lifted her hand up with my index finger. She had glossy eyes.

Lona: when I tried to kill myself because of the bullying, she went to the school and started beating up my bullies with a hard stick. I used to tell them about the bullying but they always thought it was just kids playing, until I tried to kill myself. She got angry, and went to the school. And she beat them all up looking all crazy. Kayla still has that scar *chuckles* I know she loves me it's just that she can't express her love properly that it comes off as abuse. She doesn't feel any connection with me

because of the depression she got after giving birth to me. She's a strong woman and me being weak made her believe I was a demon child aka we both have been bewitched.

Me: well now I'm here and she has to follow some rules

Lona: *laughs* you're crazy.

Me: I'm serious. She can't touch you. Or else I might have to do something.

She stopped laughed, and her phone rang. I didn't even think she had it with her.

Lona: hello?... she tried to beat me up with a sjambok... I'm serious... she got aimed with a gun? What? She lying. I couldn't even take my clothes because she was so angry. I didn't go there with any guy. She's trying to make you guys hate me, and maybe it's working because

clearly you are taking her side.

I smiled at how fluent she was at lying. I didn't even think she had it in her. In between the call, she would take silent breathing practices.

Lona: you're coming back when? Next week!?
excited thank God! I am staying at the El Shaddai B&B. No I'll pay with the remaining money i have in my account. Please don't worry.... okay love you too Bro.

She smiled and closed her eyes. I chuckled and opened the door for her. She got in and smiled. After I closed the door for her, I went to my side of the car and got in.

Lona: they're coming back next week. I am so happy.

Me: I see. I have to go back to Cape Town next week. So you'll be safe.

Lona: you are going because of King & Muller?

Me: no * chuckles* I have to get back to the businesses.

Lona: what if my brothers weren't returning next week?

Me: then you would've returned to Cape Town with me. *shrugs*

Lona: *laughs* you're crazier than I thought.

Me: you need to direct me to the chemist

Lona: what would you do without me? *smiles*

I chuckled then she directed me to the chemist and I got out and opened the door for her. Their chemist was in a mall. When we were walking in the mall I made sure to hold her hand so these niggas know she's taken. And they won't try

anything crazy because I'll kill them now in a split second. Once we went inside Clicks. I followed her around when she was getting the medication and other stuff she needs. After all of that, I paid for the things

Me: why are you always upset when I pay?
chuckles

I help her hand and took the plastic and we walked out.

Lona: because I know guys. They want to get you all the things and expect something like sex in return. I do not want that.

Me: am I like the other guys?

Lona: yes. You have like 3 or 4 girlfriends and they are all okay with you having other girlfriends. It's weird.

Me: that's because I haven't found the one yet.
Well I have found her. I'm just walking on eggs
around her

Lona: you? Found the one? Yeah right *laughs*

Me: why is it hard to believe I would find the one?

Lona: because you don't look like the type that
believes in soul mates or even in relationships.

Me: got that one right *laughs*

Lona: see! You would just sleep with the girl and
be annoyed afterwards because she was just
fresh meat you thought you couldn't have. Now
you have it, you'll get annoyed by it.

Me: are we still talking about me?

Lona: yes!

Me: this seems personal. *laughs*

Lona: mxm. Your fuckboy tendencies are
arising again. Let's just drop this conversation.

She let go of my hand and walked fast, I pulled her back by the belt string of her jean. When she turned around, I held her waist.

Me: come on. Don't be like that, I like that you're not afraid to speak the truth about me. I won't take it as a joke again.

Lona: yes. You shouldn't.

She pouted and I laughed. On other people, I would be annoyed by their pouting but Lona's pout was just too cute and her chubby face was cute as fuck.

Me: let's get you food in Checkers .

Lona: yeah.

We walked there and she picked the food and

some dry fruit.

Lona: ugh, we should've came to this chemist. I forgot about it.

Me: it's fine by me. At least you have the medication now.

Lona: but I'm tired. The bruises are becoming painful. I want to sleep on something soft, the bed. I want to sleep *sighs*

Me: we're almost done. Stop complaining we're getting your food.

Lona: what will the B&B say when we are not eating their food?

Me: I don't give a fuck.

Lona: too much anger. *laughs*

She walked us over to the tills and I paid, we left. At the B&B, she ate and watched the cartoon

movie she was watching last night. She was continuing with it. After making plenty of calls to Scrappy to get girls for the human trafficking dealings. He told me he has 5 girls right now. I will finish up when I get there. I sat on the bed, she was inside the bed. Her medication was starting to kick in because I could see she was tired. Once I laid on the bed, I took the laptop and she stared at me. Time to test her trust on me.

Me: why are you so far? Come closer. I'm not gonna try anything.

She chuckled and moved closer to me. I placed the laptop on my thighs and pulled her closer to my chest. She laid her head on my chest and continued watching the movie. I smiled looking at her. I know she's developing feelings for me because if she wasn't she would've frozen at

the thought of us cuddling. But now she's doing it. Her arm was wrapped on my lower stomach. Her actions show me she's now comfortable with me. She continued watching the movie, she laughed at another Smurf being clumsy. I was glad to see her this happy. Now after all of these cartoons and she's asleep. I will have to pay her mom a visit. She can get keep treating my wife like this and keep thinking I'm going to let it slide. She has to pay.

[02/21, 08:25] [+263 77 556 7430] : ~ I
CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 17

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

after I heard her light snores. I gently removed

her, then wore some black sweats. I made sure to take my gun with. I won't kill her mom, just talk to her. And if she becomes disrespectful then I will have to really do something to her. I called JR to watch over Lona since she's familiar with him and she won't have any panic attacks.

Me: watch over Lona for a while. I'm going out I'll be back in about an hour.

JR: ba uyabuza uphi? Zendithi uphi? (If she's asks where you are? Where should I say you are?)

Me: tell her I went out to check out the town.

JR: fede fede (sharp sharp)

Me: and do not let her out of the room without me returning.

I hung up the call, then I drove to her house. I

never forget directions, so I didn't have trouble along the way. Once I parked near the house. There wasn't a car in the yard still. So I thought maybe they didn't have a car. I walked over and knocked the lock on the gate. I knocked and knocked. It was no use, I climbed over the fence since it wasn't that long. I didn't see the dogs, so I went inside the house. It wasn't locked. When I opened the door, there she was standing from a bit far in the passage. She looked scared of me, and I did not care one bit.

Me: i am here to lay down some rules.

Mrs D: endlini kabani? Tchin unoluyolo andizokwenza lonto mna. (In whose house? You're overexcited I won't do that.)

Me: then we are going to do this the hard way.

I took out my gun and aimed it at her, she

screamed and I'm sure the neighbours heard her. She looked like she pee'd herself.

Me: go get the sjambok.

Mrs D: intoni? (What?)

Me: I won't repeat myself. I did not stutter.

She cried going to her room to get the sjambok. My gun was still aimed at her. She threw it over to me because she was scared to get closer.

Me: no wonder you are so bitter towards Lona, because your husband is never home.

Mrs D: uyasebenza. Sumxeka. Ibetere nakulento uyenzayo. Uku'rob'ba abantu ayondlela yophila. (he works. Do not judge him. It is better than what you're doing. Robbing people for a living is not the way to live.)

Me: here are the rules... one, you won't even lay a hand on her or else your life will end. Two, all this bullshit you keep talking to bring her down will stop today. Three, if you tell Khazimla and Yanga about this, you'll regret ever blabbling your big mouth. Do we understand each other?

She nodded very scared. I chuckled, she's just a scared bitch.

Me: now after all of this, you are going to pack up her things and I'll pick them up tomorrow.

She nodded quickly with no hesitations.

Me: just to assure we understand each other with the rules.

I picked up the sjambok, she started crying hysterically. I shook my head, and started beating her up with it so she can learn her lesson.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I woke up and the other side was empty. Maybe Xavier went out. I looked at the time and it was still 1pm, so it's still early. Well to me. I looked over to Xavier's side board and he left his cross chain and his laptop. I smile looked at the cross chain. I decided to wear it. He's my friend, i hope he won't mind. I wish he won't mind because this chain is too cute. I went to brush my teeth and wash my face. Then I went back to the bed. I took my phone, and the battery was

23% and I don't even have a charger. When Xavier returns I'll have to ask him to charge my phone with his laptop. I went on WhatsApp with the remaining battery percentage. I wanted to send Xavier a message and ask him where he is, but then I don't want to seem like a needy person. So I just looked at statues Cardo posted because he was the only one who posted a lot. After that, I went out of WhatsApp and went to Snapchat. I took a selfie with Snapchat and edited " itme" in it. I was still wearing Xavier's shirt and chain. Then after saving the picture. I went on WhatsApp and posted it with you caption " ", after all of that I unblocked my brothers. But they still won't see the picture. I started getting hungry so I ate the dry fruit just to tone down my hunger. Boredom started striking in so I took selfies on his laptop. A lot of selfies. Then after a while I wanted to get some fresh air, so I wore my jeans. I looked for my shoes and finally found them then wore

them. When I opened the door I was shocked by JR standing outside the door like a bodyguard. What is going on? Am I in danger?

Me: JR! *shocked*

JR: afternoon ma'am.

Me: really now?

JR: sorry. Afternoon, Lona.

Me: what are you doing here? Is everything okay? Where is Xavier? Is he ok?

JR: *chuckles* yonke into igrand (everything is okay.)

Me: sorry, it's just that I was not expecting this. You do not need to watch over me. I am not a child. I know how overprotective Xavier is.

JR: harde, Lona. Uzohlanya ba ndinohamba, ingabekwanga leplek (I'm sorry, Lona. He'll go crazy if I leave this place unwatched.)

Me: *sighs* but I want to go for a walk. Just to exercise my legs.

JR: kuzofuneka sim'fownele (we will have to call him.)

Me: I will do that. Don't worry.

I went back inside the room and called Xavier.
He answered the call very fast.

Xavier: you can't leave the room

Me: what!? *laughs* why not?

Xavier: I'll tell you when I get there.

Me: where are you?

Xavier: I will be there.

Me: you can't control whether I leave or not.

Xavier: Lelona stop being stubborn. You are injured.

Me: seriously? It's just whip bruises and it is not that deep.

Xavier: you are not leaving.

Me: I just want to go for a walk.

Xavier: I'll take you for a walk when I return.

Me: can you please just tell me where you are right now?

Xavier: I'm turning by Shoprite right now, I will be there in a few minutes.

Me: okay, Xavier.

He chuckled and we both hung up. He can't just say I should not leave the room. That is so bossy and controlling. I am thankful that he wants me protected but I am not a child that has to be locked up and watched whenever he leaves. After a few minutes he walked inside the room. I folded my arms. I was sitting on the bed. My back was against the dashboard and

my legs were straight on the bed. I had a serious facial expression so he can know I did not like what he did one bit.

Xavier: are you really that upset?

I didn't reply and just stared at him. He smiled, I tried to hide mine because he was so cute and it was hard not to blush and smile. He came to my side of the side board then he sat on the bed he was really close to me

Xavier: come on I was trying to protect you here.

Me: from what!? Am I in danger?

Xavier: no. But I just want to be careful and take safety precautions.

Me: liar, you just don't want me to wonder around town without you.

Xavier: that too. * chuckles*

Me: well that is pretty unfair because you just went to town without me. But I can't go without you.

Xavier: fine, I'll take you with next time.

Me: what if I want some alone time?

Xavier: that's fine i will let you get some alone time.

Me: I thought you were going to say no. I was going to be so angry. I do not like being controlled.

Xavier: now I know * laughs* you still want to go to the aquarium?

Me: no. Let's just do it tomorrow. I think today we have to go to Street Fever. Check out some new sneakers.

Xavier: you love sneakers more than me
chuckles

Me: that is not a bad thing at all. *laughs*

He looked at me, again with that look that is so sexy I find myself thinking about things that I shouldn't. He noticed the chain, and held it. He smiled at it, and just chuckled.

Me: I could take it off. It just looked too cute to be laying on a side board.

Xavier: I didn't say take it off. It looks more good on you anyway.

Me: thank you.

He nodded, and leaned closer quickly. I was shocked that he was about to kiss me. I didn't stop him, but then he kissed my cheek. I smiled because his lips were so soft, I wanted to taste them. Fuck! The worst is happening. I think I am developing feelings for Xavier. He got up

and went to his laptop on the other side of the side board. He opened it and luckily he didn't see the pictures I took, yet. I smiled, because once he sees them he'll just smile at me with his cute smile.

Xavier: I am just going over some emails then we will leave. Okay?

Me: okay. I don't mind. I'll go change this t-shirt.

He nodded and continued checking his emails. I went to change back into my "madness" t-shirt. I was still wearing the chain. But it was inside the t-shirt. Once I walked out, he was also done with the business stuff.

Me: I need my phone charged please.

He reached his hand out for it. And I gave it to him. He noticed that the chain was inside the t-shirt. He smiles and placed his hand on my neck making me shiver from his cold hands. He smiled, then pulled the chain out.

Xavier: now you're good.

He charged my phone then he came close to me

Xavier: Let's go.

I smiled and blushed that he wants me to wear his chain.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

I smiled counting up my rent money and it finally reached where I want it to be.

Tomorrow it is settled I will pay my rent. Then the remaining money I will get some groceries.

After fucking Patrick, he finally gave me R20 000 because I lied and said I wanted to do

some lingerie shopping and he was more than happy to sponsor me for that. I will have to get

a new sugar daddy so I can have more

money. I am the lazy type that does not want to

work. So I would rather fuck men that are really

willing to give a lot of money than to work shifts

that will only reward me a lousy R500 per week.

I like my lifestyle and some may say it's

prostitution but I do not care as long as it pays

the bills. I am ok with it. I did not go home this

holiday because I do not want to go back to my

drunk father and his misbehaving son. My little

brother gets on my nerves and with my dad

being a single parent, he had to take care of the both of us, I had to be a mother to my little brother. I did not like that so I promised myself if I leave Eastern Cape, I am never going back to that hell hole. There was a knock on the door, I groaned getting up to go answer it. I was shocked to see a detective in my doorstep.

Detective: afternoon, Mi-

Kayla: what do you want? *annoyed*

Detective: can I come in?

I opened the door further and he walked in. I was confused why the police was here. I did not do anything illegal.

Detective: I am just here to question you about the disappearance of Khan-

Me: wait, who reported this? Khanyi is probably with the guy she left with the other night.

Detective: her grandmother is very worried about her. She filed a missing persons case.

Me: what?

Detective: I need you to tell me everything that happened that night.

Me: we just went to a club, had fun and she said she was going home with her ex, I don't remember his name, Thando or Thabo I think.

Detective: which club was it?

I told him the name and he wrote it down, he was writing everything down. After that he stood up from my sofa, and shook my head.

Detective: thank you for your cooperation.

I just nodded and I let him out. I was very scared because what if she was dead or something and it would all be my fault. I really did not think Rellik would hurt her but now it believe that he really likes that fat bitch Lona. I received a call from Zikhona. I rolled my eyes, ever since Khanyi has been no where to be found, Zikhona has been annoying me and thinking we should be best friends. To be honest, I liked Khanyi more than her.

Me: Zee

Zee: check Khanyi's Facebook. *sniffs* kuthiwa ulahlekile (they are saying she's missing)
cries

My heart stopped and immediately started beating very fast. I quickly took my laptop and logged in on Facebook. It's already all over. People can not know what happened in that

toilet. I do not want them blaming me. I will act shocked that she's missing so I don't have people thinking I knew about this. This is all Lona's fault if she didn't cry, and Rellik wouldn't have noticed and she would've made us all happy by killing herself.

Me: please don't prank me, Zikhona. Khanyi can not be missing! We were at the club together, and she went home with some guy, her ex Thando or Thabo I think, and they were both nowhere to be found. They're probably still having fun elsewhere together.

Zee: he was found dead in his flat. And it looked like it was broken in there, Khanyi wasn't there

Me: what!? When did all of this happen? And why am I just finding out!?

Zee: apparently her grandmother tried calling her and she didn't answer so she knew something was wrong and filed a missing

person's case.

Me: I was never questioned by the police.

Zee: maybe they still don't know you were there.

Me: yeah. I hope she is okay wherever she is.

Zee: me too. This can not be happening in her first year.

Me: yeah. Look Zee, I have to go. I'll call you later on.

Zee: okay, bye chommie.

I hung up. If my suspicions are right then that means Khanyi was killed by Rellik, and that means that Zikhona and Skylar are in danger. I hope those stupid bitches do not mention my name, because Rellik will also kill me. And he did warn me about hurting Lona. But I will do anything to get him to be mine. And I'm not stopping now, Khanyi's death can not be in vain. There no going back now. I already have

started and I will get Rellik in the end.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

We went to Street Fever and looked at the sneakers. I kept looking until I found the one I really wanted.

Me: I am so getting these. They look dope.

Xavier: they look alright.

Me: liar, they look dope. I'll buy you some too, I got cash. *chuckles*

I was joking, but he glared at me making me laugh more.

Me: why can't I buy you these sneakers but you buy me a lot of things?

Xavier: because that's not how it's supposed to work.

Me: this is not 1980 where males had to take care of their females. This is 2017 and women can buy things for men too.

Xavier: well my mind is still in 1980 and it is still going to remain there.

Me: mxm, I'll go pay for these.

Xavier: don't test me, Lelona.

Me: *rolls eyes* anger for what? *chuckles*

Xavier: I will buy the sneakers for the both of us, just not let you buy them for me.

Me: next time i am going shopping, I won't tell you because you are buy a lot of things for me. It is annoying.

Xavier: me being a man is annoying? *chuckles*

Me: no, you disrespecting my decision to not let you buy me stuff is annoying because I like being independent and buying my own things. It makes me feel good.

Xavier: well you will feel even better knowing you won't use a cent when you are with me.

Me: with you?

Xavier: yes, when you are going to places with me. What did you think I was saying? *smirks*

Xavier thinks he is smart. He is saying something else but it actually means something else to make me feel confused. I don't even know what to think. I don't know if he means when I am with him as in dating or as in us shopping around and hanging out. He just loves confusing me.

Me: nevermind.

He just smiled at me and we look for someone to look for our sizes. When the person finally came back, we went to pay. Well he paid, I did not even want trouble so I just kept quiet. He is a guy with an ego and he likes knowing people around him are well taken care of, that's what I noticed with him. He likes controlling things and he will get angry when things do not go his way. But that's not a bad thing, it shows he is a perfectionist he likes everything to be perfect and I am sure he plans everything he does. I like that, it means he is very sure about his future. He took the bag and we walked out holding hands. He looked at me, I think he was shocked that I was the one who took his hand and held it. He usually does it. He smiled and I smiled too. When we were out, I frowned when I saw trouble. Kenny smirked when he saw Xavier. Xavier glared at him. Gosh, why did we have to

bump into him today!?

.

.

.

.

.

LONA'S SELFIE

[02/21, 08:26]「 +263 77 556 7430」 : ~ I

CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 18

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I held Xavier's hand tighter to tell him to control his anger because I know him. He'll want to fight for no reason at all. He could just avoid this by ignoring Kenny.

Kenny: en ons ontmoet weer (and we meet again. Now in my territory.)

Me: Xavier, please let's just go. *whispers*

Kenny: you should listen to your bitch, Rellik.

Xavier: I dare you to call her a bitch one more time. *angry*

I pulled Xavier, so he can just calm down. But that only fueled his anger. He really wanted to fight and I just wanted to leave.

Kenny: she's a bitch.

Next thing I know, Xavier was on top of Kenny throwing punches. He got up and started kicking him. I was now on the verge of tears. I have never seen Xavier this angry and he was scaring me. Everyone started forming a circle around them, the fight was quickly broken off. I was worried that the police would come here and arrest Xavier. Xavier was angry as fuck, I could see his mouth was bleeding so Kenny did end up throwing some punches too. But Kenny looked messed up, because of the rings Rellik was wearing on his fingers. I picked up the plastic with sneakers. Thank God, they weren't taken. I pulled Xavier away from people because I did not want this drama at all. I held his hand and tried pulling him towards his car.

Me: can you please control your anger? They are about to call the police. Let us just go.

And then I screamed when I felt a punch on my side cheek out of nowhere. I held my cheek in pain, I looked back and Kenny was trying to punch Xavier but it landed on me. Xavier threw a punch at him and Kenny ducked, then when he got up, Xavier quickly sneaked a punch and it landed straight to his nose. The fight was broken up again. People were hyping this up. I was still in pain because of my cheek. This holiday just won't let me have me relax. First my mother whoops my ass. Now I have been punched, unintentionally I know, but still I have been punched. Some random guys helped me get Xavier in the car because he was so angry. He did not want to leave. He wanted to continue beating Kenny up. After getting him in the passenger seat.

Me: give me the keys.

Xavier: fuck no.

He touched my chin and checked my cheek. Then he slightly brushed it, I winced. His jaw clenched in anger.

Me: I am fine.

Xavier: he fucking touched you!

Me: Give me the keys, Xavier.

Xavier: I swear I am going to kill that motherfucker!

He will not kill anyone. I will talk to him but when he's calmed down. Because there is no use talking to him when he is like this.

Me: Xavier. I am not playing. Give me the fucking keys before I take them myself!

I was upset, if he had just ignored Kenny then I would have not been touched in the fucking face. He took them out of his sweatpants and gave them to me. I placed the plastic underneath the seat he was sitting in.

Me: and you better not move when I close this door and I will drive this car to the B&B. Let this petty bullshit go!

I went to the other side. I pray there isn't any traffic today because I don't have a learner's. And I'm already driving cars. Normally I drove to the B&B and luckily for me, there wasn't any traffic along the way. On the ride, I did not even utter one word. And Xavier understood, so he didn't even talk to. After parking, we both got out. He got out with the plastic. I walked to our room.

Xavier: Lelona.

Me: do not even talk to me right now!

Once we arrived in our room. I went to check my cheek and it was pink. It was a bit swollen too. But it wasn't too much damage as I thought it would be. I drank some painkillers to take away the pain.

Xavier: what the fuck did I do? I was defending you! *angry* you want me to let people disrespect you?!

Me: you do not to react with violence every single time people talk shit!

Xavier: he called you a bitch and he fucking threw a punch at you. I can not let him do shit like that.

Me: just stay here I'll be back.

Xavier: where are you going?

Me: I said stay here

Xavier: do not fucking test me, Lelona. Now is not a good time.

Me: i am just going to the main reception. Do you want to hold my hand through that!?

I angrily walked to the reception and asked for a first aid kit for Xavier because he was bleeding in his mouth. But he acts so tough as if he doesn't feel shit. Gosh, I sometimes hate how manly he is. I just wish he could control his fucking anger and stop entertaining bullshit and reacting with violence. I was given the first aid kit. I rushed to the room, and when I was there, I was shocked to see JR and 4 other guys there. Xavier was still angry, and walking up and down while they were just standing still.

Xavier: I want him gone! I don't give a fuck about a stupid war.

I shook my head, and pulled him to sit down on the bed. Then I opened the first aid kit

Me: don't listen to him guys. That's just the anger talking.

Xavier: Lelona, he fucking touched you. I can not let that slide.

Me: you are not. You are being mature about it.

I started by cleaning the blood off with a wet cloth.

JR: ndinqinela noLona kule. Imfazwe ayonto uyifunayo okanye oyidingayo (I am with Lona on this one. War is not something you want nor

need.)

Xavier: who the fuck asked you about your opinion?

I slapped Xavier on his arm. He looked up at me since me since I was standing up and he was sitting on the bed. Then I put the colorless spirit on his little cut that was near his mouth which his why he was bleeding. He winced once the colorless spirit touched his wound.

Xavier: and why the fuck are you calling her Lon-me: I said so. Stop being rude.

Xavier: Lelona-

Me: no. These are humans too. And you are not killing Kenny, a war is too much. I am sure you do not want to die. Now stop feeding into your ego, and calm down.

The guys smiled at me, Xavier just chuckled shaking his head. I went to get him some painkillers and water. Then I gave them to him.

Me: drink up.

He drank the medication and gave me back the bottle of water. The little fridge had plenty of still water.

Me: guys, can you please come back when he is calm and refreshed? I am going to make sure he sleeps and thinks carefully.

I almost fell when Xavier pulled me to his lap, because I didn't expect it. The guys were cheesing at us, and I just started getting

butterflies in my stomach, because Xavier kissed my shoulder. It's the little things he does that make my develop more feelings for him. The guys left and I looked at Xavier. His wound was little but still it was a cut. I tried to touch it but he winced.

Me: it is painful?

Xavier: a little bit.

He touched my bruised cheek. I could sense that he was becoming angry again.

Me: it is fine really.

Xavier: I feel like killing him with my own hands for even calling you a bitch and he made it worse by touching you. He keeps fucking provoking me.

Me: because he knows you will react in anger. Next time just let him talk his bullshit and not respond. Everyone will see how dumb he is.

Xavier: not in the streets. I let him walk all over me, then I'm a pussy. I need time teach him a lesson.

Me: what you need to do is rest.

I got up from his lap, and opened the bed covers for him. He smiled and took off his sweater then his shoes he was now shirtless because he also took off his tank top. He also took off his sweatpants and wore black shorts. I quietly cleared my throat, he is really getting too comfortable. He got in the bed.

Xavier: am I a child now?

Me: when you are behaving like one. Yes you are.

Xavier: I see you like controlling things too.

Me: it feels a tad bit good.

Xavier: but next time. Let me address my boys. I do not want you involved in any gang shit. And when you're too nice they will walk all over you.

Me: they are humans, they have feelings. You belittling JR like that was not cool at all. And I have to tell you the truth if I do not like something and I did not like that.

Xavier: fine. Just talk to me privately not in front of them.

I smiled then went to the other side of the bed. I took off my shoes and took his military shirt then rushed to the bathroom to change. I was scared again to leave the bathroom with only this short t-shirt. I finally quickly went out and got in the bed. He looked at me and just chuckled at my childish actions. He was

watching rugby on the TV.

Me: can you please pass my phone?

Xavier: get it yourself *smirks*

Me: Xavier it is next to you.

Xavier: get it yourself, Lelona.

I groaned. This was his excuse to see my ass because clearly the shirt is too short and my ass will be exposed. I decided to sacrifice my phone. He chuckled when I folded my arms and leaned against the dashboard. Then he took my phone out of his laptop and gave it to me. I smiled and checked my WhatsApp messages and they were none that's how my life was boring. Xavier shocked me when he pulled me closer to him.

Me: what are you doing? *blushes*

He wrapped his hand around my waist. He held my waist and laid his head on my chest, well my breasts. My heart started beating fast, I quickly contained myself before he feels my heartbeat beating fast. He was doing this while continuing watching TV.

Xavier: getting comfortable.

Me: on me?

Xavier: yes now, quiet down. The game is getting interesting.

I just smiled at him and let him be comfortable. I wanted to brush his little curly hair but then I did not want to make it seem awkward. But I went with my first instinct and brushed his little wavy hair. I could see he was enjoying this. He

was even smiling. I have never been this close to any guy that isn't my family. It's like I am moving way too fast with Xavier. Even practically live with him without my clothes. He lays on my breasts and I let him. He kisses my cheek and I let him, earlier today I slept way too close to him before I woke up with him nowhere to be found. I feel like I am even forgetting Omar, and I do not like that feeling because Omar meant so much to me, and I do not want to seem like I never cared about him because I really did. Xavier and Omar are really different people yet they both make me feel special, what am I saying? Omar is dead and he is not coming back. He made me feel special. Past tense, now he is gone. And I can not keep comparing Xavier to a dead person. I want to move on from what me and Omar shared because clearly it is not coming back. But then Xavier seems like the type to have plenty of girls begging for him. Am I willing to let his play

with my feelings because I am sure he has done it with plenty of girls. What is different about me? I am a nobody, just a nerd. He probably sees me as a kid or he is doing all of this to just to get in my panties and say he had sex with me. If he is real then I can not date someone with anger issues. So this crush, it's just a crush that I do not see going anywhere. It will fade over at least I hope it does. After a while, I heard him breathe heavily like he was sleeping. I smiled and just continued brushing his hair because he needs the rest. This gave me a chance to admire out his tattoos and whole body. His tattoos were a lot and very intriguing. I frowned when I saw the bruises he had on his hands. I could see he took off his rings. I do not want Xavier involved in fights because of me. He could get really hurt or get jail time because of him not controlling his anger. I carefully took the remote to change the channel but accidentally woke him.

Me: sorry, you can go back to sleep.

He just nodded and held me tighter and I brushed his head again to make him sleep. I think they painkillers were making him sleepy. He slept again as I was watched Keeping Up With The Kardashians. I was in love with reality shows even though some are just fixed.

~~

He woke up at 6pm well his phone rang, and I had to wake him up because I did not want to invade his privacy and answer the call. He groaned waking up and snatched his phone from the sideboard.

Xavier: what?

I shook my head at his rudeness. He cuddled on my chest again. I just smiled, because he is acting like a baby. He loves attention.

Xavier: I told you I will be back there next week... Scrappy I am sure it is not that fucking bad, I will handle it when I come back... just handle it for now and I will fix everything when I return.

Then he hung up. He got up, and checked my cheek. I just smiled at him caring so much for me. After that he continued cuddling with me, and just watched the TV.

Me: look who's the baby now.

Xavier: hoe jou bek (hold your mouth)

Me: *chuckles* you just love attention.

Xavier: this is a comfortable spot for me.

chuckles

Me: yeah whatever.

Xavier: and what the fuck are you watching?

Me: do not judge. *laughs*

Xavier: things you girls watch. *shakes head*

Just 5 minutes later, food was served for him. I made my own little supper with the food I got from Checkers. It didn't require me to cook it so I was happy. After we ate our food, I decided that I needed to talk to Xavier about this whole war thing. I do not want to die.

Me: we need to talk.

Xavier: sounds serious.

Me: it is.

Xavier: okay, I am listening.

Me: you can not kill Kenny.

Xavier: Lona-

Me: no, listen. An unnecessary war will get created and people will get killed. I do not want to die. I am only 18

Xavier: while I am still alive, no one will touch you.

Me: what about your family? My family? The innocent people that will be hurt through all of this. Please Xavier. Please don't start something you won't be able to finish. I heard a lot about gang wars. They never end well.

Xavier: next time he does fucked up shit. I will have to kill me.

Me: so that means you won't kill him?

Xavier: I'm letting this one slide.

I squealed and hugged him. He chuckled as he

hugged me as well.

Xavier: tomorrow I will go get your clothes from your house.

Me: you can not go alone my mom will flip

Xavier: I can handle her.

Me: Xavier....

Xavier: trust me. I am just going to take the suitcase and leave.

Me: I will be there.

Xavier: no. You will be here.

Me: am I a prisoner here?

Xavier: no, but I am keeping you saf-

Me: then I am coming with. I have to see my mom after that incident. She must be worried about where I am.

Xavier: *sighs* why is it that you never listen to

me?

Me: because you also never listen to me.

Xavier: *laughs* you are something else.

Me: I know right!? Such an amazing person I am
smirks

Xavier: okay, you hang around me too much.
Now my swag is rubbing off on you.

Me: your cockiness is rubbing off on me, you
mean.

He chuckled then we watched some TV but he
kept annoying me by working so much on his
laptop.

~~

Tomorrow I woke up and after my morning
hygiene routine. He borrowed me his oversized
t-shirt. I wore it with my jeans and white
sneakers.

Me: when we return I will changed and we will go to the aquarium.

Xavier: okay.

We drove to my house, and I won't lie. I was very scared of what will happen. Once he parked, I was even scared to walk out. I mean I left my home to share a room with Xavier. My dad will very so disappointed. Mom must have already twisted the story of what happened that day. I don't even want to think of the words she will say to me.

Xavier: you are ready?

Me: yeah. Let's go.

We both walked out, and I knocked the lock on

the gate. After a long time. My aunt opened the door. She was about to say something, but then she looked at Xavier and didn't say anything. She opened the gate, and walked back in the house. We walked in the house and as soon as I entered. I saw my mom, she stared at me. My heart started beating fast.

[02/21, 08:27] +263 77 556 7430 : ~ I
CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 19

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

Lona's looked at her, there were just staring at each other.

Mrs D: your clothes are in your room.

Lona nodded with teary eyes. I glared at Lona's mother, if she mentions anything about me beating her up. I swear I will kill her and be happy about it. I won't lose Lona because of her. Especially when Lona is starting to trust me. Lona went to her room, and took her suitcase from her room. I followed after her. She started sniffing.

Me: are you okay?

Lona: she is not even apologising for hurting me. I return home thinking she is worried but she just tells me my clothes are in my room. What type of mother does that!? Gosh, sometimes I hate her so much for making me feel like I don't matter.

Me: hey! You do matter. A lot, especially to me.
... and your brothers.

Lona: thanks. *smiles*

I could see that she was smiling painfully because she just wanted to cry all her pain away. And I did not like seeing her cry at all. It's like a knife is being twisted in my heart seeing tears on her face. She picked up a small book that looked like a diary and I helped her with her big suitcase. Once we went outside, her mom rushed to lock the gate without even saying goodbye to Lona. The suitcase was a challenge putting it in the car because of the pain in my hands, but I managed. I opened the door for Lona and she got in. I rushed to my side and I sped to the B&B. I opened the door for her again and took out her suitcase. When we arrived in my room, she threw herself on the bed and closed her eyes looking up at the ceiling.

Me: you still want to go to the aquarium?

Lona: yes please.

Me: let's both change and we'll go.

She nodded and got up. She opened her suitcase and took out the clothes she needed, she walked to the bathroom to change. I also changed into my white Gucci hoodie. And a black bomber jacket. Then wore my red Gucci headband. I was wearing my black knee ripped jeans with white sneakers. After a long time, she came out wearing a black supreme hoodie and tight blue knee ripped jeans then had on black knee high boots that were like high heels. Her hair was in a messy bun. I love that she never wears makeup. It makes her look more beautiful than she already is.

Me: all done?

Lona: yes.

I walked closer to her and held her waist. She looked up at me.

Me: this is why I did not want you to go there. She ruins your spirit.

Lona: I am sorry.

Me: don't be. She should be. Now forget about her for a little bit and try to have fun.

Lona: I will. *smiles*

I kissed her forehead and she wrapped her hands around my body hugging me.

Lona: thank you for everything. Really. Without

you, I probably wouldn't have survived any of these things. I really appreciate what you have done for me.

Me: dit is 'n plesier. (It is a pleasure)

She smiled and then broke off the hug. When we return from the aquarium I will ask Lona to be my girlfriend I am tired of beating around the bush about how I feel. I want her to be mine and only mine. When we walked out I decided to send JR a quick message to do romantic shit for Lona when I return from East London.

Me: doen iets romantiese soos in die films vir Lona (do somethings romantic like in the movies for Lona) in the room, I want to surprise her when I get back.

JR : sure thing, bozza.

I opened the door for Lona and she thanked me getting in. I rushed to the other side. My phone rang when I started the car. It was Scrappy.

Me: Scrap.

Scrappy: you need to return ASAP.

Me: I told you, nigga. Ek will jou sien in die volgende week. (I will see you next week)

Scrappy: Kenny is planning to do something to you. Our spy called me yesterday. You are in his territory, you know Ghost can not protect you there.

Me: I hear you.

Scrappy: even though he can't kill you because of the war. It doesn't mean he won't hurt you. Keep Lona safe.

Me: fede (sharp)

I hung up the call. I did not Lona to worry, so I didn't cancel the aquarium trip. I drove off to East London. She didn't know East London that well so I had Google where the aquarium was. Once I found the destination, I used a GPS app on my phone to lead us to the place. When we finally arrived, she had this big smile. I think she was really excited.

Me: and we're finally here.

I got out and opened the door for her. She walked out, and held my hand. I smiled because clearly she had feelings for me now. My plan worked. I eliminated Omar, became her comforter and finally she developed feelings for me. I paid the money to get in and we went inside. I could see how her eyes lit up every time she would see a fish.

Lona: wow.

She gasped when she saw a shark. I smiled at her because she looked so fucking beautiful. I don't understand how a girl like this doesn't see how beautiful she is? She has the most perfect body. The jeans were so fucking tight, it made her ass pop out. Lona is so amazing, and the thing that makes her more beautiful is that she doesn't brag about her beauty. She is just chilled, and what she did with the first aid kit showed me that she really cares and she is willing to do whatever for me. She keeps me calm and away from making irrational decisions. If it wasn't for her I would've killed Kenny and a big war would've been created, because Kenny's father is very powerful. And a war with him could mean that I am digging my own grave. I can not just put Lona's life in danger like that. She is still in her first year. She loves her academics and I want to let her finish her

studies so I won't jeopardise that for her. She means a lot to me. I don't even believe that I actually am falling for her. I never planned to feel this way, falling in love and being a gangster is a bad thing. Because your lover becomes your weakness.

Lona: are you okay?

Me: ja

Lona: you have been quiet.

Me: ek dink oor iets. (I'm thinking of something)

Lona: what is it?

Me: where did you learn afrikaans? *chuckles*

Lona: that's what you are thinking about?

laughs

Me: no, but it's a question I always want to ask you.

Lona: I took Afrikaans as a subject in high-

school.

Me: so you can speak it *smiles*

Lona: no *chuckles* but I understand it.

Me: you should surprise me and speak in it.

Lona: yeah, no *laughs* now tell me what you were thinking about that you can not enjoy this beautiful place.

Me: just about light stuff. It is not important.

Lona: just tell me and stop being dramatic.

smiles

Me: I will tell you when we get back to the B&B.

Lona: why can't you just tell me now?

Me: because andifuni (I don't want to.)

She laughed at me speaking Xhosa I don't know why she keeps laughing at me speaking Xhosa because I speak it well. I wrapped my arm around her shoulder and we walked around the

place with her talking non-stop about how cool this shit is. I am not the romantic type, that's why I commanded JR to do that shit in the room. I don't even know what he will do as long as Lona loves it then it is okay with me. After the aquarium we went to get something to eat. But she said she wasn't hungry so I had to park at Spar and force her out the car to get her food.

Lona: I really am not hungry *chuckles*

Me: just get something to eat.

She took dry fruit and some yoghurt then juice. I shook my head. I have to convince her to eat proper food when we get back home. It was a bit late so I didn't want it cause a stupid fight in Spar.

Me: you want to go home immediately? Or is

there something else you want to do?

Lona: I am tired, so, home please.

Me: okay.

I paid for her things and we went to the car. I went to a drive by McDonald's to get something for me to eat. Then we drove off back home. We were the only ones in the freeway, and it didn't feel quite bad until... I saw cars blocking the way. I was pissed because Kenny may have something to do with this. I quickly took out my phone and gave it to Lona.

Me: immediately call JR and tell them to come here fast.

Lona: why don't you do it yourself?

Me: I have to handle something first.

She looked at the cars, and started breathing heavy.

Lona: Xavier no! You can not go out there. What if-

Me: not questions. Call JR. And do not get out of this car.

She nodded scared, I sighed and held her face.

Me: I am serious Lona. No matter what happens do not leave this car.

She looked scared and just nodded because they were a lot of cars. Probably like 6 cars and I was only one. Scrappy was right, it is dangerous for me being in their territory.

Me: once you get out. They will think you are involving yourself in it and they will do something crazy.

She looked at me with teary eyes.

Me: I will be okay.

I made sure my gun was secured in the back of my jeans and I got out the car. Once I locked the doors with a touch of a button in my keys. She quickly called JR. I walked closer to the cars that were busy also blasting Trap music. Kenny walked out of a Mercedes Benz AMG. Then the rest started walking out.

Me: a sneak attack? *chuckles* you are getting weaker by the day.

Kenny: sweet Lona won't think that when I am done with you *smirks*

Me: a war isn't something you want, Kenny boy.

Just as much as I can't kill him, he can't kill me. Ghost will get pissed and a war will happen. But Kenny loves provoking me because unlike him, I can not control my anger that much. If someone messes with me or someone I love. I want them dead, and I want to be the one that kills them. That's why I was named Rellik because when I get angry I become a Killer.

Kenny: *chuckles* no, but beating you up just to scare your girl will make me a very happy nigga.

I was now more angry, but I need to calm down and stall them by talking, so JR and the others can make it here.

Me: jy dink sy will praat met jou? *chuckles* jy droom groot. (You think she will talk with you? You dream big.)

Kenny: sy is 'n meisie. Een dag sy wil gee in (she is a girl. One day she will give in) she gave in to you.

Me: I am warning you.

Kenny: you will do what? *chuckles* look at this nigga thinking he is still tough.

All his stupid lapdogs laughed. In my mind I was hoping Lona will listen to me and remain in that car. But knowing my baby. She is stubborn, she probably will never listen to me.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

When Xavier walked out, I quickly called JR . He answered very fast.

Me: you need to come to the freeway, just after Mdatsane. We were coming back from East London. Kenny has ambushed Xavier. You need to hurry up.

JR: okay, get in the car and stay in the car.

Me: okay. I am already in the car.

Why do they keep telling me to stay in the car? I looked at them, they were talking for a long time. At even one moment they both looked at me and continued talking. I could see Kenny was being angrier by the minute. Out of nowhere he threw a punch at Xavier. And that's where Xavier went crazy and started beating the

fuck out of him. The other guys started attacking Xavier too I could even see them taking out his gun. I was screaming so scared they might actually kill him. I can not just sit here and watch them beat him up like that I quickly unlocked my door and got out the car and ran to remove them from him. One guy held me back roughly. I was crying and calling Xavier. He was on the tar road bleeding a lot and I could see her was badly hurt.

Kenny: isn't she beautiful?

He walked closer to me and I kept sniffing. I wish JR could get here faster.

Xavier: I swear if you fucking touch her again.

Kenny: never have I ever thought you would have a weakness, Rellik. You always gambled

with people's weaknesses now it is your turn.

I was crying like crazy, Xavier looked at me worried. I was so scared because in times like this people get kidnapped or raped. Why in the hell did I choose to hang out with a gangster!? Now I can't just let him get hurt because in the process I get hurt too. What I feel for him I can't describe because I can not say it is love, we met like a month away. It is too soon to say it is love. I tried toning down my cries. I didn't want them to hurt Xavier more because I was loud. I did not want them to hurt me either.

Kenny: maybe a night with her won't be too much. Don't you gents think?

My eyes popped out in fear. Xavier tried getting up but he was kicked down by another big guy.

The one holding me tried dragging me towards a car. I screamed and resisted. The heels were no help though and the guy was very tough. I screamed and screamed. I was shoved in the car. I tried getting out but the guy got in and held me still. Another guy got in on the other right side.

Me: Xavier! Xavier!

I saw cars approaching. they were speeding off very fast.

Kenny: get her out of her fast! *shouting*

I tried poking the other guy in the eye, it worked and I also did it on the driver so he can not drive. I can not be kidnapped today! Not ever, the other guy who was sitting in the right side

slapped me so hard, I saw some tiny colourful stars.

?: drive, you idiot!

The car started moving slowly and my heart started moving fast, my breathing got abnormal and I was struggling to breathe.

?: itheni na lemedi kaRellik? (What's wrong with Rellik's girl)

I felt the need to vomit so bad, before I knew it I was vomiting on the guy on the right. Who was the one talking a lot. I felt a bit better at breathing. The guy screamed and shouted at me then the most scariest thing happened. The car was hit, making it spin and spin until it stopped. My head was so sore from the

spinning and from hitting the chair in front. The guys opened the door, I was pulled out of the car. I saw JR.

JR: let her go.

He tried to come closer, but I was aimed with a gun. I gasped thinking about how I am going to die. I used to pray for death to come to me, now I am so scared. I was going to have a second panic attack. I screamed when one guy was shot, and I don't even know where the bullet came from. I stared at his lifeless body with tears following repeatedly.

JR: should I repeat myself?

I was praying so hard, even promising God I will go to church the next Sunday. I just cannot lose

my life at only 18, my brothers still need me. I heard another shot fire off, I was just crying and asking myself why this happened in my life? I miss my boring life with only just books and family. What is happening today is so scary I don't ever want to talk about it again. The guy pushed me towards JR and tried to run. But he got shot by JR. I have never seen so many dead bodies in my life and so much blood

JR: sukhala umoja (don't cry, you're okay.)

Me: w-where is Xavier? Is he o-okay? Can we just go home please please.

JR: ndizoku hambisa khona (I will take you there)

Me: no.! No! I am going with Xavier. Where is he? Please take me to him.

Another guy came closer to us, I noticed it was

one of Xavier's guys. He was behind the car

Me: he was the one shooting?

JR: yeah, this is Shooter.

I nodded, we got in the car, and I was still shaking scared from what happened.

JR: bozza uthe ndikubeke straight kwiB&B
(boss said I should take you straight to the B&B.)

Me: no. Take me to him, please. *sniffs*

He turned the car around and sped off to where we left Xavier. I could see from afar he was not good. Another guy of his crew was examining him like a doctor. Once the car stopped, I got out quickly ran to him. I didn't care about the guy examining him. I just hugged him crying he

hugged me back even when he was in pain, I still love his hugs, because he never gives them a lot.

Xavier: I told JR to take you home.

Me: I want to go home with you.

Xavier: Lona, please stop being stubborn. It is not safe.

Me: I don't care. You're hurt, I don't want to leave you.

Xavier: Kenny got away, he could be anywhere near East London and he will come for you.

Me: which is why I need to be closer to you.

He touched my cheek where I had a redish bruise from the slap. He looked at JR, but I answered the question he wanted to ask

Me: they are dead. *sniffs*

I saw people die right in front of my eyes. Will I ever get over that?

OUTFITS THEY WORE

[02/21, 08:28] [+263 77 556 7430] : ~ I
CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 20

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I was still worried about Xavier. His white Gucci hoodie was covered in blood. And he had bruises on his all over his face. His left eye was

a bit swollen. And he had a black eye on it. He looked angry speeding the car off to King Williams Town. I didn't want to tell him to slow down because I would've made the situation worse. When we arrived at the B&B. We both got of the car in the same time. I didn't even want him to use his energy opening the door for me because I knew he was in pain. He was really badly beaten up. I held his hand and we walked to his room. When he opened the door, I got the shock of my life. There were red rose petals everywhere in the room. It was also lit up with candles that were almost going to be finished. The bed had rose petals that spelt "be mine?". I smiled covering my mouth, and got in the room smiling.

Me: Xavier, what is going on?

Xavier: I was planning on surprising you.

Me: wow, this is. This is beautiful. Thank you so

much.

I hugged him but later regretted it when he winced in pain. I avoided answering the question because do I really want to date Xavier? He comes with a lot of baggage and problems. Today I was almost kidnapped and raped. Do I want to live my life in fear all the time?

Xavier: you haven't answered the question.

Me: Xavier. We can't date. My brothers will get very angry.

Xavier: so all your life you are going to live behind your brothers?

Me: they will go crazy and do something stupid.

Xavier: I am not scared of Muller and King.

Me: I am. I can not disappoint them. They want me to finish school.

Xavier: who said you won't finish school when you're with me?

Me: Xavier... what happened today showed me that you live a very dangerous life. I can not survive tha-

Xavier: look, I am tired of hiding my feelings for you. I want you and clearly you want me, so why do we have to drag it?

Me: do you have to be rude about it?

Xavier: Lelona. I know I am not perfect, but having you by my side is the only perfect thing that would complete my life. I know I come with a lot of disadvantages but baby, I promise you. I will never involve you in my businesses that are dangerous.

Me: I don't want to ruin our friendship.

Xavier: we are sharing the same bed. Cuddling together and we hold hands in public. Lelona, it's clear we have something more than

friendship.

Me: they are already calling me your weakness.
I am not safe

Xavier: you are, because what I feel for you I can not even explain it. But I will make sure to keep you safe at all times even if I die doing that.
Now stop being scared and be mine?

I looked down, and looked into his eyes. I don't know what happened but I thought all the times we have ever seen each other. From the kitchen at my brother's house party to today. I trust Xavier with my life, and I would be lying if I said these feelings will go away. He lives in Cape Town for crying sake! We will see each other often. And he is in the same gang with my brothers, well he is about to control my brothers. He looked disappointed that I wasn't responding to him. I smiled and nodded, then he chuckled and tried to hug me, but it was hard

for him because he was still in pain.

Xavier: I promise you, this shit that happened today. It will never happen again. I will protect you from anything.

Me: don't worry about that now. Worry about your health.

Xavier: You really mean a lot to me Lona.

Me: *smiles* you mean a lot to me too

I made him sit in the bed even when the roses were there. I fixed the pillows against the dashboard and helped him inside the bed. Thank God the roses didn't make him uncomfortable. The little dinner that was organised on the floor really made me smile. This is so cute, and the candles make it more adorable.

Me: you need to sit down and rest.

Xavier: give me a few days and I will be okay.

Me: you should've went to the hospital.

Xavier: the same hospital that gave me shit for wanting quicker services.

Me: I will get you painkillers and you can rest.

Xavier: wait first take off my hoodie. I can't move my body properly.

I frowned and help him out of his clothes. He was now shirtless and I saw a lot of bruises. I tried touching his one of his bruises which was on his left side. He touched my hand, and kissed the back of my fingers because when he picked my hand it formed into a fist. He did this in the most cutest way, my heart started beating fast and butterflies were going crazy.

Xavier: I promise I will be okay. I don't want you to worry so much.

Me: maybe you do need to return to Cape Town, there you weren't getting hurt like this.

Xavier: I am not leaving you behind. Not in a million years.

Me: you could die here!

Xavier: ek sal nie gaan nie. (I will not go)

Me: what will you do then?

Xavier: I am taking you with me to Cape Town.

Me: what? My brothers will get very angry. I can not tell them about us yet, we have been dating for like 30 minutes? It is too soon.

Xavier: *chuckles* calm down. You will have to tell them you got tired of your mom.

Me: won't Kenny kill them?

Xavier: he respects them. Trust me, your brothers are not weak at all. They can handle

themselves. It is you I am worried about.

Me: okay, when do we leave?

I could see she wasn't that much happy with us leaving.

Xavier: finally, you listen to me without being stubborn.

Me: because I do not want Kenny to sneak an attack on you again.

I gave him painkillers and some water. But looking at his bruises I was worried he might have broken a rib when he was being attacked by plenty of men.

Me: who was the guy examining you?

Xavier: K9.

Me: is he a doctor?

Xavier: you could say that.

Me: it's either yes or no. Not "you could say that.

Xavier: he studied medicine but he is having a difficult time with financial issues.

Me: which room is he staying in? I need to call him to check you out again. What if you broke a rib?

Xavier: Lona, please sit down I will be okay. Are you not hearing me?

Me: just to be sure, please.

Xavier: check the second room on the right.

Me: I will be right back, stay put.

He got out, struggling so hard. I rushed to him to help him get up.

Me: why are you getting up?

Xavier: I am going with you.

Me: no! You are hurt. Stop being manly about it, please. I will be back right now.

I sat him down again, and quickly checked the room he told me to check. I knocked and he answered quickly, he was on his phone talking to his girlfriend because I heard the word "baby."

me: Xavier needs help.

He nodded and quickly got in the room and took this little bag that looked like a doctor's bag. Then he went out the room then he followed me and we both went to the room me and Xavier share. He was still talking on his phone with his girlfriend. He kept assuring he he was fine and

he will be back next week. That is so cute, I wonder if I will be like that when Xavier leaves for his trips?

Xavier: K9 assure my worried girlfriend that I am fine.

I smiled at him calling me his girlfriend. I could get used to this. His voice when he says baby and girlfriend really send me over the edge.

K9: *chuckles* she's doing what any worried girlfriend would do.

He opened the bag, I switched on the lighta and examined him again. He checked to see if he had any broken ribs by touching his body. I turned off all the candles.

K9: lucky motherfucker. No broken ribs. Just body bruises and face bruises.

Xavier: painful bruises.

He was about to give him some painkillers.

Me: I already gave him some painkillers.

K9: then I am done here.

Me: I am taking him to a doctor tomorrow.

K9: *chuckles* try to convince him.

Me: oh sorry, I am not saying you are a bad doctor or anything. I- ... I am sorry. *sighs*

He just looked at me with no smiles or anything I was scared. I didn't mean to offend him, but Xavier needs proper care.

K9: kumoja (it's okay)

Xavier: stop stressing my girl.

K9: I said it's fine. *chuckles*

He smiled at me and picked up his bag and I walked him out. I looked at Xavier who was becoming sleepy.

Me: we are going to a doctor. You need to see one.

Xavier: K9 is one.

Me: don't make me feel bad because I already feel bad.

Xavier: he didn't take it to the heart.

me: but you still need to go to a doctor.

Xavier: come to the bed Lona, it is late.

I fixed his pillows and made him sleep properly. I changed into my shorts and baggy top pyjamas. Luckily he didn't see me. Then I got inside the bed, I looked at the remaining roses just smiling at them.

Me: what about the little dinner set on the floor?

Xavier: don't worry about that.

Me: okay.

He pulled me closer to him and I laid on his shirtless chest. I swear I could hear his heartbeat. I blushed because in a weird way this was so romantic. I heard his light snores and I knew he was sleeping. I wrapped my eyes around his waist but not in a painful way. After a long time, of me just staring at his tattoos and bruises, I eventually fell asleep. I woke up to

things shuffling, I groaned waking up. Xavier was up and looking for something.

Xavier: damn, I woke you up?

Me: yes. It's okay. What are you looking for?

Xavier: painkillers. My body hurts like kak (shit)

Me: they are on my side drawer. Don't take a lot okay?

Xavier: okay.

I tried going back to sleep but it was useless because my sleep did not even come back, so I woke up to go brush my teeth. After I was done, I washed my face. When I returned to him, he was sitting on the edge of the bed. He looked at me, and motioned for me to come to him.

Xavier: come here.

I walked to him confused. He sat me on his lap. This dude is hurt and he wants me on his lap.

Me: Xavier you are hurt. I shouldn't be sitting on yo-

He cut me off with a kiss. Like a full blown kiss. I was shocked he licked my lips for entrance and I gave in and the kiss was amazing! Even the little brushes he did on my waist sent me to heaven! Guys I never had a kiss like this. It was so passionate and sexy at the same time. His hand travelled inside my top and still brushed my waist. His hands were making me feel a way I know I haven't felt in all my years of living. I broke the kiss off because I didn't want to move too fast with him. He pecked my lips, and sucked my bottom lip then he pulled it. He pecked my lips repeatedly. I started giggling.

And he chuckled looking at my eyes

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I have always wanted to kiss her, and it was the best for her being pure. I chuckled at her being horny because her eyes became so small. I let her break the kiss off for because I know she doesn't want to move too fast. She's still an unexperienced 18 year old. Her being bullied in her high school life, I know I will have a hard time with her. But I think she is worth the challenge.

Me: you should start packing.

Lona: why?

Me: we are going back to Cape Town remember.

Lona: Xavier I can not just leave. Muller will flip because I haven't even told them I am staying with you.

Me: Lona we talked about this, you will tell them that you do not want to stay with your mom and you hate this place.

Lona: what?

Me: it is the truth.

Xavier: yes but what if mom tells them that I went with you?

Me: trust me, she won't.

Lona: what if Kenny hurts mom and the others? I can not just leave.

Me: Lelona I am not leaving you here. It's not safe.

Lona: *sighs* are you not hearing me? He could hurt my family.

Me: I do not care about that, your life is important to me more than them.

Lona: well I care about them.

Me: why? They treat you like shit.

Lona: that doesn't mean I should treat them like shit.

Me: Lelona, listen to me for once! *shouts*

She got quiet and looked at me with fear in her eyes. I regretted shouting at her because I do not want her fearing me. She stood up from my lap, and I sighed.

Me: I can not just leave you in danger. You are coming with me. I am sure Kenny will do nothing to your family he respects your brothers. he is messing with you because he knows how I feel about you.

I stood up even in pain, and slowly kissed her. She smiled in the kiss and I knew she was going to say yes.

Me: I only want to protect you.

Lona: fine. Let me pack.

She chuckled. I smiled at her giving in to my charms. I went over to my bag, and she stopped me.

Lona: what are you doing?

Me: trying to pack.

Lona: I will, do not do that. You are injured. Sit on the bed.

Me: you are exaggerating my injuries.

Lona: just sit on the bed and hush.

I smiled and slowly sat down while I was in pain. She packed my things then packed hers. It was taking a long time, and I was getting sleepy. The medicine was working.

Lona: I will book a late flight. You need to sleep.

Me: no. We need to go now. The quicker we are out of here the safer you will be.

Lona: and you. Your safety is important too.

me: yeah.

She took her phone and started booking flights.

Me: I will pay.

Lona: you will rest. Now do that.

Me: lelona.

Lona: mhm...

Me: use my phone to book flights and put in my bank account details. I will tell you what they are.

Lona: I have already booked yours and I have paid now I will book mine.

I glares at her angry that she would pay but I told her I would pay. I have the most stubborn girlfriend ever. She never listens to me at all, that's what I like about her because she challenges me. But I also hate it when it puts her life in danger. Like yesterday I told her not to get out of the car, but she did. That almost had her kidnapped and raped but as soon as I find where Kenny is. I am killing him, I do not care about any war. He touched Lona twice so he digged his own grave. And I will help him get into it.

Me: that's not how it is supposed to go.

Lona: look, I like paying for stuff and you always buy me stuff so I will buy stuff for you now.

Me: that is never going to happen.

Lona: stop fussing over petty things and sleep.

I chuckled at her being bossy. After a few minutes she was still packing and I slept.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I watched him sleep again. Thank God because he talks and I can't concentrate on the packing I am doing. After I was finally done with my

packing. I found my diary, well it didn't feel like a diary anymore because my mom has read everything. I wanted to burn it and forget about the things I wrote in there. It surprises me how she would read all the hurt I wrote in there but she would not reply to that by hugging me and telling me everything will be okay, she only replied to the "Xavier's smile" confession, and she reacted with a whooping of my life. What a disaster my life actually is. And I can not believe I am saying this but Xavier and my brothers are the only ones that makes my life better.

Gangsters make my life better! Heee if someone told me I would be dating a gangster at only 18 I would scream saying they're lying. I always told myself I will never date a gangster because they come with trouble. My brothers do heists so they have a less dangerous life their only obstacle is being caught and going to jail. Gangsters like Xavier have enemies who want you to feel pain. They never find true love

because everyone around them is killed. Do I really want that for myself at 18? I mean I was almost kidnapped yesterday! He was brutally attacked if it weren't for JR and Shooter. I would probably have died because of Kenny.

~~

We finally arrive late at night in the airport. The rental cars were taken, and we were waiting for our flight. I kept playing with Xavier's rough hands as he talked to his crew. I knew their names now, it was JR, Shooter, K9 and Wiz. My phone rang and Xavier looked at me. I looked at the called ID. It was my aunt.

Me: I have to take this.

I walked a bit further away from them.

Me: dabawo. (Auntie)

Dabs: uphi? (Where are you?)

Me: ndibuyela eKapa (I am returning back to Cape Town)

Dabs: he!? Ngexaye ndoda? (What!? Because of a man?)

Me: dabaw-

Dabs: buyela kulendlu wena ndingekaxeleli uKhazimla noYanga ngalama nyala uwenzayo.
(Come back to this house before I tell Khazimla and Yanga about the disgrace you are doing)

[02/20, 05:54] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 21

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

My heart started beating fast, she sounded so angry and I knew she would do it. But if I stay here, Xavier is not going to be happy. Hell he won't even agree for me to stay. Kenny could be roaming around King Williams Town right now, and I am sure he is looking for me.

Me: dabawo andizokwazi. (auntie I can not)

Dabs: uhlalisana nomfana kungaphumanga neCent for wena. Inoba sowutyiwe notyiwa. Kodwa Lelona awuzithandi. Inoba waziyela nakulama ntombazana pha eskolweni sakho njemba waxoka kuthi wathi bafuna ukudlengula. (You're staying with a boy that didn't even pay a cent for you. Maybe he even had sex with you.

Lelona, you do not love yourself. Maybe you even went to the girls at your school by yourself then lied to us and said they wanted to rape you)

Me: *silently crying* dabawo. Ndicela ungandenzi Lento. Uyayazi ibuhlungu kangakanani lameko kum. (Auntie. Please do not do this to me. You know how painful that subject is to me.)

Auntie: into endiyithethayo ndithi buya qha. Utata wakho une'worry apha. Hamba uzonatya kulamadoda for uhlala kwiB&B. (All I am saying is come back. Your father is worried here. You go around opening your legs for men to stay in B&Bs)

I was so offended I even had hiccups while crying. I do not even know why I answered her call. She is my mother's best friend and my dad's sister what did I expect!? They all hate me like I did something to them. I would say I am a

bastard child and I remind them of my father's mistress, but I look so much like my mother it is like I am her younger version. Especially in pictures. I know I am her daughter she can not deny me, then why is she treating me like this? I felt hands on my shoulder, when I turned around. Xavier looked at me, he was confused as to why I was crying.

Xavier: what's wrong?

Dabs: uxelele lotsotsi wakho angaboyikisa bonke not mna. Makaye kwintanga zakhe. Inoba zimxakile yilonto esiza kwabantu abalula njengawe. Uyayazi ba angathi umhle and akubize baby wena sowuthatheka umthande. Umuncu, ntombi yam (Tell that thug of yours they may all fear him but I do not. He should go to the people in his age group. Maybe they are too much for him and that is why he went for easy people like you. He knows he can call you

beautiful and baby, and already you are in love.
You're dumb, my niece.)

Xavier: give me that phone. *angry*

I just gave it to him. He was so angry and he doesn't even know why am I crying. He put the phone in his ear, and I looked down. My head was so down, tears fell on the floor. That's how hard I was crying. They do not realise them trying to make me strong only breaks me more and more. I am not being bullied by my school mates or Kayla anymore. Now I am being bullied by my own aunt and mother.

Xavier: do I need to come over there so we can have that talk again?...oh you're her aunt?

chuckles angrily I know her mom told you we had a talk. Give her the phone.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

I wanted to curse the mother so bad, but I was shocked that it was the aunt. What the fuck is up with this family and hurting Lona?

Me: one thing I do not do is repeat myself.

Her: mxm inoba ucinga unguChuck Norris wena. Baninzi abantu endibaziyo nam abanoku susa kulomhlaba ngemini nje! (You think you're Chuck Norris. There are a lot of people I know that can erase you from this world in just a few days!)

She wasn't saying all of that when I was there. She ran out when she saw the gun. She was making me angrier by the moment. I dropped the call and gave Lona the phone. I am in so

much pain, dealing with this right now will only make me react badly towards everything.

Me: call your mother.

Lona: what?

Me: just do it, Lelona. No questions asked!

She dialed on her phone. She was shaking, whatever her aunt said really made her upset. After dialling she gave me the phone. Her mom answered after a long time.

Lona's mom: yintoni Lelona? (What is it, Lelona?)

Me: fix your bitch ass sister in law or I will fix her for you. You know I do not make empty promises.

Lona's mom: a-a. .. kodwa andikwazi uphatha izinto azenzayo. Ungumfazi omdala. Akasoze

andimamele(i-i... but I can not control what she does. She is a grown woman. She will not listen to me.)

Me: hey hey! I do not give one single fuck. Make a plan. Whatever she has in her chicken head, I will remove in the most unpleasant way. Moenie speel met my nie ek is nie 'n spel nie. (Don't play with me I am not a game)

Lona's mom: he? (What?)

I dropped the call on her dumbass. I swear if those bitches jeopardize my relationship with Lona, they will pay. It has been a long time since I killed someone probably like 1 or 2 weeks. And my ego is craving for someone's miserable cries for help. Lona was still looking down, I picked her head up, and hugged her. That only made her cry worse. It confused me, hugs are supposed to help but it looks like mine triggered her more. I even thought my black

plain t-shirt was going to be soaked in her tears but eventually she stopped.

Lona: I am so sorry.

Me: it is okay. You know I will always be here for you.

Lona: maybe I should really go back. She- she will te-tell my bro- brothers...

She was having these hiccups she was struggling to speak. I hated seeing her like this. Her face was so red, I wanted to forget about my injuries, go back to King Williams Town and kill that bitch for making my wife feel like this.

Me: you are not going back there. Your mom will sort it out.

Lona: but she also ha- hates me.

She cried hugging me again. I looked at the gents who were looking at me in smirks. They were surprised I actually have feelings for a crybaby. Trust me, I am also surprised I am not annoyed yet. I brushed her back, and whispered in her ear

Me: baby don't let them get you down like this. I promise everything will be okay.

Lona: I know her, she will tell them.

Me: fine, I will tell them myself if I have too!

Lona: no! That's a even bigger disaster.

Me: I am trying everything to make you stop crying my lief (love) but it seems like it's not working. Tell me what I should do, and I will do it. Please just stop crying.

I wiped her tears away frustrated that she is still crying. She sniffed and remained with hiccups.

Lona: I am done now. I just nee- need a nap.

Like clockwise our destination was called and I held her hand and walked to the boarding planes. After everything, we were finally in the planes. She looked out the window all sad and I did not like it one bit. She was so sad, I could feel it even in myself. I wish she could see how wonderful she is in my eyes, maybe then she will stop listening to other people's opinions of her. I held her hand and kissed it, she smiled painfully and laid her head on my shoulder.

Me: I don't like seeing you like this.

Lona: I am sorry.

Me: she should be sorry, not you. What did she

say anyway?

Lona: I do not want to talk about it please.

Me: it is okay. You should take your nap. You might wake up refreshed.

She nodded, after she pecked my lips she tried to sleep. Wiz looked at me and mouthed if she is okay. I nodded. But I want her aunt dead, I do not care how. But I do want it to happen.

~~

We arrived in Cape Town and I told Lona she will stay with me until her brothers know she is in Cape Town. When we went inside my house, she was looking at everything in awe. My interior design was mostly black and white. Black was my favourite color.

Lona: wow, you live in this big house alone?

Me: no one to share it with.

Lona: yeah right.

Me: *chuckles* why are you so sure I have hoes?

Lona: it's the woman instinct in me.

I chuckled and just walked to my bedroom. The house was clean because my maid cleans it every 4 days a week. My room had a huge closet and I wish that none of my hoes left anything that will make Lona angry. I will have to drop all the hoes I had, damn. But I guess my baby is worth the sacrifice.

Lona: Xavier. ..?

I looked at her from the door of the closet. She was holding a g-string.

Lona: so, let's talk about the hoes.

Me: *sighs* they are all going to be gone.

Lona: I am not mad because it was before we dated, so now we are dating. I would love a little bit of respect. Dirty lingerie is not what I like seeing in my hubby's drawer *chuckles*

Me: you won't see it again babe.

Lona: I am serious, one wrong hoe move and we are done, Xavier.

She wasn't smiling at all anymore. I nodded because I really am going to drop my hoes for her, but also needs to know I am a man, I have needs. But I won't tell her that right now because she will feel pressured to have sex with me, and I don't want to pressure her because I might end up losing her. I don't even know who put that dirty lingerie there.

Me: baby, trust me. They are gone, you are the only one now.

Lona: mhm.

I walked closer to her and kissed her cheek. I took the g-string from her and threw in the bin that was in the bathroom. When I went back to the room, she was sitting on the bed and looking into her hands.

Me: fede? (Sharp?)

Lona: ndimoja ntwana. (I am okay, dude.)

I looked at her confused as fuck. I like how different she is from the girls that are always ready to jump on my dick. She laughed at my facial expression.

Me: I think I like you being all princess like and being a crybaby.

Lona: of course you do *rolls eyes laughing*

Me: anything you want to do before we had off to sleep?

Lona: you sleep a lot.

Me: medicine makes me sleep. You aren't hungry?

Lona: no. I will just watch TV.

I drank the painkillers and went downstairs to order some pizza from the television I had in the lounge, I asked them for some vegan pizza shit, standard size for her then I brought myself large but i didn't buy that vegan shit . I brought the triple decker with extra cheese. I went back upstairs. She was watching Bad Girls Club on Vuzu Amp, she was so intrigued by the show, I

could see it in her facial expressions.

Me: got pizzas for us.

Lona: pizza? I can't eat pizza.

Me: do not worry, I asked the worker if there were vegan pizzas and he said yes. So you can eat pizzas.

Lona: *laughs* what if I do not want pizza?

Me: then I will forcefully shove the pizza down your throat. *chuckles*

Lona: so much anger. *laughs* you should be on the bad girls club.

Me: hell no.

She chuckled, I went to change into some basketball shorts so I can sleep. I was shirtless and I went inside the bed. She looked at me, more like stare at me. I grinned at her always

interested in my tattoos. I moved closer to her

Me: your show is back on. *smirks*

Lona: mxm.

She laid on her stomach and she was next to me. She touched my neck, more like brush it softly looking at my rose tattoo on my neck.

Lona: didn't this hurt?

Me: a little bit.

Lona: liar! It did a lot. *smiles*

Me: I was high and very drunk that day. So it didn't hurt that much.

Lona: why a rose on your Adam's apple?

Me: *shrugs* just to fill up the space.

Lona: you're crazy. Do you know how painful

tattoos are? And you did this one just to fill up the space? Wow *laughs*

Me: I told you it wasn't that painful.

I heard the house phone ring indicating someone wanted to be let in the yard. It must be the pizza, I went downstairs with my wallet. I let the scooter driver in the yard with the pizzas. When I opened the door, the dude was smiling at me. I just took out the money, gave it to him and took the pizzas. He noticed I wasn't the smiling type, and just left. I closed my door, and walked upstairs with the pizzas. My wife was still caught up on the television show. I gave her, her pizza and placed mine on the bed. I was about to walk back downstairs but I was tired as fuck from the injuries.

Lona: sit down. I will get the drinks myself.

Me: I am fin-

Lona: Xavier, do not make me drag you to this bed. Now sit down, I will be right back.

She quickly went downstairs and I sat down in pain. I was even sweating, I wiped my sweat and drank some painkillers again. After that, I ate a few slices, then she finally came back.

Lona: sorry, I couldn't find cups *laughs*

She gave me a cup full of coke, I placed it on my side board. I felt her looking at me, and I knew why but I just wanted to mess with her. She cleared her throat because I didn't look at her. I finally looked at her licking my lips, with a charming smile.

Lona: you are forgetting something.

Me: a kiss? *smirks*

I made my face into a kissing face, she laughed so hard I thought she was going to fall on the floor.

Lona: you look so cute.

Me: I never been ugly. *chuckles*

Lona: so cocky *shakes head smiling* I was going to say you are forget to say thank you.

Me: thank you, baby.

I smiled, and she leaned closer to me a quick kiss. I could still get used to her lips being so soft. She smiled, and started eating her food. I admired her when she ate her food. She had this cute facial expression on her.

Lona: please stop staring I am trying to eat.

blushes

Me: can't I admire what is mine?

Lona: stop. *blushes*

Me: come here. *licks lips*

She blushed and I decided to lean in and kissed her slowly. She smiled into the kiss, she broke the kiss off by pulling my bottom lip. That surprised the fuck out of me, I held her neck not wanting the kiss to end. She giggled and continued with the kiss. Damn, what is this girl doing to me?

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

after the kiss, he stared at me. Like stare at me from my hair to my lips again. I blushed because I could never get tired at how he looks at me. Then his eyes looked up and he looked into my eyes.

Xavier: *chuckles* your eyes are small.

Me: what's wrong with them being small?

Xavier: *smiles* you will understand later.

I rolled my eyes smiling, and continued eating. The way he kisses me always makes my panties wet. Should I be feeling like this? We just started dating and it gets so hard to resist him.

~~

I woke up to the bed empty, I frowned and looked around. When I got out of the bed, I shook my head because I slept in my clothes I blame Xavier because we were talking so much last night I slept late . After brushing my teeth and doing my morning routine I changed my outfit into denim jeans with a black bodysuit top and a denim crop jacket with my white Adidas sneakers. I let my hair loose. My phone rang and I saw it was Muller. My heart started beating up so fast, I was scared auntie called him and told him. I answered the call in fear.

Muller: uphi? (Where are you?)

Me: I... Cape Town.

Muller: *sighs* I thought I told you to stay in King Williams Town.

Me: I couldn't, if I stayed there I would've killed myself. They were really bullying me. I don't want to go back there.

Muller: *sighs* fine. Auntie called me last night saying you weren't sleeping at home because of your boyfriend but I told her you don't have a boyfriend.

I panicked for a bit, but I came up with the quickest lie.

Me: she's delusional. You know how they are. She must've mistaken the Uber driver helping me with the bags as my boyfriend.

Muller: yeah. I will let you know when I am back in King, I want you there too so we can solve all of this petty shit.

Me: okay.

Muller: talk to you later, I will send some money for groceries, we left the fridge empty. Bobby came with us so you will be alone. Love you, lil sis.

Me: thank you, love you too.

We both hung up and finally breathed. I lied to Muller and he thinks I am at home, he trusts me so much. He actually listens to my word over auntie's. Wow, this is actually an advantage for me. I walked downstairs. Xavier was watching some soccer shirtless with Scrappy. I could still see he had the bruises. I smiled and greeted them. Scrappy was surprised I was there.

Scrappy: wat gaan aan? (What is going on?)

Xavier: we're dating.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POPOV --

.

.

Scrappy looked at me and I already knew what he was thinking. Lona just smiled and walked to the kitchen.

Scrappy: Muller will kill you.

Me: let me worry about that. Not you.

~~

I parked at my uncle's yard, and there was a woman getting out of the house. When I got out my car. I was shocked to see Lona's mom, well I think that's her. But she had on a weave with makeup, she looked too different but looked exactly like her. She was wearing heels and she got in her white Mercedes G Wagon. She drove past me while I stood there shocked. What the fuck did I just see?

[02/20, 06:01] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 22

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I couldn't even go after the car because she was driving so fast. I quickly walked in the house and started looking for my uncle.

Me: Ghost! *shouts*

Fifi: he's not here. He went out an hour ago.
smiles

Me: tannie (auntie), who was that?

Fifi: what happened to your face!? *worried*

Me: who the fuck was that!? *shouts*

Fifi: who? *confused*

Me: the woman who just went out right now.

She was driving the G Wagon. She is Lona's mother!

Fifi: no, Sisipho does not have any children. I think I would know if my best friend had children. *chuckles*

Me: she is Lona's mother! It is that fucking bitch! She was here to hire a hit on me. Are you fucking protecting her!? *shouts*

Fifi: okay, Xavier. Calm down. I will not have you speak to me in that tone. I am telling you Sisipho, my best friend, does not have any children. She can not have kids due to medical issues.

Me: I swear, tannie. She looks just like Lona's mother...

Fifi: or you are just paranoid. Sit down and I will get you something to drink. People look alike everyday.

Me: yeah, maybe my eyes are fooling me. I hate

that bitch so much that I start seeing her
chuckles

Fifi: now, tell me what happened to you.

Me: Kenny happened.

Fifi: what? When did this happen?

Me: he sneaked an attack on me in Eastern Cape.

Fifi: what were you even doing there, tell me again.

Me: had to go check on Lona

Fifi: does this Lona know the sacrifices you make for her?

Me: yes. And she appreciates every single one.
chuckles she is different from the girls I used to have. She is a crybaby, but sometimes she loves thinking she is bossy and orders me around *laughs* and she has this cute expression on her when she eats. And when she sleeps she-

Fifi: oh my God. *smiles*

I looked at her and she was looking at me with tears in her eyes. I was confused what the hell she was crying for.

Me: what's wrong?

Fifi: you are in love.

Me: then why are you crying?

Fifi: I am just so excited! You are going to give me grandchildren. *sniffs* she needs to come over for dinner. Tonight, Xavier.

Me: too early. Ghost might scare her *laughs*

Fifi: do not diss my baby like that.

Me: *laughs* I want to chill with Lona first before her brothers get back and they might want her back in their hometown.

Fifi: where is her hometown?

Me: Eastern Cape.

Fifi: wait, isn't that wher-

Me: Kenny is. I know, but i trust her brothers. They would never let anything happen to her. Kenny respects them. It's me that he likes fucking with.

Fifi: he may respect her brothers but his hate for you is stronger than the respect he has for them. She can not go back there. You are sending her to her death. And I have not even had my grandchildren yet.

Me: you are going to wait a long time for that.
laughs

Fifi: just bring her to dinner today.

The door opened, and I heard Ghost talking.

Ghost: I want the money cleaned in less that 24

hours or it is not going to be a great day for you
laaitie. (kid)

He came inside the kitchen and immediately
dropped the call, and looked at me. I knew he
was upset over my face bruises.

Ghost: who did it?

Me: you dropped a business call for these tiny
bruises? *chuckles* they are healing.

Ghost: who did it?

Fifi: Kenny. He was in Eastern Cape.

I looked at her, she smiled and shrugged her
shoulders. I was going to tell him after I
stressed him for a while so he can agree to help
me with the war because I was going to kill
Kenny after I find him.

Ghost: what the fuck were you doing in Eastern Cape!? *annoyed*

Me: I had to go protect Lona.

Ghost: this Lona will start to get on my nerves if she make you think irrational.

Me: trust me, she is the only reason a war hasn't started.

Ghost: he sneaked an attack?

Me: that is the only way he would ever lay a finger on me. That weak laaitie thinks he can do anything he wants. I want him dead.

Ghost: fuck a war, let us do this.

Me: fifi and Lona will go to the safe house for a while.

Fifi: wait! Why don't you guys just call his father and tell him to control his son otherwise, he might find him dead. Instead of killing him right

away, send a warning first.

Me: I do not care about warnings. I want him dead.

Fifi: I hate the safe house. And I am sure Lona will hate it too.

Ghost: I will think of a plan.

Fifi: can you believe Zay thought Sisipho had a daughter and it is Lona *laughs*

Ghost: *chuckles* Sisipho and children?

Me: she looks exactly like her mom, it's just the weave and lifestyles that are different

They shook their heads laughing not believing a thing I said.

~~

I walked inside the house, and I saw everything was clean. I smiled that she cleaned the house because I was going to sort everything myself

when I came back from my uncle's house.

Lona: you are back.

Me: yeah. Ghost was away so I had to wait for him.

Should I tell her about the lookalike situation? I decided not to because I might be the wrong one here. She came and reached over to give me a peck on my lips.

Lona: are you okay?

Me: yes.

Lona: your mind just seems like it is all over the place. You are too quiet .

Me: I am fine. Ghost gave me permission to kill Kenny but I have to wait a few days first.

Lona: murder is the last thing I want to talk

about please.

Me: what's wrong?

Lona: I keep seeing the dead bodies I saw that night whenever I sleep. The event keeps replaying in my head like a broken CD.

Me: want sleeping pills?

Lona: no. I will be fine. I have a therapy session when I return back to school I will be fine.

Me: okay.

I wanted to ask her about the safe house, but I kissed her first so she can agree easily.

Me: how would you feel staying in a safe house?

Lona: what is that?

Me: it is a small house in the middle of nowhere. No one knows the location except Ghost, and there is no Internet connection or anything only

food and books plus games for boredom. It is a safe house. No one can hurt you there.

Lona: I have school.

Me: I kno-

lona: then you know I can not go.

Me: let me finish.

Lona: sorry.

Me: it is for a little while until we sort things out after I kill Kenny because Kenny's father is very dangerous.

Lona: Muller wants me back home when he is done with the job.

Me: he will have to wait.

Lona: no, the safe house will wait.

Me: lona-

Lona: baby.

I just chuckled at her being stubborn. She smiled at me, I licked my lips shaking my head.

Me: you have to listen to me.

Lona: I am.

Me: when does Muller want you back in King?

Lona: after he is done with the mission.

Me: so next week.

Lona: yes.

Me: what if Kenny is there and he is waiting for you to get there an-

Lona: I will be with my brothers at all times. I won't even go to town. So don't worry.

Me: maybe I should come with you.

Lona: no. You are going to stay here. Stop being paranoid. I will be okay.

Me: you will call me in case you have any

problem.

Lona: yes. *rolls eyes smiling*

Me: I am serious

Lona: I know you are. Are you hungry?

Me: Lelona...

Lona: yes Xavier, I will call you if I have a problem. Stop worrying, you should be worried about your injuries.

Me: I am feeling better.

Lona: are you hungry?

Me: are you going to cook? *smirks*

Lona: no. *laughs*

I looked at her, she laughed even more. I don't mind not being able to cook but at least she should be able to do something besides clean.

Lona: I'm joking babe, I will cook. I thought you liked takeaways.

Me: not all the time. I want my baby to surprise me sometimes.

Lona: well you should buy groceries so I can surprise you.

me: I think Gladys bought some food.

Lona: Gladys...?

Me: my maid.

Lona: oh...

Me: don't worry, she's old enough to be my mother *chuckles*

Lona: I just said oh, nothing else *laughs*

Me: I know when girls say oh, it means something bad.

Lona: eshee *laughs* you think you know everything about females.

Me: I know I do. *smirks*

Lona: okay, Xavier.

She walked over to the kitchen. I followed closely behind her. The kitchen was spotless and that confused me because I remember Scrappy making a big mess when he wanted some food. That time Lona was in my room.

Me: you should've forced Scrappy to clean his mess.

Lona: I am not that mean.

Me: once you start doing things for him, he will take advantage. Trust me I know.

Lona: *chuckles* stop being mean, and sit down.

Me: fine, don't listen to me. *smiles*

Lona: have you taken your medicine?

Me: yup.

She started making a sandwich for me. Filled with cheese, tomatoes, lettuce and ham. Then she made some juice for me. And gave the plate to me and juice with a smile on her.

Me: I could get used to this.

Lona: here you go ruining a moment with your cocky comments. *chuckles*

Me: oh we were having a moment *smiles*

Lona: no, I am just imagining things. *sarcastic*

I laughed at her being sarcastic to me. I pulled her closer to me. And kissed her she blushed and grinned.

Lona: what was that for?

Me: can't I kiss my girl?

Lona: *laughs* I didn't say that.

Me: I just really admire you.

Lona: *smiles* who would've thought the tough Xavier would be this soft.

Me: I'm never going to be romantic with you again

Lona: I am not saying that baby.

She smiled, pecked my lips repeatedly until I smiled. She giggled.

Lona: I just didn't expect you to be this sweet. First time I saw it was very scared, you looked way too mean.

Me: and you were the biggest crybaby in that house. And you still are. You were dramatic too

Lona: I am not dramatic.

Me: baby, you pulled Kayla to another room just

to talk to her.

Lona: I don't like talking around people I don't know.

Me: *chuckles* okay, if you say so.

Lona: *smiles* mxm.

Me: my aunt wants you to go at her house for dinner

Lona: no.

She looked scared and I just laughed out loud.
She folded her arms and looked at me.

Me: she is really a ncaa lady.

Lona: it is way too soon.

Me: we were just talking about you, and she wanted to meet you.

Lona: talking about me? what about me?

Me: she was just asking why I was fighting with Kenny, and the reason for me being so happy.

Lona: and you said it was me? *blushes*

Me: yes *chuckles*

I placed her in between my legs, and held her waist. I wanted to touch her fat ass so bad but I had to control myself because I have to take baby steps with her even when I want to rush things so much.

Lona: I will go, but what if they don't like me?

Me: trust me they will.

Lona: but-

Me: no buts, let me enjoy my food and my woman.

I kissed her slowly, I made sure to kiss her so

good because I wanted her to be horny. The small eyes on her look sexy as fuck. It is really cute she doesn't know when her eyes become small they mean something else. She pulled my lips, breaking the kiss off. I looked at her eyes and they were small. I licked my lips looking at her. She blushed and looked down.

Lona: stop looking at me like that.

me: like what?

Lona: just eat your food.

She walked away laughing. I shook my head and ate the sandwich with some juice.

~~

I looked at her wearing the simple tight blue dress. She had braided her hair in two braids. She looked very beautiful. The dress showed off her curves in the most sexy way ever. I wore my

blue t-shirt with a black Jean, with blue cap and blue sneakers.

Lona: copying my style, I see.

Me: nice try *smiles*

She smiled with me and we went to my uncle's house. We got there and I remembered what I saw yesterday.

Me: what is your mom's name?

Lona: what?

Me: your mom's name.

Lona: why are you asking?

Me: there is no valid reason for it.

Lona: don't tell me your planning to research about her. I will be very annoyed.

Me: no, Lelona. Just tell me her name.

Lona: Isipho

Me: not Sisipho ?

Lona: no. Isipho.

Me: okay. ..

Lona: why are you asking?

I need to research on Lona's mom because her having someone who looks just like her still confuses me a lot. I need to get to the bottom of this.

Me: I told you, I do not have a valid reason.

Lona: well what is that reason?

Me: just wanted to know for the sake of knowing

She didn't believe me so, she just rolled her eyes and walked towards the door. I shook my head because I didn't want us to have an argument right before we have dinner with my uncle and my aunt. I caught up with her and held her waist from the back and kissed her cheek.

Me: I I am not going to do anything to her. I promise.

She looked back at me and smiled. I can not believe I am being controlled by a woman. Love is really the strangest thing ever. I don't want to admit it but if this girl said she wanted someone dead, I would do it in a heartbeat. She could tell me to jump in a river full of sharks. I would do it just for her. I chuckled in disbelief at how whipped I am. I opened the door, and walked in with her. I could see she was nervous

so I held her hand to assure her everything will be okay.

Me: Ghost!

Ghost: dining room!

I knew we were a bit late because Lona had to braid her hair. That's why she was also nervous because she didn't want them to say she's rude.

Fifi: and we finally meet the famous Lona.

Lona smiled and looked nervous as hell.

Lona: good evening.

Fifi: hey, I am Refiloe and this is my husband Xander. He is Xavier's uncle.

Lona: it's very nice to meet you.

Fifi: likewise. *smiles*

They started talking and talking about so many different things, my uncle and I started getting annoyed.

Ghost: you will call her in time for dinner. We will be in the man cave.

Fifi just waved us off and started talking to Lona again. I smiled and left them there and followed behind my uncle. We watched some rugby while drinking beers because the dinner was taking a lot of time.

Ghost: she's pretty. I will give you that.

Me: I know.

Ghost: what will her brothers say about this?

Me: we will cross that bridge when we get there.

Ghost: so you pushing her to a kitchen counter was your way of charming her? *laughs*

me: don't start.

Ghost: she is not your typical type but she's good for you. I see the way you look at her. She's good for you, but don't let her change you in the game.

Me: meaning?

Ghost: the first time I fell for Fifi I became weak, everyone started challenging me and disrespecting me because when you're in love. You try everything not to disappoint your girl but remember the hustle never stops. She shouldn't interfere with your money or game.

Me: she won't.

He nodded. And I looked away upset that Ghost wants me to be more tough but he's soft as fuck with Fifi.

{NEXT WEEK}

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

Xavier: you will call as soon as you land.

Me: yes

Xavier: okay, be safe. And as soon as a problem resurfaces. Call me quickly

Me: I will.

Xavier: I am serious, baby.

Me: I am too.

Xavier: when you will come back?

Me: I will talk with my brothers so I can come

back early.

Xavier: okay. See you then.

Me: I will miss you.

I pouted looking at him. I really will miss him. This week has been amazing, we bonded over everything. And he lets me be me. The dinner with his family was also amazing. Fifi really likes me, and boy am I happy about that.

Xavier: I will call you everyday.

Me: bye.

Xavier: bye.

He let me go and I went to do everything so I can get in my flight. When I was done, I finally got on the flight. When I finally arrived. I saw Muller & King I ran to them with my bag and

hugged them.

Me: I missed you guys so much!

Muller: missed you too lil sis.

King: what happened to your cheek?

He seen the remaining small bruise from where Kenny punched me. Words got stuck and I didn't even know how to reply.

.

[02/20, 06:02] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 23

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

They both looked at me and I was utterly stuck with no lie in my mouth.

King: Lelona.

Me: please just drop it.

Muller touched my face and checked the bruise out. I know he was angry far more angry than he could explain.

Muller: I don't want to cause a scene here.
Masambeni. (Let's go)

Muller took my bag and walked first. When we were inside the car. That's when he exploded.

Muller: who the fuck did this to you! ? *angry*

Me: can you please just drop this?

Muller: I will not fucking drop it!? You're our little sister and I swear if you dare to fucking tell me to drop it, I will lose it.

Me: mom.

I didn't know what to say so I lied. I can not tell my brothers I was with Xavier and Kenny accidentally punched me. That would cause a huge havoc situation. I didn't want trouble at all, and mom deserves what's coming to her for treating me so badly. I didn't even know if I should tell them about the whip situation. They both looked very angry shocked that our mother would "punch me". The guilt kept eating me alive when he drove off in anger. The car was moving so fast I was scared he would crash the car. As soon as we arrived home, he parked in the garage and jumped out of the car.

Me: Khazimla!

Muller: stay out of it.

Me: I am already in it. Please let it go. It will make matters worse.

Muller: do you see your cheek!? Matters are already worse. I need to sort this out once and for all.

He stormed inside the house, and King helped me with my bag.

Me: can you tell him to not overreact.

King: mom needs to stop this madness. And Muller is the only one she listens to.

Me: I don't want to cause tension in the house. I will be the bad person.

King: no. That's not true at all, she is the one

who keeps creating the tension and all of this will end today. Come on.

We walked inside the house, and I regretted returning because when I stepped in my aunt glared at me, mom looked angry.

Mama: kutheni uxoka ngam nje wena? (Why are you lying about me?)

Me: ma?

Mama: uthi nya .

Me: mom, please don't do this. You know you're the only who did it. Don't make me look crazy.

Right now tears were falling, not because I was scared of her but because the guilt was eating me alive. She looked at me so sad, I wanted to come out with the truth but I just looked down.

Muller: here's what's going to happen. You will apologize and she's off the chores for a while until I don't see the bruise on her.

Me: Khazimla it's oka-

Muller: quiet!

I shut my mouth up real quick and I felt really bad. I don't know why I am like this, maybe because I know she didn't take part in this bruise.

Mama: Khazimla awuzondi xelesa mandenze ntoni endlini yam! (Khazimla you won't tell me what to do in my house!)

Muller: ndibhatala yonke ikaka elapha ndizokwazi. (While I'm still paying for everything shit that is here I will.)

Mama: bonanje masive utata wakho uzothini ngalento! (You know what let's hear what your father will say about this!)

Muller just shrugged carelessly. Mom got so angry she stood up and tried to come beat me up, but King stood in front of me.

King: yintoni na olady ingathi ungumntana ezway uzenzayo. (What is it Mom you're acting like a child)

Mama: Yanga, ungandixeleli ukholelwa lento! (Yanga don't tell me you believe this thing!)

King: unemibala elimnyama ngexayakho! (She has a dark bruise because of you!)

Mama: unenza nindijikele (she's making you turn against me.)

I walked to my room and just laid on my bed. I couldn't stay there for that fight because it was about me. I called my boo since I missed him so much. I wanted my mind to get distracted by all the mess my family has. He answered very quickly.

Me: baby...

Xavier: my lief. (My love) wat gaan aan? (What's going on?)

Me: why would you say that? You said I should call you as soon as I get home. I am home.

I heard the door being knocked. I hid my phone under the pillow and ran to the door so the person doesn't suspect anything. I opened the door and it was Muller

Muller: ugrand? (You're okay?)

Me: yes.

Muller: ubuthetha. .. (you were speaking...)

Me: I was just giving myself a pep talk.

Muller: I don't want you to hate your home.
That's why I was tough on mom because that's
when she'll talk treating you differently.

Me: I hope so.

Muller: okay, I will be in my flat if you need me

I nodded and he walked away. I breathed, then I
locked the door. When I sat on the bed, I took
my phone and Xavier was still on the line.

Me: sorry about that.

Xavier: what's going on?

Me: Muller handled the mom situation. We will
see tomorrow if she treats me differently.

Xavier: I knew I liked him better than the other brother.

Me: don't Diss King.

Xavier: jammer baba. (Sorry, baby.) *laughs*

Me: never say baba again because that sounded so weird. *laughs*

Xavier: I miss you.

Me: really now... *smirks*

Xavier: don't push it.

Me: I miss you too. More actually.

Xavier: right now I would be cuddling, watching soccer and kissing you then my day would be all made.

me: you're just trying to make me blush.
smiles

Xavier: I am serious. I miss our cuddles. You need to hurry up and come back.

Me: it's 2 weeks left.

Xavier: feels like eternity.

Me: *blushes* and you said you weren't the romantic type.

Xavier: I am not. But I am just being honest.

Me: my brothers asked about the cheek bruise from the Kenny fight.

Xavier: what did you say?

Me: I pinned it on mom. I feel so guilty. It's eating me up

Xavier: why? She deserves it

Me: the way Muller spoke with her. It was like she wasn't his mom, it was so disrespectful. I felt really bad.

Xavier: every time you feel guilty you should remember the way she treated you and all that shit will fly off the window.

Me: *chuckles* okay, I will try that.

~~

After the call that lasted for hours. I was always laughing and I am sure those that heard me think I have lost my mind. I got on WhatsApp and posted a status saying "who knew I could be this happy. [OBJ]" I smiled just looking at my phone. I can not believe I am actually falling in love. My phone vibrated because I received a message. I checked my WhatsApp and it was Cardo.

Cardo[OBJ] : Rellik is good for you, you even happy now [OBJ]

Me: mxm, if you're going to annoy me don't text me [OBJ] [OBJ]

Cardo[OBJ] : miss you too kiddo.

Me: I don't miss you [OBJ]

Cardo[OBJ] : hahaha very funny [OBJ]

Me: I'm only joking idiot [OBJ] I miss you too, you and Xavier are the only friends I have left.

Cardo^[OBJ] : that's because you're too crazy to have more friends.

Me: that's because i dont want new friends. I am good with only 2 friends.

Cardo^[OBJ] : yeah right ^[OBJ] ^[OBJ]

I know Cardo was joking but i was a bit offended that he was right. I can't even make friends. I am stuck with only 2 friends in my life. I was getting a bit thirsty so I unlocked my door and went to the kitchen. I saw my mother and aunt preparing food. I wanted to turn back so bad but I was really thirsty. When I opened the fridge that's when they stopped talking and both looked at me.

Dabs: nali'ihule lomzi (here's the hoe of the house)

Mama: Ndeshe myeke man. Inento eninzi into

enalomntana. (Ndeshe leave her alone. This child brings a lot of trouble.)

They both kept quiet and I just drank my water and walked back to my room. I was feeling sleepy so, I slept. I don't even want their greasy food! I don't even do anything to them but it's like their day is not okay without them tearing me down. The next day I woke up screaming. I had the dream of the dead people JR and Shooter shot. I was sweating and having a panic attack scared that I will die here in King Williams Town. I reached over my phone to call Xavier but I stopped because I couldn't call him. He would rush here very fast and that would place him in danger. I tried containing my panic attack then after it got better I breathed better and I just couldn't stop thinking of all the blood I saw. I rushed to take my small blanket then went to the lounge to watch some cartoons maybe they will make me feel better. I didn't

want to bother my brothers because they have separate flats outside the house and I was scared of bothering them. After watching the cartoon movie that's when I felt sleepy and it took everything away. I went to to my room and threw myself on the bed and just slept. I woke up to someone banging on my door. I groaned waking up. I walked to the door in a bad mood.

Muller: why didn't you turn the TV off at night?

Me: what? *tired*

Muller: Mom says you're not being cooperative with the agreement to not provoke her. You should turn the TV off at night and the lights off.

Me: sorry, I forgot. I was sleepy.

Muller: you guys are starting to irritate me I swear.

He walked away clearly annoyed with the

childish behaviour me and my mom had. I wanted to sleep again so I started creating my sleep until it came up. I slept like a baby until I finally woke up shocked that I slept till noon. The time was 4pm and i remembered I haven't eaten anything and I still wasn't hungry but I needed to eat. I walked to sleep the kitchen to boil water for my eggs. After my morning routine and changing into my grey sweatpants and black baggy t-shirt and black puffy slides. I went back to the kitchen. Right now my mom was preparing samp and beans. I boiled my eggs and eat them with bread after I was done I noticed my brothers weren't there.

Me: baphi ooYanga? (Where are Yanga and Khazimla?)

Mama: andibazi oko bebemke ekuseni. (I don't know, they left in the morning)

Me: okay.

She continued stirring the pot and adding some spices and oil. Dabs wasn't around and that was quite shocking to me because she's usually wherever mom is.

Me: uDabawo umkile? (Auntie is gone?)

Mama: ewe, oko ebeyothenga iVeg etown. (Yes, she went a long time ago to go buy vegetables.)

Me: I'm sorry.

Mama: he? (What?)

Me: I am sorry.

Mama: ndiyayazi (I know)

Me: mama-

Mama: ba uyakubetha hamba ngoku usakwazi Lelona. (If he hits you leave while you can Lelona)

Me: he didn't beat me up. He would never do

that. He loves me.

Mama: ucacisa njani lombala? (how do you explain that bruise?)

Me: masiyiyeke. (Let's leave it.)

Mama: inyani izophuma and uzosisola ba utheni uyenza lento hule ndini rhaa uzokunya Lelona man! Uyandinyisa endlini yam ogqiba undixelele ndiyiyeke ingathi abantwana abandijikelanga wena! (The truth will come out and you will regret what your are doing you hoe damn you will see Lelona! You're making me live uncomfortable in my own house then you tell me to leave it alone like my sons didn't turn against me for you!)

Me: I. ..

I just walked to my room because I knew if I said another word I will land in more trouble. Maybe I need to just shut up and let this go.

~~

Next day I woke up did my morning routine and into my knee ripped light blue jeans with superstar sneakers and my grey "yeezus tour" t-shirt. My hair was still in the two braids. My brothers were taking me out for shopping and I wanted new sneakers. My aunt was still not back and my uncle plus dad were on a business trip. They are truck drivers so that's why they're never home.

Muller: you are ready?

Me: yes.

We went to town, and I was a bit scared I might bump into Kenny and he'll reveal I am dating Xavier. We first went to Mr Price, and bought new clothes.

~~

After the whole shopping the time was now 3:30pm and I wanted something new.

Me: i want to have a new color weave.

King: what?

Me: I want to have a new weave and my weave should be blonde.

Muller: which salon?

King: blonde? *laughs* ndizoybona le! (We'll see about this)

I went to the hairport salon and I had to buy weave and do my hair. So I set an appointment for a week later because I wanted to buy a weave first.

~~

At home we walked inside with us laughing at me having at dumb moment in the car. When

we got inside, mom saw my bags and shook her head. I went to my room and placed them on the bed. I called Xavier, and he replied after a long time.

Xavier: yes?

Me: sorry are you busy?

Xavier: a bit.

I heard a mumbled scream in the background and a loud smack.

Me: I will call you later. Bye.

Xavier: okay, bye.

I hung up and just tried to not freak out that he was in the process of hurting someone. I do not want to get involved so I will just keep quiet

about it. I went to the lounge and there she was looking mean as ever. My mom could never look happy even if her life depended on it.

Mama: ndiyabona ugqiboba ncuva (I see you have just finished using them)

Me: not now.

Mama: ndithini ungathethi Lelona xa abantwana bam bebeziATM zakho!? (Why can I not talk Lelona when my children are your ATM?)

me: nam ndingumtana wakho! (I am your child also!) *shouts*

I was very angry because she always had to comment bullshit on any little thing I did it was starting to create anger inside me.

Mama: mxm.

She looked at the TV again. I was so heartbroken and angry at the same time, in my anger I screamed and she looked at me like I was crazy.

Me: yintoni inxaki yakho!? Ndenza yonke ikaka uyifunayo kodwa uyandinyela qho zange ndenza nix kuwe kodwa undiphethe kakubi ingathi andingowakho. (What is your problem!? I do every shit you want but you shit on me every time I never did anything to you but you treat me badly like I am not yours.)

Mama: hewethu ungandinxoleli mna ndibukele uRhythm City (don't make noise for me I am watching Rhythm City)

I was so defeated because she was so calm and here I was raging with anger. I felt so dumb

because clearly she will never listen to me. And I really don't know how and when our relationship got to this point.

mama: inxaki yakho uyibukela too much iTV. Uzotswina xa unomsindo *laughs* iraki zininzi kwaDaniel kodwa *claps hands* (your problem is you watch too much TV. Screaming when you are angry, mentally unstable people are too many in the Daniel family.

In my anger I went to the kitchen to grab a knife and when I was about to stab her, she screamed getting up quickly and running away from me.

Me: ndiyakucapukela! (I hate you!) *cries*

My brothers appeared in the process of me

chasing her. King quickly took the knife from me.

King: uphambene !? (Are you crazy!?)

me: I hate her, I want her dead. Andizohlala apha mna ndifuna ubuyela eKapa. Ndiniwe nguye *cries hysterically* (I won't stay here I want to go back to Cape Town. I am tired of her)

Muller: mama kwenzeka ntoni apha? (Mom what's going on here?)

Mama: kutheni ubuza mna! ? Buza lento ibufuna undibulala. (Why are you asking me!? Ask this thing that wanted to kill me.)

King: stop calling her a thing. She's your daughter!

Mama: mxm, ungandixeleli ikaka Yanga'inkosi. (Don't tell shit, Yanga'inkosi.)

Muller: Lelona go to your room.

I walked to my room, but at the same time I wanted to hear what they will say to her. I called Xavier to take my mind off all of this. He answered quickly.

Xavier: baby.

Me: hey...

Xavier: you're okay?

Me: yes. Just thought I should call you since I miss you.

Xavier: I miss you too. The house is very quiet without you.

Me: *laughs* really now?

Xavier: can't you talk to your brothers and you come back early?

Me: the way things are going I might come back early.

Xavier: what's going on?

Shit! I forgot how crazy he is. He might even fly over here when he learns I went crazy and almost stabbed my mother. I never want to be that angry again.

Xavier: lelona.

Me: nothing big...

Xavier: what happened?

Me: I almost stabbed my mom.

Xavier: what!?

Me: I was angry and I really regret it.

Xavier: you need me there? This is getting out of control.

Me: no! I will be fine, baby. I promise.

Xavier: you're sure?

Me: yes. Now stop worrying.

~~

After the call. I was getting hungry so I walked to the kitchen but I could still hear them lecturing mom. I didn't want to appear just yet, so I listened to them speaking without them knowing I was there.

Muller: dad talked with you about this. You know her mother is dead, you agreed to not treat her any different.

Were they talking about me?

Me: what's going on?

[02/20, 06:03] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 24

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I looked at them hurt that a secret like this was being kept from me this whole time.

Me: akango'mama wam? (She's not my mother?)

King: Lelona, that's not what we're saying...

Me: do not lie to me! *shouts* that explains why she hates me so much.

Muller: she is your mother. She raised you, therefore she is your mother.

Me: I want the full story.

Muller: when dad gets back.

Me: I want it now! I already know the big secret,

you might as well tell me the full details.

I wanted to cry but tears were just not coming out. I was more angry than sad, all my life I was led to believe the woman who ill treated me was my mother but all along she wasn't.

King: let's go sit down.

Mama: hambani naye andinalo ixesha lezonto mna. (Go with her, I don't have time for those things)

I was breathing hard with anger because she still treats me badly she doesn't even care that I just found out something that could change my life forever. My brothers and I sat in the lounge. She, the devil mother, continued preparing supper for us.

Me: what is going on?

Muller: you're our half-sister.

Me: so i'm the bastard child?

King: no.

Me: I don't understand. I look so much like her.

She walked in the lounge looking sad as ever, I noticed she has tiny tears. She was holding back.

Mama: ufana naye, not mna (you look like her, not me)

Me: I don't understand.

Mama: utata wenu webongo wenza isiqibo
sojola newele lam wena waba yimpumo
yelonyala (your precious father decided to have
an affair with my twin sister and you were the
result of that betrayal)

Me: that's why we're alike.

Mama: asifani tuu, uthambile nje ngaye.

Ndazama ndlela zonke ubengowam ufane nam,
kodwa inyan funeka ithethwa awusoze
ubengowam- (we're nothing alike, you're soft
just like her. I tried everything for you to be mine
to be like me but the truth must be told you will
never be mine)

Muller: mama!

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

.

I laid on the doctor's bed feeling defeated. I kept
vomiting and not feeling good, at first I thought
it was the alcohol but then it went on for days.

So now I'm in the doctor's office.

Doc: well the results are in and it is what I expected it to be.

Me: what is that?

Doctor: you are pregnant.
Congratulations *smiles*

Me: what?!

What he said next I could not even listen to. I kept replaying the words "you are pregnant" fuck! I am only doing my first year in varsity. Patrick needs to give me money for an abortion. I can't have a baby, I am still a baby.

Me: doctor! I don't care about anything else. I want to abort.

Doc: come back, next week. You need to rethink

this. A baby is a blessing, it brings love back into a relationship and even if you do not have anyone you will always have your child's love.

~~

I arrived home with a sad face. No one will want me when I have a baby. I even wanted more sugar daddies but now they won't even look my way. I miss Khanyi, right now she would've told me what to do. I called Zee even though I don't like her, I need some girl advice right now.

Zee: chommie (friend)

Me: I have a big problem.

Zee: talk to me, babe.

Me: I am pregnant. *cries*

Zee: what!? How?

Me: I slept with someone, idiot.

Zee: I know how, but how could you be so

stupid? You think Rellik will want someone with some baggage?

Me: I need to abort the baby fast. The only baby I will keep is his.

Zee: that's right!

Me: duhh

Zee: I have a plan, fool.

Me: what is it?

Zee: I read babies bring couples closer.

Me: so what?

Zee: pin the baby on Rellik?

Me: I didn't even get a chance to sleep with him. This is a disaster.

Zee: he is going out tonight I think, I saw it on Cardo's status something about a spinning show. We will be there, drug him. Drive him to your place, get the job done.

Me: I can't sleep with him drugged, will his thing

even stand?

Zee: wow, you're dumber than i thought. You will take pictures of you guys both naked. He won't know you didn't sleep with him, you will pin the baby on him.

Me: he will kill me.

Zee: you will tell him if you get hurt the pictures will leak.

Me: I will be the one embarrassed! Being a pornstar for a man.

Zee: they won't leak, bitch! *annoyed* you think he would jeopardise his relationship with Lona like that? He will start treating you like a golden eye just for the news not to leak.

Me: that is a great idea! Let me look for an outfit.

Zee: and I will get a car for us. Let's hope this plan works.

Me: me too, thanks zee.

We both hung up. I am starting to think I will like this Zee. I searched my drawers for an outfit and I found a black crop top with some short skirt that was high-waisted and some black heels. I tied my hair up and it was curly in my ponytail. I applied makeup and started preparing for the mess I am about to create. I looked around the house for the drugs I will need. I smiled when I finally found them. Lelona is not going to stay after this, I know how weak she is. And because of that, I will always have the upper hand than her.

.

.

-- ISIPHO'S POV --

.

.

I looked at them going to her room to comfort

her like someone was dying. Lelona should be grateful I didn't kill her like I killed that bitch I called a sister. Sisipho was always more popular than me even when we were identical twins, people preferred her than me because I was always so mean. I was happy when her crush approached in back when we were younger, but it seemed as though he was trying to get her through me. I felt betrayed and angry, that's when the hatred I felt for her started to get created. As time went by, in our varsity years I had a boyfriend whom is my husband now. My husband also took a liking to my twin, and I just lost it when he told me the baby she was carrying was his. I planned for her to get robbed and shot to death in her small house. I know I was wrong for killing her but the anger inside of me really did not care. I was heartbroken when I learned the baby survived the shot and murder in her mother's stomach. We just got a call saying my sister is dead and

the baby was in the hospital. It was shocking to my husband but not to me. What was shocking to me was that her body was said to be dead but I never saw her dead body. I never really cared about it because deep inside I did feel like she was dead. What my husband asked me to do 18 years ago was a hard challenge for me. To raise the child that came from your husband's infidelity with your sister! I couldn't treat Lona the same, I just couldn't because she had all the qualities she had. The smile and funny personality people loved so much.

King: mama.

Me: khandiyeke Yanga (leave me alone yanga)

King: umsulwa kuyoyonke lento (she's innocent in all of this)

Me: qho xa ndimjonga, ndikhumbula latlungu ndayiva ngoku uyihlo wayexoka ngobusuku ephuma kodwa ulala nodade wethu. (every time

I look at her, I remember the pain I felt when your father lied about night outs only to be sleeping with my sister)

King: okay, ndiyayiqonda utata eberongo ngokuthi khulisa umntana ingathi ngowakho abe eyazi intlungu ezayizisa. Kodwa wena umhlukumeza akuzolungisa nix. Ixesha alizobuyela. (okay, I understand dad was wrong for saying you should raise the child like your own knowing the pain that it might bring. But you abusing her like this won't fix anything. Time won't go back.)

Me: ndiyayazi, kodwa ndicela into ey1 (I know but I am only asking for one thing (

King: yintoni leyo? (what is it?)

Me: andifuni abelapha ndiniwe kukhulisa umntana ka Sisipho mna. (I don't want her here I am tired of raising Sisipho's child.)

King: mama uyagula!? Uzoyaphi? (mom are you crazy!? Where is she going to go?)

Mama: andikhathelanga makahambe (I don't care I want her gone)

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I was crying in my bed and Muller was just trying to comfort me. I wanted to get the hell out of here. I feel like everything is a big fat lie here. How could I not realize this! ? This is why she hated me so much because I remind her so much of her husband's betrayal. I feel a slight bad because she is a strong woman. To raise the child who will remind you each day of the times to your husband cheated on you will your sister. Not just any sister. A twin! I would go

crazy too, but to my husband not the innocent child who never asked for anything. Because I did not force my dad and her sister to have sex nor an affair.

Me: I want to go back to Cape Town.

Muller: I don't want you to go because she's forcing you to go. Don't let people control you like that.

Me: what should I do? Stay!? Clearly she hates me, I can not believe you guys kept this from me.

Muller: you were too young to understand.

Me: you should've told me as soon as I was 16!

Muller: you are a vulnerable and weak child. You being sensitive, we were afraid a big secret like this would break you. You reacted better than we thought.

Me: next time, tell me. How I will react will be up

to me!

That was the lamest excuse of not telling me, but I decided not to press on it too much.

~~

I could not sleep at all, the time was 8:43pm and I wanted to call Xavier, but he didn't answer his phone. I went to WhatsApp and the status on Cardo's statuses told me Xavier was really busy. He looked like he was in a party holding a cup, it was a group photo but I was only concentrating on my boyfriend who isn't answering his phone but he is busy with parties. I can not be angry because he is a man, he deserves to have fun, but I wanted to talk to him about how crazy my life is, and he decides to not answer the phone!? That's fucked up.

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

Scrappy: this laaitie has been whipped ever since he has been with her.

Me: hoe jou bek! (Shut up)

Cardo: they are both whipped. Lona is annoying the hell out of me with those love statues.

Me: loos my meisie alleen. (Leave my girl alone)

The gents started laughing. We were hanging out, in the spinning show. It was just me, Scrappy, Cardo, JR, OG, Shooter and Wiz. They were talking about me being whipped because of Lona. I don't even want to lie, but I don't want to admit it either. After a while the fun started

and I was getting very drunk. Me and the gents were really enjoying ourselves. I saw Kayla and her friend Zikhona and instantly I was annoyed.

Wiz: nasis'fijo sikaScrappy (here's Scrappy's hoe)

They came to us and I was too drunk to even pay attention to them. Zikhona smiled first while Kayla was eye-fucking me. I got annoyed and continued talking with OG.

OG: ingathi lemedi ibeke wena *chuckles*
(looks like the girl is checking you out)

Me: I don't care about her.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

He looked so hot wearing a black t-shirt with blue & yellow sweatpants and some sneakers. He looked so sexy I wanted to fuck him right there! I wasn't even paying any attention to Scrappy because he said he didn't anything to do with me so I want nothing more to do with him. After greeting the guys, me and Zikhona walked a far away from them.

Me: I brought eye drops medicine, I heard it makes people sleepy. And it will work fast. He is already drunk.

Zee: okay, let's do this. I will mix up a drink with a dash of a shot then you will add the eye drops and give it to him.

Me: he will never take it.

Zee: I will ask to talk to him and you will come

asking for anything from me than make small talk and give him the drink!

Me: okay cool.

I saw her swaying her hips towards the guys' cars. They made their own circle with their cars. She stood next to him and whispered in his ear since the cars were too loud. He got up and she held his hand and walked with her. The boys started laughing and hyping him up. Lona will never be able to control him, he is a man whore. He did not even think about her he just held her hand. I quickly took plenty of pictures of them and I watched them talk then I slowly walked over to them. I made sure I had 3 cups so he doesn't suspect anything when just give him the drink

Me: Zee where's the phone? I need to call our transport.

She gave me the phone, I gave her the cup and I offered Rellik the drugged drink in a cup. He just looked at it and looked at me.

Me: look, I am not trying anything. I respect your relationships with other girl-

Rellik: one relationship with Lona. Only her.

I was shocked that they are already dating! I thought they were friends and not something more. My heart was broken that, that bitch has him before me. But I don't care, I can take him.

Me: I won't try anything, I respect your relationship with Lelona.

He nodded and took the cup, he couldn't even

stand properly that much but he still took the cup.

Zee: I got some weed in the car we came with. We can talk properly there.

Me: what are you guys talking about?

Zee: my fling is a gang member in jail and he might have a proposition for Rellik. It will make money for him.

Rellik: azishe (let's go.)

We went to the transport and he didn't even notice I didn't even call the transport. We went to the car, it was one of Zee's flings. Rellik was drinking his cup, and when we were inside, Zee started smoking the joint. I smiled looking at him drinking his drink getting very drunk and the weed will finish him off. She passed the joint to me, I puffed twice then passed it to him. He

couldn't even puff properly he was very tired. I smiled as he passed it to Zee, then it was lights out for him.

Zee: I will call Mzo. We will need him *chuckles*

Mzo was the transport guy, and I couldn't stop kissing Rellik even though he was sleeping and not kissing me back. His lips were soft, I just wish he would kiss me back. Mzo and Zee came back, and I had to cover Rellik's face with some shades because if Mzo saw who it was he wouldn't want to help us. Almost everyone is scared of Rellik he would've been shit scared.

Mzo: kuyini lokhu? (What is this?)

Me: just one of my flings I saw here. I am taking him back to my place.

Mzo: ungangifaki ekingeni (don't put me in

trouble)

Me: never. Let's just go.

He drove off to my apartment fast. When we got there, Zee helped me get Rellik in my apartment. It was very hard and Mzo drove off without even helping us. I rolled my eyes thinking about how much of a pussy he is. We laid him on my bed and I smiled at her. The plan actually worked.

Zee: let's get him naked I will charge my phone in the meantime.

I grinned nodding, I started by taking off his t-shirt, and damn was I in awe at how beautiful he looked. The tattoos and body just sent me over the edge. Zee came back and I removed his pants and boxers. I bit my lip looking at his dick.

Zee: damn. You're lucky bitch!

Me: I know *smirks*

I took off my clothes and I was naked too. Zee took off his sneakers and took a condom from my drawer. I looked at her weirdly.

Zee: I have some sperms in a bottle inside my purse, we will stretch the condom with his dick then pour the sperms in. After that, we take pictures. it will make him think you guys really slept together.

I laughed happily at how smart she is! Then we did what she said then she threw the dirty condom on the floor so it can be the first thing he sees when he wakes up. I got on top of him and made it look like I was riding him and she

took the pictures.

Zee: he looks drugged. Hide his face by kissing him.

Me: okay, and I need to take selfie pictures so it doesn't look planned.

Zee: here's the phone.

I took it and took pictures of us kissing, well me kissing him. And me cuddling with him. I laid on him and placed his hands on my ass then I took the pictures of it.

Zee: okay, now send the pictures and don't tell him you have sent them to me. Sleep, cuddling with him and the plan will work itself out.

I smiled and got up to hug her.

Me: thank you, Zee.

.

.

[02/20, 06:04] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 25

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV--

.

.

I woke up with the most painful headache ever. Fuck! I hate hungover. I looked around and I didn't recognize the tiny room. I looked at the girl cuddling on my chest, and I was angry as fuck when I saw it was Kayla! I pushed her off

so hard, she woke up almost falling off the bed.

Me: what the fuck is going on!?

Kayla: I think you're smarter than that. *smirks*

Me: I will fucking-

Kayla: kill me? *chuckles* and risk Lona seeing our beautiful pictures on the amazing sex we had.

Me: if she ever hears about this I will break your neck with my hands!

I rushed to strangle her, but she quickly ran out of the room. She locked the door quickly and she started shouting on the other side of the door.

Kayla: I sent the photos to a lot of people and if something happens to me. The pictures will

reach Lona. So I would be careful if I were you.

In my anger I hit the door, I heard her squeal in fear. Why the fuck was I so stupid!? I looked at the used condom and I was a bit relieved we used a condom. I started wearing my clothes, disappointed that I would get sloppy drunk to a point where I would fuck Kayla, the person that hates me girlfriend so much. I have given her a reason to hurt Lona. Kayla walked in, she picked up the condom and smiled.

Kayla: one round with the condom then the rest was raw, I knew I liked you for a reason Rellik.

She tried to kiss me, I slapped her so hard she landed on the floor, I was about to kick her on her back.

Kayal: stop! Or else Lona won't ever talk to you again.

I searched for my phone and stormed out the house in anger. I looked at Lona's missed call and guilt ate me up. I called Scrappy to come get me.

Scrappy: nja ye game.

Me: come get me at your whore's apartment.

Scrappy : what?

Me: Kayla.

I hung up because I wasn't in the mood for questions. After 45 minutes of me impatiently waiting there, he finally came. I got in the car in anger.

Me: what the fuck took you so long!?

Scrappy: yo, I didn't tell you to fuck her.

Me: I fucked her raw after round 1 *sighs* fuck!

Scrappy: let's go get your car then we can think of a plan later.

We drove to the spot and my car was still there untouched. Maybe because the numberplate was written "RELLIK" and everyone knew not to mess with me, my car has a tracker anyway.

Me: let's meet in my house.

Scrappy: fede (sharp)

We raced to my house, and he won because he was in front of me. When we got in my driveway he got out first and I followed. Inside the house, there was no one and that made me miss Lona.

Fuck I shouldn't have even went to that stupid spinning shit.

Scrappy: now explain to me what happened?

Me: I got sloppy drunk, started smoking weed with them and that's when lights were out I don't even remember anything else. Apparently we had sex and after one round I hit it raw, bro

Scrappy: shit. You're in deep shit.

Me: I know.

Scrappy: kill her.

Me: if something happens to her, the pictures will go to Lona.

Scrappy: she's smarter than she looks.

Me: I can't have her ruining my relationship with Lona.

Scrappy: I will try and manipulate her into telling me what she wants.

Me: thanks man.

I walked him out and I went to my bathroom to shower. Then I wore white t-shirt with light brown sweatpants. I wore my Gucci slides. I decided to man up and call Lona. She didn't answer at first, and my heart started beating fast because I was worried that she knows already and it took me a month to get her. I can't lose her that easily. I called her again worried that maybe something might have happened to her. She finally answered after my 3rd try

Lona: yes?

Me: wat gaan aan? Hoekom het jy nie jou phone beantwoord nie? (What's going on? Why weren't you answering your phone?)

Lona: I was busy. Where have you been?

Me: besig met wat? Is jy OK? (Busy with what? Are you okay?)

Lona: I am okay. I just found out something big though.

Me: what?

Lona: my mom isn't really my mom.

Me: wait what?

Lona: she has a twin and the twin is my real mother, but she is dead.

Me: what!?

That's when everything came back. I have to call Fifi to set up a meeting, I need to talk to this twin. Before I let Lona meet her I need to make sure her motives are okay.

Lona: yeah I know, it's crazy. But I am returning back home tomorrow. I don't even want to stay

in this house .

Me: so you're coming back?

Lona: yes, isn't that what you wanted?

Me: it is, and i am very happy. Can't wait to see you beautiful.

Lona: see you then, I have to pack.

Me: okay, bye.

Lona: bye.

I smiled dropping the call. She sent me a selfie of her looking ever so beautiful. I bit my lip wishing she was next to me so I can kiss the fuck out of her. I texted her replying to the selfie.

Me:

damn! [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ] the
things I would do if you were near.

It had one tick so I knew she was offline. I posted her selfie with the caption.

"wife. [OBJ] [OBJ] " and I knew the hoes would start crying about who she is, so I turned off my mobile data. I looked for my Range Rover keys and drove to my uncle's house. When I was there, he answered the door shocking me because usually Fifi answers.

me: ek moet met tannie Fifi praat. (I need to talk to aunt Fifi)

Ghost: wat gaan aan? (What's going on?)

Me: niks groot nie. Ek wil meer weet oor Sisipho. (Nothing major. I want to know more about Sisipho)

Ghost: sy is in ons kamer (she is in our room)

we walked together there, and I saw aunt Fifi looking very sick on the bed. I was worried

because she is never the sick type. She usually falls sick like once a year.

Me: are you okay? *worried*

Fifi: yes *smiles* I will be fine just a minor flu.

I could sense she was lying because she looked at Ghost and they both had sad faces on them.

Me: I know you're lying but it won't press on it. I need to know more about Sisipho.

Fifi: why?

Me: I just found out she is Lona's mother and everyone in that family thinks she's dead. But she's not dead, I saw her the other day in the yard.

Fifi: she's coming over for lunch tomorrow.
That's the only time she has left in Cape Town.

Me: where does she live?

Fifi: she lives in London permanently.

Me: in London? What was she doing here then?

Fifi: she was here on a business trip. And she missed me so she came to visit me. Nothing spectacular.

Me: I will be there for the lunch tomorrow.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I packed my belongings because I wanted to get the hell out of here. I know she wants me out so I will grant her wish. I know my brothers will not want me to go but I am tired of fighting back and forth with their mother.

King: what are you doing?

Me: packing. I am leaving tomorrow. You can't stop me, I have already booked my flight.

King: we want you to stay though.

Me: I don't want to. Not after I heard that bitch isn't my mother.

King: but she is my mother and you should respect her.

Me: sorry.

King: maybe it is best you go to Cape Town to get some break then in June you will spend the holidays over here to mend issues with her. All you need is time.

Me: yes. Thank you for understanding .

King: you leave at night or early in the morning?

Me: early in the morning tomorrow. You will drive me there right?

King: yes. Muller might be there as well or he

will be busy comforting mom.

Me: is she still crying?

I am the weak one but she is still crying? OK.

King: this is a hard situation for her and the secret being exposed is opening old wounds for her.

Me: mhh.

King: *chuckles* when did you get this mean?

Me: ever since I started hanging out with Xav...
Cardo.

I quickly changed my sentence because I forgot I haven't told them I am hanging out with Xavier.
I haven't even told them I am dating Xavier.

King: what?

Me: ever since I started hanging out with Cardo.

He nodded but I felt like he knew I was lying and he wasn't going to say much about it. He left my room without saying a word and I was so scared I feel like I am busted! I packed my stuff quickly and paced up and down the room thinking of a lie to say when they ask me about it. My phone rang, and it was Xavier. He must miss me to call me twice a day and it hasn't even been 3pm yet.

Me: baby?

Xavier: you should answer the phone like that to me every time I call.

Me: *chuckles* someone misses me a lot.

Xavier: more than you can imagine.

Me: I will be there before you know it. My flight is in the morning.

Xavier: Fifi wants to have lunch with you.

Me: really? *excited* can't wait.

Xavier: I know you can't. Baby?

Me: mhh mhh?

Xavier: I love you.

Me: what?

I was very shocked. We haven't been dating for that long and already he says "I love you" maybe it's because of the distance or maybe he was saying it to someone else? I sound so stupid because I can not believe a guy like Xavier really loves a girl like me.

Xavier: I want you to know I love you, and I would never hurt you, intentionally. Without you,

I wouldn't survive. Trust me. You're the right in all my wrongs, losing you will be losing my heart. I wouldn't be the same. I would go back to the monster I was before you were the light in the darkness that consumed my life.

Right now I was getting emotional and worried that he was going to die. He never expresses his emotions and when he told me this it really touched my heart.

Me: baby, what's going on? Are you okay?
Please don't do anything that will put your life at risk.

Xavier: everything is okay.

Me: you promise?

He got quiet, and breathed. I was scared that he was in danger. My heart started beating fast.

Me: Xavier, you're scaring me

Xavier: I promise. Everything is okay.

Me: I hope so

Xavier: I have to go now, I will call you at night.

Me: okay, and Zay?

Xavier: yeah?

Me: you'll never lose me. I love you too.

Xavier: *chuckles* bye.

Me: bye.

We both hung up and I wished he was next to me so I could kiss him because I really do love him. I know for a guy like him to lose all his hoes for me, and to go such a long time without sex and girls. He is sacrificing a lot for me because a lot of girls are willing to jump at the opportunity to have him, yet he... he chose me! I

wiped my tears and smiled at myself in the mirror.

Me: I am in love.

.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

.

Zee sat on the couch and I smiled at her. She is the reason my plan is actually working!

Me: we need to send the pictures to other people incase he kills the both of us.

Zee: does he know he was drugged?

Me: I don't think so, he thinks we really had sex and after the first round we went raw.

Zee: after you pin the pregnancy on him, what if he wants you to abort?

Me: I need to go away for a while and come back when I am 5 months pregnant and it will be hard for me to abort. It will be illegal.

Zee: sorry to burst your bubble but... he doesn't care about the law.

Me: she will. And when she cares. He will care too.

Zee: what about Patrick?

Me: I will tell him to find another bitch. I already am set for life.

I smiled rubbing my growing baby bump. This baby is going to take me to places.

~~

It was the next day and after my morning routine I changed into my pink crop top with blue jeans and light brown fake no sleeve fur. I wore my Fenty Puma white sneakers. I flat ironed my weave so it can be straight. I smiled thinking about how all of this is going in my favour. I ate some breakfast while scrolling through my WhatsApp. My whole mood changed when I saw the picture he posted of her. I rolled my eyes, when he could have all of this. He still wants a boring bitch like her who can't even go a day without crying her ugly face off. She doesn't deserve him, she doesn't even deserve life because she's always complains about how it doesn't go in her favour. Life isn't fair and she should get used to it. Me on the other hand, life has always been unfair to me and I deserve this break! I made a decision to drop out of Varsity even though I have good grades but I know it will not take me anywhere. I don't even like the course I am in, and I feel like

Xavier will take care of me, and the baby. In anger I took my purse and left. The post really ruined my mood. I took a screenshot and sent it to Zee.

Me: this bitch has him whipped, he never posts his hoes.

Zee OBJ : don't worry, after all of this. He will be yours!

I smiled because she always had good words. I can't believe I didn't like her at first, she is a great girl! And an amazing friend. I didn't want to tell her Xavier might kill her after he finds out she has the pictures. For safety purposes I have to get the photos printed out so I can threaten him better. I met up with Partick at Tasha's. He looked paranoid meeting up with me in public because we always meet in hotels or my apartment. After I sat down, he glared at me. I

smiled, I am finally going to be free from this ugly old man!

Me: It's over.

Pat: what?

Me: I have better things to do now, and I feel like our deal is pulling me down. So it's over.

Pat: don't fuck with me, Kayla.

Me: goodbye, Patrick.

I stood up and walked away from him, when I was a bit far from him, I smiled and when I was about to call an Uber. He appeared and strangled me, he didn't care about a few people staring at us.

Pat: you leave when I say you leave, stupid bitch.

I looked at him in fear, I nodded quickly just so he doesn't kill me.

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I smiled at my baby looking fly as ever waiting for me at the airport. He was wearing a black t-shirt with a black bomber baseball jacket with black jeans, he had on a rolled up wool beanie and black sneakers. I stood there just admiring my man, after a while he noticed me and had the best smile on his face. I chuckled pulling my two heavy bags towards him. He licked his lips, and when I finally close to him, he kissed me. His hands landed on my ass, it wasn't the

pervert ass-grabbing kiss. His hands just laid there not moving while kissing me, I think he wanted to see how much I trusted him. And I really did, but I wasn't ready for sex yet. So I removed his hands smoothly by holding his hands, and he pulled away and pecked my lips.

Xavier: let's get you to my house.

Me: I need to get home first, put my luggage there.

Xavier: why don't you keep your bags over at my house, and we go to Fifi's lunch first?

Me: I look like a mess, and you want me to have lunch with her looking like this?

Xavier: you look beautiful. *pecks her lips*

Me: can't I shower again and change my outfit?

Xavier: no, you look beautiful.

Me: of course you would think like that *laughs*

~~

We arrived in their house, I can't believe he really didn't let me change. I thought he would let me have some time with him to at least lay up with him and be lovey dovey but I guess Fifi really wanted me to come over for lunch. I heard music playing outside the backyard.

Me: it's a party and you let me come here looking like this! ? Look at all those beautiful people, Xavier. You're being unfair.

Xavier: *chuckles* you're overreacting, you look more beautiful than those people.

Me: what is up with you being so sweet today?

Xavier: I missed you, you know that.

I smiled and brushed his cheek. He looked better now. He was really recovering from the attack. He opened the door for me, and the

lunch table had 3 other ladies there. They all looked sophisticated and here I looked like I just came from a hood party and I didn't take a shower.

Xavier: here she is.

They all turned and looked at me, I saw a woman who looked exactly like Isipho. I just felt dizzy, and everything became blurry then I was on the floor.

.

.

.

. [02/20, 06:05] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 26

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I quickly held her, I was now worried thinking maybe this is a big mistake. I shouldn't have surprised her like this. I should've met up with Sisipho then arranged a meeting for her and Lona, but Sisipho is leaving tomorrow and I want Lona to meet her biological mother. Lona's eyes were still open but it's like she wasn't here. She stared at Sisipho, I was getting worried.

Sisipho: is she okay?

I looked at her, it's weird how much they look

alike, her and Mrs Daniel

Fifi: maybe I should call an ambulance?

Me: that won't be necessary. She just collapsed, I think it has something with her anxiety issues. Just give her space and water.

They gave me a glass of water and I made my hand wet, then sprinkled a bit of water on her to wake her up and focus on me. And she did, when she looked at me I was a bit relieved she was okay and not crazy.

Lona: she is alive.

Me: yes.

Lona: you knew!?

Me: calm down. We'll talk about this later.

Lona: no, we will talk about it now! You have

been talking on the phone with me and you didn't bother to tell me you know her!

Me: Lelona I don't want us to argue in front of your mother and my aunt.

Sisipho: her mother?

Me: this is Lelona-

Lona: I'm your daughter.

Then there was an awkward silent break. Fifi and the other women excused themselves.

Me: will you be okay?

She nodded, I could see Sisipho had tears in her eyes. I left them together to talk they needed to talk alone.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I looked at her, it was weird how much she looked like my mom. It's even more weirder because she's my mom. And Isipho is my stepmother and auntie in one.

Me: how are you still alive?

Sisipho: the guy said I was shot and attacked in my house. After they thought I was dead, they quickly operated to save you. But luckily by the grace of God I survived. It's a long story.

Me: and you left me here? Where have you been all this time? Have you no shame buying weaves and expensive clothes not knowing what your child is eating? *cries*

Sisipho: I can explain...

Me: really? Explain what? How you survived and left me? How you lived a luxurious life while I was an enemy to a woman I did nothing to!? Explain, I would really love to hear your explanation!

Sisipho: let's sit down.

Me: I am okay with standing.

Sisipho: I know Isipho tried to kill me, it wasn't safe for me to return for you. I couldn't find you. I never saw you until the today.

Me: wow! So you didn't care that she would've tried to kill me?

Sisipho: I knew your father would not let that happen. *smiles* he was always excited about this pregnancy. His only girl.

Me: he let a lot of things happen. He is always on the road and I was left to defend myself. From the constant emotional abuse, and the

tons of house chores.

Sisipho: I am sorry, if I knew this would've happened I would've come back for you. And looked harder I thought your father would protect you from her

Me: mxm. You know after I found out I wasn't her daughter, like days ago. I felt the hurt of not being wanted and loved. I always felt that, and you. You have just brought the feeling back, and made it worse.

I stormed away in anger with tears on my face. Who would let people think they're dead while they live a luxurious life? She is just as evil as Isipho. Xavier saw me crying and I could see he didn't not like me being a crybaby but I didn't care. And I am still angry at him. I ordered an Uber and walked out of the house with him calling my name behind me.

Xavier: Lelona! Wait!

He grabbed my hand, and I wanted to slap him so bad but I held myself back.

Me: what!? Want to keep something else from me? Leave me alone Xavier.

Xavier: I just found out about this I swear.

Me: when did you find out, Rellik?

Xavier: come on, you're overreacting.

Me: what?! Wow. Well since I am overreacting I am going to go to my home to calm down

Xavier: get in the car and I will take you there.

Me: I have an Uber on the way.

Xavier: cancel it, Lelona.

Me: no, Rellik! I need space, even from you. You're just as bad as them, and I thought I could

trust you. I need to calm down *angry*

Xavier: get in the fucking car, don't make me drag you there Lelona. You are really testing my patience.

Me: mxm.

The Uber car came and I quickly went to it and got in the car, I know how crazy Xavier is he would really drag me to his car because he loves controlling everything. He doesn't understand the term "I need space". I got a text from him saying he will be waiting for my at my brothers' house. I wanted to be alone and he doesn't understand that.

Me: can you please take me to the beach?

He nodded and continued driving. I turned off my phone and put it in my pocket. I was really

upset about how she didn't even care about me to sneak up and check up on me. Not even here in Cape Town, she visited Fifi for lunch but can't even look for me. Wow, what type of mother do I have!? I felt the car stop, and I noticed we were in the beach. I jumped out and thanked the driver is already paid via bank details on the app. It was quite chilly but I didn't mind. I want some quiet time just walking around the beach to take some time thinking about how messed up my life is. I wish I was in a dream and I could just wake up.

~~

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I paced up and down the road. I was outside her brothers' house for 3 hours and still she wasn't back yet. The time was stressing me, I was worried something happened to her. Maybe the

Uber driver took her and they were going to kidnap her to manipulate and control me, because I am willing to do anything to make sure my baby is safe. I called the guys to help me look everywhere in Cape Town.

Scrappy: next time buy her a bracelet or something to put a tracker on it. It won't be too hard to find her.

Me: if she is not safe wherever she is, I am killing everyone that touched her. *angry*

Scrappy passed the joint over to me so I can calm down and not do anything stupid. OG, Scrappy, JR, Shooter, and Wiz all couldn't find her and Cardo was still not back from his side of searching. If that nigga is busy with hoes wherever he is, and my baby isn't found yet. I will make him hate me. I saw his car from a far, then he pulled up close to us. Doors opened,

and I was relieved to see Lona getting out the car too. She was still in one piece and she didn't look like she had bruises on her. I leaned on my car door looking at her. She waved at the gents and opened the small gate of the yard.

Me: see you laaities

I rushed to the gate before she could lock it. I know she was still angry. The gents drove off and we walked in with me and Lona.

Me: what the fuck is your problem!? *shouts*

I didn't want to shout at her during the guys because I know she will have a problem about that.

Lona: don't shout at me. I am not a child

Me: I shouldn't be treating you like one but you're acting like one!

Lona: I need privacy! Is that too much to ask for!? I want to cry alone, I want to think alone. I just want to be alone. Please *sniffs*

I walked closer to her and kissed her forehead then walked out. If she knew the worry I had when I thought something happened to her, she wouldn't want to be alone. She would think about the time I took to look for her around the whole Cape Town, and for her to only appear when she wants to. When I got inside the car, I slammed the door in anger. I know she is hurting but I am getting frustrated with her being so stubborn. What if something happened to her when she was nowhere to be found. I will never stop worrying about her.

.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

.

I dragged my big bags in my room back home. After the horrible incident with Patrick luckily people stopped him from killing me with his grip, I decided to return to King Williams Town because Xavier will be looking for me, and he will want to kill me; and I can't let the plan be ruined. I could see my brother wasn't here and my drunkard father. The house was a mess that I knew I had to clean before I could relax, because the dirt was starting to create a horrible smell. I need to visit a friend of mine later on to keep the pictures for me and if something happens to me, I want her to sent

them to the address I will give to her. I don't trust Zikhona.

Me: baby, mommy will make a perfect life for you. Future daddy will spoil you rotten.

Pa: wat!? Kayla, is jy swanger! ? (What!? Kayla, are you pregnant! ?)

I looked back and I saw my father looking so dirty.

Me: pa, hy is 'n ryk man! (Dad, he is a rich man)

Pa: maak die baba dood! (Kill that baby)

Me: nie my baba nie! (Not my baby!)

Pa: met watter geld sal jy die baba sorg? (With what money will you take care for the baby?)

Me: ek het vir jou gesê hy is 'n ryk man. (I told you he is a rich man)

Pa: hy sal nooit haar verlaat nie. Ek ken stories soos hierdie. Loos hom, maak die baba dood en kry 'n opvoeding. 'n ander man sal deur kom, prinses. Ek belowe jou. (He will never leave her. I know stories like this. Leave him and kill the baby and get an education. Another man will come by, princess. I promise you.)

What he said came in one ear and left with the other. I don't want another man, I want the leader Rellik. And I have worked way too hard to give in now. I had a new cheaper phone because I couldn't risk Rellik finding out where I am. After I give the pictures to my friend I will go elsewhere so he doesn't find me quickly.

.

.

-- SISIPHO'S POV --

.

.

I wiped my tears as the memories all came back. I was very wrong to have slept with my sister's husband and I will probably never make it better because I have a baby by him. I can't help who I fell in love with. I really loved him, and I could see how jealous she was because he was starting to fall in love with me too. I know she planned for me to get killed because why would people break in my house just to beat me up and shot me? That doesn't make any sense at all. After I put the peices in together I was scared to return home, because she would've planned for me to get killed again. I owe my life to that paramedic that told them I was dead. Even though he sold me off. What happened that day is still so clear to me.

`` FLASHBACK ``

I had to act dead in order for the men, that were sent to kill me, to leave me alone. I called the hospital and told I was shot and very scared. When they arrived, the neighborhood was very full with people wondering where the gunshot came from. I looked around and my neighbours were being pulled back by policemen. When the ambulance door closed that's when I started blabbing to save my life and my baby's life.

Me: please! You have to get me away, she will send more people to kill me. You have to save my baby.

Paramedic: ma'am you need to calm down, the baby maybe in danger. Your stress levels need to be low.

Me: she tried to kill me! I can not calm down! You have to help me please, think about my baby! Please.

It was only the two of us in the back of the ambulance. He was giving me the drip and oxygen mask to calm down but all I could think of about was how I was going to save my baby from Isipho, my very evil twin sister.

Paramedic: they shot your stomach luckily, seems like the attacker wasn't well trained he can't aim properly. You can hold on to the pain while we save the baby?

Me: no! It's unbearable. *cries painfully* my baby can't die.

Paramedic: we're almost there. Don't breathe.

Me: what?

He covered my eyes making me looking dead then he covered me. I played along because I wanted the baby to live. I heard plenty of people talking and. He kept saying to people I was

dead. He snuck me in an operating room and quickly got a doctor for me. The pain was unbearable, I thought I was going to die, luckily he found one.

Paramedic: this is doctor Norman.

Doc: I am not even a doctor yet. Let's see how can we help her.

Even in pain, I was crying and everything until I was became weak and passed out. When I woke up I was in a room I didn't recognize but I had the hospital machines next to me but the room didn't look like a hospital room.

Paramedic: I am Richard.

Me: where is my baby?

Paramedic: I am sorry-

Me: please don't tell me she is dead *crying*
Isipho killed my baby, her jealousy has ruined my life. I didn't force her husband to sleep with me. What is happening in my life, God please intervene. I have given up. *sobs*

Richard: wait wait, the baby is okay. But I was forced to put in the baby details at the hospital and. ..

Me: and what!?

Richard: another nurse apparently knew your family and she recognised your name on the baby details. The family took the child.

Me: no! *screams* I have to take my baby, no please. I have too!

Richard: you're going to get killed again. This is Mthatha you will easily die. Calm down, and I will find the baby for you. You will fly to Jozi, stay with my good friend for a while until I go to Jozi too with your baby.

Me: thank you so much!

.

.

`` FLASHBACK OVER ``

I trusted Richard but he was selling me off to his friend in Jozi, I always believed he would bring my baby back. I ran away and went back to Mthatha when I got to my sister's house. They moved and nobody knew where. I didn't even bother going to my house. I looked for Richard and he also was no where to be found. That's when I felt life had given up on me. I moved to Cape Town with the little money I had, then there I worked plenty of jobs to survive. I ended up meeting a beautiful man, we got married and permanently moved to London. Unfortunately after my baby. I couldn't have other children. There wasn't a day that went by I didn't think of her. I just wish she would see it through my eyes that i am not lying i couldn't

save her because I didn't know where she was!

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

Me: Kurt, find both of those bitches. I want them dead. I better have an answer by tomorrow!

The door bell rang plenty of times. I was even annoyed. I was in my basketball shorts with no t-shirt. I opened the door in anger

Me: wat!? (What!?)

I was shocked to find Lona looking at me with

the saddest face ever. I didn't like my baby being this sad. I opened my arms and she hugged me crying her eyes out. I just brushed her back comforting her.

Lona: I just wish she cared enough to look for me.

Me: did you let her explain, baby?

Lona: no I was too angry to even listen to her talk. She claims Isipho wanted her dead. That's not an excuse to not be in your child's life! Isipho could've killed me.

Me: well one thing you need to know now. She will never harm you while I am still alive.

Lona: thank you baby.

She reached up and kissed me, I smiled when she pulled my lip.

~~

I looked at her sleeping peacefully. It amazes me every time when I look at her beauty. And I know I won't lose her to Kayla I do not care even if I have kill Kayla and every minion she uses, she won't jeopardise the relationship I worked fucking hard to gain. Lona is one of a kind and without her, I become cold. I could see she was having a bad dream because she was whimpering and moving a lot. I held her closely and tight, her eyes shot open in fear. I brushed the hair out of her face

Me: you're okay?

Lona: just a bad dream.

Me: she leaves tomorrow.

Lona: who?

Me: Sisipho, this is the only chance you'll get with her because she's going back to London.

Don't you want to go say goodbye to her?

Lona: I don't need to, she doesn't say goodbye she just leaves. *frowns*

Me: can you give her a little break baby. This is the only time you have with her, use it wisely. Life is too short. We can go to the goodbye breakfast event aunt Fifi is hosting for her.

Lona: when I feel uncomfortable I can go back to my brothers' house?

Me: yes.

Lona: then I guess we will be there.

[02/20, 06:06] Ron: STER ~

INSERT 27

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

It was the next morning and we arrived at the house. I could sense she was nervous, so I held her hand and brushed it softly.

Me: when you get uncomfortable we can go.

Lona: thank you *smiles*

We walked inside the house and entered the dining room. And the ladies looked at us. They were still not eating yet.

Fifi: I guess I am a godmother then *smiles*

Sisipho: hey Lelona

Lona: hey. Can we talk?

Me: we'll give you guys privacy.

Me and tannie Fifi went outside in the garden I decided it was time to ask her about her "flu"

Me: what were you sick with the other day?

Fifi: just a minor stomach bug

Me: what?

Fifi: I promise it is nothing major.

Me: you said it was a flu the other day. What is really going on?

Fifi: Xavier...

Me: I deserve to know...

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I looked at her, she sat down and smiled

But my face remained still. I still felt the hurt of her not coming to my rescue.

Me: I want to know what happened exactly.

Sisipho: I had to act dead in order to save you and when I tried to return back for you, my sister no longer lived in Mthatha.

Me: we moved to King Williams Town. I never even knew we lived in Mthatha before.

Sisipho: then I moved to Cape Town for a better life and I ended getting married then I moved to London permanently

I felt like she wasn't going into the full details so I let her just tell me that summary. But I am tired of being so angry at her. I needed a better mom all my life and here she is but I need to bond with her more. Life is too short I can't lose

her again.

Me: I am happy you're still alive even though I am still angry, but I will be okay. Do you have to go today?

Sisipho: yes but I will return in June I want you to meet my husband. *smiles* I would really love for us to build a relationship.

Me: me too. *smiles*

I started telling her about my childhood and the favorite things I love doing. I also told her about my amazing brothers who always make sure I am sorted and no one messes with me.

Sisipho: and the special boy?

Me: *blushes* that's Xavier.

Sisipho: he looks... interesting.

Me: *laughs* I was also scared of him the first time we met.

Sisipho: he cares for you I can see that. But with his lifestyle will you be able to stay with him?

Me: he promised no more females.

Sisipho: I meant the illegal killings and dealings.

Me: I am not involved so I will be safe.

Sisipho: I hope so, I just want you safe.

Me: and I am, with him

Then they came back. I smiled at his auntie who was looking so cute. I could see Xavier wasn't happy though. He sat down next to me and kissed my cheek. I smiled brushing his healing face.

Me: what's wrong?

Xavier: tannie Fifi is sick but she won't tell me what's exactly wrong with her.

Me: give her time. She will .

~~

We dropped her off at the airport, I hugged her and I wiped her tears. I could see where I got my crybaby tendencies from.

Me: see you in June.

Sisipho: can't wait.

We hugged each other tightly for a long time I ended up crying myself. I don't want her to go, but I understand she has to go. After that she took her bags and left. I waved at her and walked to our car.

Xavier: see it wasn't bad?

Me: she's so sweet the total opposite of Isipho.

Xavier: speaking of that bitch, I don't want her next to you.

Me: Xavier-

Xavier: if she has the guts to try and murder her twin sister it shows me she can hurt you too.

He must think it's that easy. I haven't even told my brothers their mother is a evil conniving bitch

~~

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.
. .
.

I walked the distance to my friend's house. She lived far from my house but I had no other choice but to walk. When I finally arrived I was

sweating due to the sun that was having no mercy on me.

Me: SIBA ! *shouts*

I shouted outside the gate because I was scared of dogs. She appeared and squealed when she saw me. I smiled because I actually missed her. When we went inside she offered me a drink I could hear the smell like weed all over the house when I drank the juice I could taste it had alcohol. I quickly stopped drinking.

Me: there's alcohol in here.

Siba: just like how your drinks. *smiles*

me: I can't. I am pregnant.

Siba: *laughs* nice joke. Why are you here?

Me: I am serious and I need your help.

Siba: I am not a babysitter.

Me: not like that. I have the money for you to print the pictures out, I want you to keep them and if something happens to me send them to the address I will give to you.

Siba: I don't want any trouble. What are these pictures?

Me: a man cheating on his very important woman. Look do this and I will repay you with a lot of money when I return.

Siba: where are you going now?

Me: probably Bloemfontein or PE I don't know yet.

Siba: how will I know when to send the pictures?

Me: I will send a message everyday to ensure you I am okay, and if I don't then you can send the pictures. If I don't send a message in a day do not call me, just go to the post office and

send them please.

Siba: all the money I need for all of this is in here?

Me: yes

Siba: you owe me big time.

Me: sister! From another mister! *grins* you know I will take care of you.

After chatting for a while I decided it was time for me to go. I walked back home and I took my belongings again. I will move to Jozi I lied to Siba just in case Rellik finds her and she doesn't rat me out. Luckily my dad wasn't here and my brother wasn't back yet. He was probably in the shops just chilling with his friends. I took my stuff and took a taxi to town. There I went to Shoprite to buy a bus ticket. Luckily I had 2 hours before the bus with leave. I quickly shopped for food to eat along the way. I didn't

take all of my luggage just one suitcase and it was easier for me to transport with it. After paying for my food, I walked to the bus station even though I was so tired. I knew this will be worth it in the end. When I arrived at the bus station I sat on the tiny chairs and smiled fantasizing about the luxurious life I will live in a few months. all i have to do is wait.

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

Lona said she wanted some alone time at her home so I decided to go chill with Scrappy at his house.

Scrappy: I say let her go. This is something Lona will never get over. That's her aunt and you killing her, it will cause a huge gap in your relationship

I sent a few guys over to Eastern Cape to deal with her tannie. She said she wasn't scared of me, so I did something to her. Now we'll see where her big mouth will take her. What Scrappy was saying was making a lot of sense. But the way that bitch disrespected me, I want her dealt with.

Me: I want her to suffer maybe for a few weeks.

Scrappy: you're playing with fire. You forget she is also Muller & King's aunt.

Me: I am not scared of them. *shrugs*

Scrappy: it will start unnecessary bullshit think with your head for once and not your trigger

ready hands.

Me: fuck off. I will let her off the hook, if she snitches and I end up in jail, I want her dead.

Scrappy: that I agree with and I can help you with it.

~~

After the game we watched I got up and did our handshake.

Scrappy: leaving already?

Me: I need to check on my wife. I think she's cooled down right now.

Scrappy: *chuckles* fede fede poi (sharp sharp boy)

I walked myself out, when I got in my car I called Lona to check if she was still okay. She

answered on the 4th ring.

Lona: baby?

Me: you're good?

Lona: *chuckles* yes. Want to come over ?

Me: yes. I will be there in few minutes. Should I bring you something?

Lona: no. I have everything here, I went grocery shopping today.

Me: okay, open the gate in the meantime I will be there in no time.

Lona: okay, bye.

I hung up the call and sped off to her home. In just a few minutes I was there. The gate opened and I drove inside the yard. When I got out the car, I saw her standing on the door with it wide open. She was wearing a maroon velvet Adidas

tracksuit. I walked over to her fixing my red sweatpants which I wore with a white tank top and white Nike slides.

Me: somebody missed you. Waiting on the door, looking beautiful as always

Lona: *blushes* thank you, baby.

She kissed me and we walked inside. I kept looking at her ass I swear it was so big and sexy, I wanted to touch it. I knew I couldn't because it will make her uncomfortable.

Lona: I was actually watching a movie before you called.

Me: you always watching those girly kak (shit)

Lona: don't judge me. *laughs*

When I was about to respond to her I got a call from K9.

Me: K9

K9: yo, iza kule mbhadla ihost'wa nguShooter
(come to this party Shooter is hosting)

Me: nah, I'll skip it. I'm hanging with my wife.

Lona playfully hit me smiling. I could see she was blushing.

K9: didn't think she was the controlling type.
Makaze naye (she should come too)

Me: *chuckles* don't disrespect my girl boy.

K9: harde bhuda (sorry bro) *laughs*

Me: baby?

Lona: yes?

Me: Shooter is hosting a party. You wanna go?

She looked at me, and thought for a while. She nodded slowly. I smiled and pecked her lips.

Me: when does the party start?

K9: ndizoku'touch'a xa iqalile. (I will contact you when it has started.)

Me: fede.

Then I hung up. She went to the kitchen and came back with her dry fruit.

Lona: want to play some Fifa?

Me: you play?

Lona: duhh but King doesn't want me to touch his stuff *smiles*

Me: okay, let's play

She put in the game and I was impressed that she wasn't all girly girly like the girls I know. We played and and won the first time because I let her win, then I started winning and she kept trying to make me distracted by kissing me. And I was enjoying it.

Me: you're not playing fair *chuckles*

Lona: I am not winning *smiles*

We played again and this time she won fair and square.

Lona: yes!

She got us and starting crazy dances all

laughing and happy. I laughed at her being goofy. I pulled her to my lap and stared at her because I am still accepting how lucky I am to get someone this special. My phone rang in between our stare down

Lona: answer your phone.

Me: *smiles* it can wait.

I gently brushed my thumb on her lips while holding her chin. She started breathing heavy making me smirk. My phone rang again, frustrated I answered in anger without looking at the caller ID.

Me: what!?

Kurt: I found Zikhona. ...

Me: take her go the warehouse. I will deal with it

tomorrow.

I hung up and looked at Lona who I knew wanted to know what the call was about but I couldn't let her about the night with Kayla. I need answers from Zikhona first.

Me: work stuff and I'm not involving you in my work.

Lona: you're just like my brothers.

~~

K9 texted me that the party started and I was waiting for Lona to finish up changing her clothes so I can go change mine. She came down the stairs wearing a short white skirt with a grey shirt tucked in and a white short blazer with white boot heels and a black purse.

Me: hell no.

Lona: what?

Me: you're not wearing that.

Lona: why not? It's cute.

Me: too cute and short. I should be the only one seeing you in that.

Lona: Xavier I am not changing because you said so, let's go.

Me: we're not going anywhere until you change.

Lona: Xavier! *whines*

Me: you can whine all. You want. I'm serious.

Lona: mxm

She walked up the stairs folding her arms. I smiled at her being so adorable

Me: I love you too, baby.

I had to wait another hour and she came down again and this time she was wearing a pink long dress that was tight with her pink sneakers.

Me: that's better.

She rolled her eyes. I pulled her closer and started giving her kisses all over her face and she started laughing. Then I gave her a real kiss.

Me: damn.

I said brushing her ass it was so big, I wanted to say she should go change but I knew she would curse the fuck out of me.

Lona: *blushes* let's just go.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

We drove to the party in his Lamborghini. I knew we were very late well it's a house party I doubt anyone is late. He had changed into a blue silk shirt that was unbuttoned revealing all his body and tattoos with black jeans and blue sneakers. I didn't even have the energy to tell him to change because that's honestly childish to me, and tomorrow I will have a talk with him to let him know he can not control me like I am a toy. We finally were in the party I could see it was packed. He got out and opened the door for me.

Me: there's a lot of people

Xavier: don't worry. I'll be here.

We went inside immediately I felt the loud music in my chest. He kept greeting a lot of people giving them manly hugs, and each time he would introduce me to them. Finally we went to the backyard and I saw Cardo and the others. I was quite relieved when I saw him because I knew I wouldn't be lonely. He greeted everyone and I waved at them smiling.

Scrappy: let me get Nella I have a feeling they're going to get along just fine

~~

I was with Nella and her friends Vicki and Nazo they were okay but I didn't trust them yet because I trusted Kayla for a long time and she betrayed me.

Vicki: so Lona you're Rellik's main? *chuckles*

The way she asked that question I felt the shade in it.

Me: main ?

Nazo: he has a lot of girls. People know that.

Me: I am his only girl.

They started laughing and Nella just rolled her eyes. .

Nella: if you guys are going to be bitchy you can just shut up.

Vicki: it was just a joke *laughs*

Nella: not funny. Let's go get you a drink Lona.

We both stood up and went to the kitchen.
There was loads of alcohol to choose from. I
don't drink though.

Me: thanks for what you did there.

Nella: no problem, girl you're too classy if she
would've asked a question like that about
Scrappy I would've mopped the floor with her
face.

Me: *laughs* I don't like fighting.

Nella: you don't drink too?

Me: yeah.

Nella: let's just get light stuff just a can of
strongbow

Me: I don't know

Nella: it won't do anything and it's nice.

She opened the can for me, I took a small sip

and it really was nice it tasted like a soda drink.
I smiled at her. She laughed and opened her own can.

Nella: how long have you been dating Rellik?

Me: a few days.

Nella: I like you, you're good for him. Unlike those hood rats he dated. You have class.

Me: thank you *smiles* I like you too

She took my hand and we went to the dance floor. We started dancing with the cans in our hands. The song changed to Mgani wam by Babes Wodumo. We started dancing and laughing at how crazy we look. Then I felt someone grab my ass. I turned around angry

Me: what the hell! ?

It was a drunk guy I didn't know. Nella looked at the guy angrily.

Nella: what did he do?

Me: he fucking grabbed my ass like what the hell bruh.

Nella: he's fucking drunk! Let's go before I do something that will make me end up in jail.

She pulled me outside and I was still angry because that had no right to grab my ass like that. We sat where we left Vicki and Nazo but they weren't there. I finished up my drink and I craved for another can

Nella: I am sorry, i know how drunk guys get. Don't let him ruin your night.

Me: it's okay. I want another can though this is nice.

Nella: i know right! *laughs* but don't have too much. Your limit should be 4 or 5

She walked away and I called Xavier to ask him where he is. Because I couldn't see him

Xavier: baby, we went to get more booze we'll be right back

me: okay .

Xavier: everything's okay?

Me: yes. Everything's perfect.

I know how Xavier overreacts so I think it's best I don't tell him about the situation because the guy was really drunk.

.

.

.

.

[OBJ] BOOKERS MEET THE TWINS [OBJ]

[02/20, 06:07] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~
INSERT 28

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

Nella came with a carry pack of Strongbow. It was the strawberry flavour. It felt weird partying with Nella because I used to see Scrappy kiss up on Kayla.

Nella: do you know where the gents went?

Me: they went to get more booze

Nella: they better not get too drunk.

Me: they're too hard to handle when they're drunk?

Nella: *laughs* very. They get a bigger ego thinking they're the shit.

Me: *laughs* and they already have big egos when they're sober.

She gave me another can and I opened it on my own this time and started drinking.

Me: how long have you and Scrappy been dating?

Nella: we have been dating for about 3 years now.

Me: what!? *smiles*

Nella: I know. But it's been a lot of breakups and makeups

Me: so many years. You guys are practically married

Nella: and we just moved in together.

Me: wow. Congratulations.

Nella: thank you. Now all that I am waiting for is a ring.

Me: I am sure it is coming!

We both smiled at each other and Midnight Starring starting playing and she squealed. I giggled.

Nella: this is my song we have to go to the dance floor again.

Me: what if that guy tries another thing?

Nella: then this time I will crush his balls

I laughed so hard started getting tears. She was so serious, and that's what made it more funnier. We stood up with the carry pack, and I finished up the can, then took another one. No wonder people are addicted to alcohol this stuff is amazing.

Nella: don't rush it. You will get drunk quickly.

Me: it tastes good.

Nella: I know, the first time is amazing. You should taste vodka. That shit is so strong and it tastes bad but oddly I like it.

Me: I want to taste it.

Nella: Xavier would kill me. *laughs*

Me: come on, he won't know. It will be nice to try it.

She took my hand and walked me towards the alcohol section. Then she took the Sky Vodka bottle. She poured a little on the tot glasses.

Nella: since it's your first time you're only taking 1

Me: *smiles* no problem with that.

I took it and instantly regretted it. It tasted horrible. I took my tongue out in disgust.

Nella: I know. It's horrible *laughs*

Then she gulped down 3 shots back to back. I looked at her shocked.

Nella: it's been a while since I did that *clears throat*

me: scrappy is the controlling type too?

Nella: girl! It's frustrating me so much because it's like he doesn't trust me! But since I love him, I deal with it.

Me: Rellik controlled me today about what I wear, I didn't like it one bit.

I could feel the alcohol raising up because I was talking a lot. We started bonding about how Scrappy and Xavier are like the same person!

Nella: and he hates it when I call him Scrappy

Me: Nella! Rellik gets so angry and I don't know why. *laughs*

Nella: apparently to Scrappy it makes it doesn't make it personal, he says it's like we share nothing and I am talking to him in the streets. To him, me calling him by his real name is special to him because no one besides me and

his family call him by his real name.

Me: that's stupid it's just a name.

Nella: I said the same thing! *laughs* we are like one person.

We started talking again, then we decided to exchange numbers. Our bonding session was interrupted by a dude who kept tapping my shoulder. This is getting annoying. I am not even that hot! I turned around annoyed, it was 2 guys and the other one was checking Nella out.

Nella: we're taken.

?: we just wanted to say-

Nella: look, you're cute okay?

The guys smirked and looked so happy.

Nella: and I don't want Rellik and Scrappy to renovate your facial beauty when they find out you're hitting on their girls.

The guys quickly left. I smiled because I liked Nella's personality.

Nella: I know you don't like fighting but you have to defend yourself verbally

Me: I can't even offend people.

Nella: stick around with me and you'll know how. Tomorrow I am going to pool party K9's girlfriend is hosting. You should come.

Me: I doubt Xavier would want that.

Nella: there will be girls only there. I'll vouch for you.

Me: I hope he agrees

Nella: all you have to do is use your power

Me: my power?

Nella: yes! That man loves you all you have to do is pout and sulk then don't talk to him he will surely agree.

Me: i will definitely try that! *laughs*

~~

After a few hours, the carry pack ended and Nella refused getting another one, and I was happy because she didn't want me to get sloppy drunk.

Nella: self control is the best control. *smiles*

I saw Xavier and I still had a can of strongbow in my head. I quickly gave it to Nella because I knew he would get angry at me having a drink. He motioned for me to walk over to him. I felt lightheaded standing but I fixed my walk on he couldn't notice. I knew he noticed because he

looked angry. I just gave him a huge goofy smile. When I was next to him I tiptoed to give him a kiss while placing my arms over his shoulders.

Me: don't get angry *chuckles*

Xavier: who gave you alcohol?

Me: I wanted it.

Xavier: that's not what I asked.

Me: don't do this.

Xavier: do what?

Me: overreact

Xavier: you're getting drunk at a house party.
What if a guy took advantage of you while I wasn't here?

I removed my arms from his shoulders. He held my waist so I wouldn't walk away because I was

getting annoyed by this conversation. Thank God I haven't told him about that guy earlier.

Me: so I can't drink now? You really want to control me huh?

Xavier: that's not what I'm saying. Just not in a house party full of people who don't give about a fuck the law.

Me: I'll just say I'm Rellik's girl. And I'll be safe

He just chuckled and pecked my lips repeatedly making me laugh moving my head and he kissed my cheek.

Xavier: and tell Nella no more alcohol for you.

Me: if you knew who gave me alcohol why did you ask?

Xavier: I didn't know, just a wild guess and I

guess I am correct because you just confirmed it.

Me: whatever *smiles*

We, me and Nella, were on the dance floor just having fun. Then I have felt a loud noise like a gun noise. Then two guys, one in a white shirt then the other in a black shirt, started fighting and another dude who was standing up was holding a gun. He shot the sliding door and the glass just broke into peices i stood there shocked, people were letting them fight like this was normal. some had ran off screaming

Nella: let's get out of here before a petty gang war starts. *scared*

In quick minutes, Xavier and the others were inside. The other guy was in white shirt was

being beaten up now, and there was a lot of blood. The guys started getting in all of them started beating up the white guy. Xavier stood in front of me, I looked at him. Clearly shaken by what is happening in front of me. He pulled me quickly went out the front door, and luckily for us, the crew was outside too. Nella still hugging Scrappy tightly. I held Xavier's hand making him pay attention to me even though he was talking to Wiz..

Me: what's going on there? Why isn't anyone helping him?

Xavier: he must be a snitch

Me: he doesn't deserve that though

Xavier: baby, it's not our gang. I can't do anything.

Me: you got there fast *smiles*

Xavier: I heard a gun shot. I was worried about

you

I just hugged him because I was a bit scared we would get accidentally shot. And happy to know he'll always be there when I need him through whatever. Wiz smiled at us and shook his head. I think a lot of people are surprised that a soft girl like me could change a person like Xavier because nowadays he smiles a lot and he genuinely looks happy with me.

Xavier: we have to stay for Shooter since it's his house

Me: okay? I was just a bit scared. I never seen guys fighting like that

Xavier: let me go see this now, it's taking a long time now

I didn't want him near the fight, what if he gets

hurt.

me: no. Let's go home.

Nella: i agree with Lona.

Xavier: Cardo drive them to Scrappy's crib we'll be there in no time

Me: I am not leaving you here.

Xavier: stop being stubborn for one day and take my orders.

Me: take your orders? I am your girlfriend not your worker. You can't control me like that.

attitude

Everyone started looking at us, the crew only. Shocked that I would say that. I was right! Yes I was wrong for talking to him like that in front of his friends and gang members but he should not talk to me like that too. I am not his

previous girls that bow down every time he talks or commands them to say something. He looked at me and shook his head, I knew he was angry because his jaw clenched. We heard another gun shot and everyone was running out the house. I held onto Xavier scared. Even though he was angry at me his hands held my waist tightly.

Xavier: go with Cardo

Me: I told you. I am not leaving you here.

Xavier: fine! Wait in the car then. I just don't want you hurt in this mess.

Me: I will wait in your car.

He took out his car keys and gave them to me. I pulled Nella lightly and took her to Xavier's Lamborghini. I sat on the driver's seat and she got in the passenger seat.

Me: what do you think is happening there?

Nella: my best guess is that the guy being beaten up by everyone is a spy or snitch and he came out the party then everyone doesn't like that, now they want him to pay.

Me: beating up someone like that is very immature. They couldn't just talk to him or just never communicate with him.

Nella: where did Xavier get you ? *laughs*

Me: what does that mean?

Nella: you're too sweet *laughs* that's good but a lot of people will take advantage.

Me: *sighs* I know

Nella: let's say hypothetically speaking Rellik does something illegal.

Me: yes?

Nella: and someone lands him in jail because

they are a spy or it's something that lands you in danger because that someone is working for another gang. And Rellik sees him at a party, how would you expect him and his friends to react?

Me: okay now I see it, if it lands me in danger I think he would go crazy.

Nella: probably kill a person! *laughs*

Me: no! I doubt he would kill a person for me *laughs*

Nella: girl! He would never tell you but I'm sure he would *laughs*

Me: because I don't want someone's death on my conscience! *laughs*

Nella: I used to think the same way, then I saw it in his way. It's his way of protecting me. And it actually shows me he loves me, because he is putting his freedom in jeopardy just so I can be safe and okay.

Me: murder is a big thing though. I would not be okay with it.

Nella: love is one crazy emotion. You tell yourself you're not okay with something and you find yourself accepting it because you love your significant partner.

Me: that's deep. *chuckles*

Nella: *laughs* bitch I am trying to have a DMC with you!

Me: DMC? *confused*

Nella: deep meaningful conversation

We started laughing and joking around. I haven't had this much fun in a long time. I had a good feeling about Nella and I feel like we're going to have a lot of fun together.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

We went inside the house and I chuckled when I saw the dead body.

Shooter: I want my damn house spotless.

Me: niggas should've taken this shit outside

They apologized and explained the story to us. It seems like the guy that is killed was fucking with the killer's girlfriend and when he saw him at the party him and the gang jumped him and killed him. I won't lie I would've done the same shit if someone fucked Lona. All hell would break loose.

Me: this place needs to be clean and nobody is

going on jail because you will be on it. You decided to kill someone in front of people

~~

After the place was spotless. I left and I could see Nella and Lona were sleeping.

Me: Scrappy, kom vat jou vrou (come take your girlfriend)

Scrappy: I wonder what they drank *laughs*

Me: I never letting my wife drink again.

Scrappy: I told Nella to not even drink, and she didn't listen *chuckles*

Me: they're both stubborn as fuck.

He chuckled and carried Nella to his car, I carried Lona out and then I turned around to the passenger seat and carefully placed her there. She opened her eyes in tiredness, I smiled and

kissed her forehead.

Me: go back to sleep.

She nodded slowly and turned her faced and slept. I closed her door and quickly went to my side of the car. On the ride home I kept hearing her whimpering and crying in her sleep. Maybe she's having a bad dream. I slightly shook her a bit, she woke up looking around.

Me: you're okay?

Lona: yes. Just a bad dream

Me: what's this bad dream about?

Lona: the night Kenny attacked you. Shooter shot men in front of me and I just can't get the images out of my mind.

Me: I'm sorry, baby. Maybe I should organise a

few therapy sessions for you.

Lona: no. I will be fine.

I looked at her while still driving. She smiled at me.

Lona: I am fine, really.

I just nodded, and I saw her getting back to sleep. When we arrived home, I was happy to finally get back so I can get back to sleep. When I opened my car door, I was surprised when she opened her's because I thought she was sleeping.

Me: you're tired?

Lona: very.

I nodded and closed the door then locked the car, she squealed giggling when I was picked her up bridal style.

Lona: you're going to drop me! *laughs*

I chuckled and continued walking with her, I didn't drink a lot today because I didn't want the Kayla incident to repeat. When we were inside. I walked up the stairs with her in my arms.

Lona: I didn't even know you were this strong.

Me: you underestimate me. And you're not even heavy.

She smiled and blushed. When we were in my room, I carefully placed her on my bed.

Lona: thank you baby.

Me: I love you.

Lona: I love you way way way more *chuckles*

Me: now that's the alcohol talking go to sleep
smiles

Lona: I am not even that drunk

Me: I'm used to you being uptight this is new
and refreshing.

Lona: I know right, I had so much fun. Thank
you

Me: for what? I wasn't even going to go to that
party.

Lona: for showing me so much fun in just a
month of us knowing each other. It has been
the happiest times in my life.

Me: *chuckles* you're welcome baby.

I kissed her slowly, and she moaned surprising

me because she never moans when we're kissing even when I can see she's horny. She took off my shirt and I quickly cut the kiss off, and she looked offended.

Me: we can't do it like this. I want your first time to be meaningful not something you'll regret in the morning

She nodded and I could see she was embarrassed. I kissed her hand and slowly brushed it.

Me: I'm doing this for you, trust me. I want to fuck you so bad, like really bad *Lona laughs blushing* but I know I have to wait.

Lona: I should stop judging books by their cover.

Me: huh? *confused*

Lona: when I first saw you i thought you were this mean guy that just stared at me because I was so awkward.

Me: I was staring because you were beautiful and the only girl that wore sweats to a house party.

We both chuckled and she started taking off her dress, I was shocked that she was comfortable enough to change in front of me. She got up and went to my drawer, I licked my lips at her ass. I don't why the fuck I declined the offer of fucking her. She took out my black t-shirt that looked big and long. She wore it. I had a smile on my face because already imagined how wonderful marriage life would be with her.

Damn I'm whipped, it hasn't even been a year we have been dating and I'm already thinking of marriage.

Lona: what are you thinking about?

Me: nothing serious.

Lona: you know today at first I felt guilty hanging out with Nella but I used to be friends with Kayla

Me: whatever happens in them, please don't get involved baby.

Lona: my mouth is shut

Speaking of Kayla tomorrow i need to go threaten Zikhona to tell me what the hell happened that day.

.

[02/20, 06:08] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 29

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

The next morning after my morning routine I wore a black hoodie with my black sweatpants and black sneakers. To cut it short I was wearing black from head to toe. Lona was still sleeping and I didn't want to wake her up, I wanted to sort this problem out then I'll think of a plan later on. I heard her moving in the bed.

Me: hey sleepyhead.

Lona: my head feels heavy.

Me: *chuckles* what did you drink?

Lona: just a few cans of strongbow and one shot.

Me: you have a light head.

Lona: meaning?

Me: you can't drink too much alcohol. Need some pills?

Lona: just cold water please

I nodded and went downstairs to get her some cold water in a glass when I went downstairs. I heard the sink tap running. She was brushing her teeth.

Me: I will place the glass on the sideboard.

Lona: thank you.

Me: I am going out for an hour or two. Will you be okay?

Lona: yes. Where are you going?

Me: just running a business errand.

Lona: okay.

When I was about to walk out the door, I heard her calling me.

Lona: I am going to an all girls pool party today.

Me: who's party?

Lona: apparently K9's girlfriend but I am going with Nella.

Me: I'll think about it.

Lona: you'll think about it?

Me: yes.

Lona: Xavier I am not your child or little sister. I am your girlfriend if I want to go to a pool party I will go.

Me: Lona, now that everyone knows we're dating we have to think about your safety. Plenty of people will want you dead just because I love you. I don't want you hurt

Lona: it's only a girl's pool party.

Me: fine. Do what you want.

Lona: let's not fight over this please.

Me: we will talk properly when I get back.

Lona: let's talk now. I am going

Me: you're not. And that's the final say.

She rolled her eyes and went the bathroom. I sighed at her childish antics and walked out. I will deal with her when I come back. I sped off to the warehouse in my Lamborghini. I smirked when I saw Zikhona tied up there crying like the bitch she is. The warehouse had only Scrappy in it because he was the only one I told about the situation. I removed the mouth cover on Zikhona because I wanted some answers .

Zee: please don't kill me *crying*

Me: I won't.

Zee: you won't? *sniffs*

Me: yes. If you tell me the truth

Zee: truth about what?

Me: what happened that night? I was drunk and I felt really sleepy after you offered weed to me and Kayla gave me a cup full of alcohol. Start talking

Her eyes wondered around and I knew shit was up. But what was pissing me off was them thinking they could play me like I am a idiot.

Zee: I don't know what happened that day.
Please I really don't.

Me: nci nci nci! You really don't want to live Zee.
It's a shame such a beautiful girl dying at a young age.

Zee: no! Please.

I took the knife Scrappy was holding and stabbed her thigh, deep. She screamed and cried, to make sure she understood I wasn't playing I twisted the knife still in her thigh. I chuckled at the ugly face she was making when she was crying. I took the knife out slowly so she can feel the pain

Me: now, if you start talking the truth I will save you and get you to a hospital if you don't. You will die from the blood you're losing from the wound.

Zee: I'm sorry. *cries*

Me: sorry for what? What did you do? Talk Zikhona.

Zee: Kayla is...

Me: she is what!

Zee: she is pregnant. *groans*

Me: what!?

I looked at Scrappy shocked if I made that bitch pregnant my life is fucked up.

Zee: she is planning on pinning the pregnancy to you. She drugged you and made it seem like you had sex with her so she can blackmail you into taking care of her and the baby. She knows Lona wouldn't let you kill the baby that's why she said she'll send the pictures to her and Lona would dump you then she would have you.

Me: and you too bitch! You were in the fucking plan too! *angry*

Zee: I am sorry, I was just helping a friend out
cries

In my anger I stabbed her neck with the knife making her die a slow painful death. I hate when people think they can play me like that.

Scrappy: I will get the boys to clean this up.

Me: bruh! These bitches dink hulle kan my speel!
(think they can play me!)

Scrappy: look on the bright side. You didn't fuck Kayla. *chuckles*

I ended up chuckling myself. I took the knife out of her neck. Now all I have to do is find that bitch Kayla. I will kill her with no mercy. Her days on this earth have been numbered and they are running out!

Scrappy: I wonder which fool fucked Kayla raw, never fuck a dirty hoe raw.

Me: *laughs* but you wanted to.

Scrappy: luckily I didn't. *laughs*

~~

Me: baby!

I was in the house now, and I bought my wife some pizza. I looked around the house but I couldn't find her. Lona is really testing me because she knows I can't hurt her. That's the only reason why she would go to that party without my consent! I was surprised when I saw her in the lounge room watching a movie. It looked like an action movie.

Me: baby, why didn't you respond when I was calling you?

She didn't respond and looked at the large TV. I

smiled knowing she was angry about earlier on, I sat next to her and tried kissing her cheek but she moved her face.

Me: it's just just a pool party. You can go others just not this one.

She was about to speak but she kept her mouth shut. I sighed frustrated that she isn't talking to me.

Me: baby? I came home with some pizza .

She turned up the TV volume, I chuckled. I tried hugging her but she got up and walked out the lounge. I sighed, who taught her this silent treatment thing? Because I hate it! When I followed her up the stairs I shook my head at her packing her one bag.

Me: woah! Baby come on. You're overreacting.

She continued packing her things. I held her arms stop her, I was surprised she was this much upset about this.

Me: fine you can go to the party, Lelona. Damn.

Lona: it's not even about the party that much!

Me: well sit on your hubby's lap and tell him what's wrong. *smiles*

I sat on the bed, and patted my lap lightly she chuckled and sat on my lap.

Lona: I am trying to be serious.

Me: me too

Lona: baby, you need to stop controlling me so much

Me: I am doing it because I care.

Lona: i understand but it's getting too much

Me: I don't want you to go to that party because I don't like the vibe K9's girlfriend has. She's a bad influence and I don't want that rubbing off on you.

Lona: she can't be that bad.

Me: I hate Vicki she brings a bad vibe.

Lona: that I know.

Me: something happened yesterday?

Lona: something like that but Nella cut if off quick.

Me: what happened?

Lona: can't tell you because you'll overreact. She was just throwing shade.

Me: need me to talk to her about it?

Lona: no. I'm sure they even forgot about that thing now.

Me: okay. Come give me a kiss.

She smiled and pecked my lips

Me: that's a kiss?

Lona: *chuckles* yes!

Me: give me a real kiss, woman.

She laughed and kissed me passionately.

Lona: look now all of my lip gloss is on you.

She wipes my lips and got up. I smiled smacking her ass hard. She squealed brushing her ass.

Lona: that hurts Xavier!

I laughed giving her another kiss.

Me: sorry baby. But it's just so... damn

She blushed and shook her head. She took her bag, and started taking stuff out.

Me: were you really going to leave?

Lona: yes if you said I shouldn't go.

Me: *chuckles* you're hanging out with Nella for one day and already you're using her techniques.

Lona: and I'm happy they're working *smirks*

~~

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

Me and Nella got out of her car. I liked hanging out with Nella because she is thick like me so I don't feel self conscious when I'm around her. But she's the good thick I feel like I'm the fat thick.

Nella: and don't pay attention to Vicki's pettiness she was like that with me too, but I put her in place.

Me: i really don't want drama. So I'll just ignore her.

Nella: trust me the way she's annoying. She's hard to ignore.

I was wearing leggings and Xavier's white baggy t-shirt with his cross chain. On my feet I was wearing sandals.

Nella: leggings to a pool party? This has Xavier written all over it.

Me: I was wearing the cutest dress and he went crazy.

Nella: wow... I didn't take Xavier as the insecure type.

Me: insecure? *laughs* girl that man is cocky, too cocky, if you ask me.

Nella: as a person yes, but when it comes to you, he's insecure. Maybe he controls what you were because he's scared you might get approached by guys and you'll move on from him or cheat on him.

Me: what? I would never do that to him

Nella: girl I know. I had the same problem with my boo. He was so controlling on what I wear and stuff like that because he was a player and he didn't want what he did to other girls to happen to him.

Me: I never knew Scrappy was insecure and scared of you cheating on him.

Nella: there's a lot of things guys feel but they won't tell their girlfriends. Now all you have to do is assure Rellik he's the only one for you and you'd never betray him

Me: I'll do that, thanks Nella.

Nella: no problem munchkin and right after that I'm giving you makeover!

Me: is there something wrong with me?

Nella: bitch no! Your body is too perfect to be hidden behind leggings and all that. And some weave just to give you that oomph!

I laughed with her then we sat down the pool table set with food. The other girls were still talking around the pool and holding champagne glasses. My heart started beating fast when I saw Dineo and Nandi. What type of punishment is this!?

Nella: what's wrong?

Me: I have to go home.

Nella: what's wrong?

Me: 2 of Xavier's exes.

Nella: girl half of these girls are Xavier's exes.

Me: What!? *hurt*

Nella: that was before you, and you can't leave. It'll make them think they can walk all over you.

Me: he was dating them at once? Wait... and they were okay with it?

Nella: girl, the things girls would do for money

and high maintenance.

Me: what are they all doing here?

Nella: one of Vicki's petty ideas. Seriously that girl needs to get beat up!

Me: I can't even fight that much, I can only defend myself because my brothers taught me a bit.

Nella: if she gets too much, I will start swinging. You'll back me up if the others jump in?

Me: Nella why don't we just leave?

Nella: because that's when they will think they're stronger than you! Don't let them walk all over you!

Me: I need alcohol for the energy.

~~

I was happy when I could have fun without worrying about people fighting me because Nella had my back. Yes we were a bit tipsy but

we were having fun singing along to the music.
Then Vicki called us to gather at the table

Nella: here we go.

She tied her hair up. I started laughing because we were drunk thinking we're going to fight. We weren't that drunk because we could walk properly. We were that drunk that gave you confidence to anything and regret it after thinking for a long time. We went to the pool table. Vicki smirked and motioned for me to come closer . Nella followed me and we stood next to Vicki and her minion Nazo.

Vicki: we would like to welcome Lona to the club, she is now the 8th member in the Xavier's girlfriend cult *laughs*

They all started laughing, making my anger grow. Nella rolled her eyes at them being childish.

Vicki: and all of Xavier's girls need to bow to her because word is, she's the main. And the cult is over. *chuckles*

Then there was an awkward silence. I felt like slapping Vicki because she was being petty for no reason.

Dineo: funny thing is, Rellik didn't tell me we broke up.

That hurt I won't lie. I thought Xavier was done with all of his hoes. The girls drank their champagne and started doing funny sounds. Dineo needs to back off because all of Xavier's

hoes are quiet except her! It's not my fault
Xavier only sees her as a hoe.

Nella: when was the last time he talked to you?

Dineo: a few weeks again

Nella: bitch you are single now. Stop being such a lowlife hoe and find a new boo. Clearly he moved on. Matter of a fact, all you hoes just stop dreaming Rellik won't come back to you

I smiled knowing she really had my back. The girls were now annoyed with us, because Nella wasn't backing down at all.

Vicki: shut up, everyone knows Scrappy screwed Kayla because you were nagging him a lot.

Everyone gasped. My heart started beating fast hoping they won't expose me being Kayla's ex friend. I could see Nella was hurt and she was very disappointed.

Nella: he did what?

Vicki: oops

Nella had glossy eyes, and I felt bad and very angry that Vicki would reveal a secret everyone was keeping. In my hand I took the glass full of champagne and threw it on Vicki, she squealed shocked. I slapped her hard that her hair covered her face. She tried to slap me but I held her hand

me: you're a bitch, and I hope K9 sees it before it's too late.

I grabbed my big purse that had my clothes since I was in my swimsuit. I took Nella's purse too, I grab her hand and we walked out of that party. Vicki is a snob, she probably didn't return the slap again because she thinks I'm ratchet and ghetto. As soon as we were next to the car, that's when Nella started crying. I mean crying hard. I blame the alcohol, she was even having hiccups.

Nella: I am done with him! I am done with him. I don't care!

Me: come on Nella you don't mean that. You love that guy

Nella: clearly he doesn't love me if he keeps doing this to me!

She was crying so hard that I was feeling her pain. I had a few tears myself. I hugged her

tightly and she started crying harder.

Me: give me the keys I'll drive. You're in no state to drive.

I searched for them in her bag. Once I found them. I got her in the car, and I got in too. I started driving out of that yard.

Nella: am I not good enough ?! I stood by his side when no bitch wanted him! When he was broke and in jail I was there! Nobody, none of those hoes were there but me! I don't want his money, or anything. I just want his loyalty! Now everyone is looking at me like I am a fool because of him! I am a laughing stock because of him! I am done with him. This is the last straw. I have felt way too much pain because of him. I am going back home in Pretoria. He can

stay with his hoes!

I didn't even want to comment because I knew I would mess up and tell her that he was really cheating on her.

Me: listen to what he has to say first.

Nella: no matter how fucked up Vicki is, she never lies about the shit she knows. Let me text her to give me the evidence.

Me: don't do that because you're only hurting yourself.

Nella: I am seriously done with him Lona. I am serious.

Me: Nella, that's alcohol talking.

Nella: I am done. *cries* i will find someone better! I had a miscarriage because him cheating on me, and he doesn't care. He still

does it! I gave him way too many chances. He is doing this because he thinks I won't leave. Well this time, I have had enough.

Finally we arrived at Xavier's home, and I saw his car parked in the driveway.

Me: do you need my support because I can come-

Nella: I will be fine. I promise.

I nodded, once I took out my purse bag, I took out my leggings. And when I walked out I quickly wore my leggings. I saw her get on the driver's seat she quickly drove off and I felt bad because she really feels hurt and her boyfriend is probably with another girl . When I walked in I was greeted by the smell of weed.

Me: Rellik! ?

I need to talk to him about texting those bitches that he's with me now! I will not have a Nella situation in my relationship.

Xavier: lounge!

I went to the lounge pissed. I was shocked to see Scrappy there. I didn't even care about my swimsuit revealing my cleavage. But I know Xavier was angry.

Me: Scrappy if you don't want to be single by today, you better rush home now.

Scrappy: what?

Me: Vicki told Nella you were smashing Kayla.

Scrappy: shit!

Xavier gave him his car keys I guess they were in the same car. Once Scrappy rushed out, Xavier still looked at me disapproving me being almost naked in front of his best friend.

Me: why does Dineo think you guys are still dating? Fix your hoes Rellik before you end up back with them.

.

.

.

OBJ LONA & NELLA OBJ

[02/20, 06:08] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 30

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I looked at her not knowing whether I should deal with her being almost naked in front of my best friend or the Dineo fucked up situation. Nor her language first because this was new to me. I could see her eyes were a bit red. So I knew she was a bit drunk.

Me: what?

Lona: Dineo, Nandi and all your other hoes were there.

Me: I knew Vicki had something up her sleeve

Lona: Dineo says you didn't mention anything about you guys breaking up

Me: I post you all the time on WhatsApp she

should've known I'm taken now. *shrugs*

Lona: Xavier, they think I am just one of your hoes!

Me: why do you care about what other people say?

Lona: it's not I care it's just embarrassing because she claims you're still with her.

Me: what can I do then Lelona? I can't fix her stupid delusional thoughts.

Lona: you know what? Let's leave it.

Me: come on, clearly you are upset about this. Tell me what I should do.

Lona: you should know what to do! But clearly you don't want to do it

She stormed upstairs. And I just sat on the couch frustrated that Vicki could manage to fuck up 2 relationships in one day! I called K9

Me: yo what the fuck is up with your girl! ?

K9: which one?

Me: *chuckles* Vicki boy!

K9: what did she do now?

Me: she's getting out of line, fix her before I do.

K9: first Scrappy now you, I'll talk to her when I'm done with what I'm doing.

Me: you're still fucking that bitch from Tasha's?

K9: *chuckles* fuck off my business.

He dropped the call and I chuckled my boy always has hoes in his love life just wish he didn't make Vicki his main. I waited for a while before going upstairs because Lona might still be upset. I texted Dineo that we're done and she should stop stalking my girl, going to pool parties Lona attends won't make me want her.

She was a temporal hoe. Nothing else. I forwarded the message to all the hoes I fucked with. If this doesn't make Lona happy I don't know what will. I went to my room, well our room now and she was on the bed watching some movie.

Me: I texted them that it's over. Are you happy?

She opened her arms waiting for me to hug her. I smiled shaking my head at how much this girl is controlling me. I cuddled with her, while she held my head and brushed my small curls. I need a new haircut.

Lona: baby, please understand how important this was. Imagine going to a party and an ex of mine talks to you like you're nothing and says I didn't text him I broke up with him so technically

I am still dating him. He says this in front of a lot of people. How would you feel?

Me: I'd fuck him up. Then I'd deal with you in another way.

Lona: deal with me how? *laughs*

Me: you don't need to know *smirks*

I would fuck her crazy until i know she won't be able to walk for the next few days.

Lona: maybe I really don't have to know
laughs

Me: did Nella look that angry?

Lona: she was livid. I think she'll really dump Scrappy

Me: trust me she won't, that girl loves Scrappy
laughs

Lona: then why would Scrappy treat her like

that?

Me: I don't know and I am not getting involved, and so are you.

Lona: but she's my friend and I already slapped Vicki for her.

I sat up and looked at her, I had this big smile on my face.

Me: you did what?

Lona: I think I should apologise though. What I did was very unlady-like. I felt bad instantly afterwards.

Me: you did great! *laughs*

Lona: Xavier!

Me: *laughs* it's the truth. I do wish you would've done more than slap her, probably beat her up until she bleeds. But slapping is

okay too.

She laughed hard and I saw she had a few tears but I was dead serious. That Vicki girl needs someone to put her own her place. I am shocked it was Lona rather than Nella though. Because I know Nella as the 'no nonsense' type.

~~

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

It was the next day and after my morning routine I wore a white bodysuit with ripped jeans and a army printed jacket with white sneaker boots. I was going shopping with Nella,

she texted me saying the makeover must be done today. I didn't want to ask her about Scrappy through the phone so I knew I was going to talk to her when we met. I didn't tell Xavier I am going to get a makeover because I know he would've wanted to give me money for it. I will just use my money, I have like R 2000 left in the bank.

Me: bye babe.

Xavier: wait wait... where are you going?

Me: town with Nella.

Xavier: for?

Me: just lunch. .. and browsing through town.

Xavier: browsing through town?

Me: yes. Just looking at a few things. So many questions Zay!

Xavier: that's because you're not stating exactly

what you'll be doing in town.

Me: we are going shopping

Xavier: okay, I'll transfer some cash into your account.

Me: no. That's why I didn't want to tell you because you'll want to give me money.

Xavier: what's wrong with that?

Me: I want to spend my own money.

Xavier: as your boyfriend I want to spoil you.

Me: * sighs* you're already spoil me enough.

He was already on his phone making me roll my eyes because he doesn't listen to me nor respect my decisions.

Xavier: R 15 000 in your account.

Me: What!? *shouts*

Xavier: too little?

Me: too much!

Xavier: *chuckles* I have had girls ask me for more

Me: I am not those girls!

Xavier: fine I am stopping at 15k

Me: next time please have my consent first.

Xavier: okay. Come give me a kiss.

I went to home and gave him a short kiss. He stood up making me confused where was he going

Me: and then?

Xavier: I will drop you off in town. Text Nella asking her where you guys should meet up.

I took my phone out and texted her.

Me: Nella where should we meet up girl?

Nella [OBJ] [OBJ] : how about we go to H&M first?

Me: okay. I will be there in a few minutes. [OBJ]

I looked at Xavier whom was still texting. A bit of me wondered whether he was talking to his hoes because if Scrappy can cheat on Nella, why would Xavier not cheat on me, I mean they are best friends they probably do the same things. He looked up and saw me staring at him.

Xavier: and?

Me: h&m.

Xavier: okay, let's go baby.

He held my hand and we went to his Range Rover. When we got in town, I got off at H&M.

Xavier: give me a call when I have to come pick you up.

Me: Nella will drop me off .

Xavier: okay, see you then.

I rushed to his side. And I gave him a short kiss.

Me: love you.

Xavier: love you too beautiful.

I smiled and went to look for H&M in the mall. I hope Nella will understand when I don't want to buy certain clothes because they make me feel uncomfortable.

~~

After hours of shopping and us having fun, Nella finally agreed it was time for us to go to the next part, my hair. I didn't know whether I wanted a short weave or long weave.

Nella: I will choose everything. Don't even worry.

Me: don't give me any bad colors Nella

Nella: let's do long blonde kinda brownish weave.

Me: blonde? Why not black?

Nella: because we need something different! I am also getting a blueish weave. Come on girl! Don't be scared now *smiles*

Me: I hope this will look good.

Nella: I know it will!

We started getting our hair done, I didn't spend

a lot on clothes because those clothes were expensive! And Nella went to all the expensive places. I am used to Mr Price, just to name one. Now that I am hanging out with her, I feel like I will need to spend a lot of money to match her fly. When we were done with our hair I was shocked at how beautiful I looked. I didn't expect this blonde brownish look to really suit me. When I look at Nella, she was so beautiful my mouth dropped. This girl is so flawless i don't even know why Scrappy would cheat on her. She's perfect

Nella: do her eyebrows as well and add some lashes. This is a new Lona, she needs to look like it.

I smiled nervously. I am scared Xavier might not like this, maybe he fell for me because I was so simple and me being too much might make him

fall off. After everything was done, I was shocked! It looked like a different me. I didn't even know I could look this hot! I looked like this Instagram girls people die to look like.

Me: wow.

Nella: I know right! ? Girl you are so beautiful, Xavier is one lucky dude.

Me: I am the lucky one

Nella: trust me, if he fucked up you could get a dude fast, he should know that. He has a real diamond and he's very lucky!

I smiled my eyes feeling glossy, it was quite emotional having a friend that's just good at providing you with compliments just because she feels like it. I am finally getting a best friend that is good to me. After everything we went to her car.

Nella: now time for nails.

Me: this is a total makeover *laughs*

Nella: yes girl! Everything will be worth it!

I didn't feel confident with nails because I felt like it was unnecessary. I gave her a weak fake smile.

Nella: what's wrong?

Me: nothing.

Nella: girl I know a fake smile when I see one. Now tell me what's wrong.

Me: it's just this change is overwhelming and I feel like when I am with you I have to spend a lot of money, please don't feel offended.

Nella: *laughs* bitch do you really think I spend this much cash in a day?

Me: yeah? *chuckles*

Nella: no! *laughs* it's my payback to Scrappy. Hurting his bank account brings me too much joy, I didn't even want his card but he insisted so why not?

Me: *smiles* speaking of him. What happened?

Nella: he fucked with her when we were on our break, space type of thing.

I felt like Scrappy was lying because him and Kayla used to vibe just a short while ago. But I didn't want to get involved. I am taking Xavier's advice. We went to the nail salon, and I chose the colour black because I know my boo loves black then on my toes I chose white because it looked neat.

~~

Me: thank you Nella for a wonderful time. Really. It means a lot.

Nella: I needed a distraction so thank you for taking my mind off the crazy situation I experienced.

Me: no problem

Nella: and thank you again for yesterday. You really showed me I could lean on you in my dark times.

Me: that was the drunk me, trust me the sober me is too boring.

Nella: you look down on yourself a lot. Don't do that, you are amazing. And today wasn't boring at all, it was actually the most fun I had in forever.

Me: *smiles* thanks girl!

I hugged her than took my bags from her car. When I walked in I rushed upstairs to place the bags on the bed, so I could go see my hubby. I knew he was with friends because I heard

noises in the lounge. When I went in the lounge I could see they were really focusing on the game of rugby. They were even screaming. It was my boo Zay, Scrappy, Wiz, K9 and Shooter.

Me: hey guys.

They all turned to looked at me. Xavier looked shocked at how i looked. Even the guys were surprised. I smiled feeling shy

Xavier: damn baby! *smiles*

The guys laughed at his behavior. He got up and came closer to me. He held my waist and kissed me passionately. I was smiling through the kiss. I didn't think he would love my makeover this much.

Wiz: get a room, damn rabbits.

They started laughing, I ended up laughing too.
They were one crazy people who were not
afraid of speaking their minds.

Me: do you guys need anything? Drinks... food?

K9: some beer.

Xavier: hey hey! Get up and go take your own
beer. Do you see how beautiful my wife is? She
should be just sitting next to me as my trophy.

me: *laughs* stop it!

I pecked his lips then went to the kitchen took
out a carry pack of Hunter's Gold for them.
When I placed it on the tablet for them, I was
about to go to the kitchen and get them chips

but Zay pulled me to his lap and kissed me again.

Me: not in front of your friends, Xavier *blushes*

Xavier: I don't give a fuck about them. Baby, you look... wow.

Me: *chuckles* you're speechless

Xavier: *nods* very. Who thought of this colour?

Me: Nella. *smiles*

Xavier: she chose well, because you look like a million rand.

Me: *chuckles* really now ?

He grinned and kept kissing my neck, it was ticklish so I started laughing, loud too.

Scrappy: yo, we are trying to watch the game

not some PG18 movie.

I laughed with them then I got up from Xavier's lap and went to the kitchen. When I was there I was took the big bowl and poured 2 party pack Lay's for them. Then I went to serve the Lay's.

Xavier: baby you shouldn't work hard for these boys

Me: I don't mind *smiles*

Then right after that I offered to cook, but they said they were okay so I went upstairs to call my brothers since I missed them so much. I called Muller first because I know he'll reply quickly.

Me: bro!

Muller: hey lil sis.

Me: how's everyone at home? I miss you, King and dad.

Muller: well right now we're at a hospital.

Me: what! ? Are you OK?

Mulle: yes. But Dabs isn't.

Me: what happened?

Muller: according to her she was kidnapped and tortured she still doesn't know why.

Me: is she going to be okay?

Muller: yes but she lost a toe and she broke a few ribs. The doctor says she'll be fine. We tried calling you but you weren't answering the house phone and we didn't get a chance to try calling your cellphone

Me: send my regards. I hope she gets better soon.

Muller: okay love you, call me if you need

anything

Me: I will. I love you too bro.

After we both hung up, that's when everything started being too real. All the people that were treating me like shit are starting to get the karma they deserve. God works so well that we should never judge His actions. I decided to take some selfies with my phone, man did I look cute! I posted a selfie for WhatsApp and Instagram. I loved this new me. Nella really helped me out!

~~

Me and Xavier rushed to the hospital because his uncle called saying something was wrong with aunt Fifi. I held Xavier's hand assuring him all will be well. Aunt Fifi wouldn't want him this stressed.

Xavier: I knew it was something big! It was more than a fucking flu or stomach bug!

Me: baby calm down. Let's go inside and find out what's wrong and I am sure your uncle is in there needing support because his wife is in a hospital bed

Xavier: you're right. Let's go.

We walked inside the hospital holding hands. We were even matching in our black Adidas tracksuits with our matching sneakers. It wasn't even planned, it just happened. When we approached his uncle I could see the stress all over his face.

Xavier: what happened?

Ghost: no one has told me yet what happened. I was called too, I had to fly from Ghana to here. I called you here too because I thought you

would be interested in her health too.

Xavier: I have always been! I need to know what's wrong with her. I deserve to know!

Me: baby calm down, please.

Xavier: I don't give a fuck about calming down! My aunt is in the hospital and no one is telling me what the fuck is wrong with her!

Me: you will get escorted out if you don't control your anger. Please just sit down. I will bring you some water.

He obeyed me, but I could see he was going to explode any minute. I don't blame him, Fifi was the only mother figure he has and losing her could damage him so much because she was a mother to him. I went to the machines to get him something to drink. Even though I can't find water, maybe he can drink some Coke and I even bought some for his uncle. When I went

back I could sense he was still angry. I gave them the cans and they started drinking. I sat next to Xavier silently praying that Fifi doesn't die from whatever she has because I don't think I will be able to deal with Xavier when he's in a mourning stage. He looks like the type that mourns by partying a lot and fucking every virgina thrown at him. I would not be able to survive that! Both of them were frustrated that the doctor wasn't bringing any feedback and every doctor we saw attended other people. Finally they were called for Fifi. They both jumped, i was going to sit down because it was a family matter, but Xavier looked at me. I stood up and held his hand. He held it tightly in fear of the news.

Doctor: unfortunately the breast cancer came back to the other left breast. We have no option but to operate on her before it's too late because it is becoming deadly.

. [02/20, 06:39] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 31

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

It's like my world came crushing down. I let go of Lona's hand. I was angry because she never told me and I asked her what was wrong a lot of times.

Ghost: do the operation immediately. Whatever it takes please just save my wife.

Doc: we'll do everything we can

Then he left, and I looked at Ghost angrily.

Me: you knew about this!?

Ghost: she didn't want you to find out, but she had suspected it.

Me: and you didn't fucking tell me!

Lona: Xavier! Calm down, you're attracting attention.

Me: stay the fuck out of this!

She looked scared because I was so angry, and she wasn't helping either because her telling me to calm down only makes me more angry.

Me: I will never forgive you if she dies because I would've spent more time with her if you wouldn't have kept this shit from me.

I stormed out of that damn hospital. When I was outside and approaching my car, I heard Lona shouting my name.

Me: not now Lelona! Give me some fucking space! Damn.

She stood clearly hurt by the way I was pushing her off. But I really need some alone time and if she continues smothering me I will lash out on her and possibly hurt her feelings. I got in the car and drove off leaving her there, looking at my car speed off. She will go home with Ghost because I don't want anyone giving me sympathy right now, and I know that's what she'll give me. My fear will come true and I know Fifi won't make it, my whole life is fucked up. She will die before I even give her the gift of a grandchild. I was starting to be rude to her but she continued loving me through my fucked up

mistakes. I went to my club because I know if I stay alone I will think about this shit until it eats me up. When I was there I could see it was packed. I went to the bar and had 5 shots and requested a bottle of Ciroc. I started drinking alone and I knew I was gonna get drunk today. I didn't even care about the song playing too loud.

?: bad day?

I looked back then I saw Sino and Nia. They were my hoes that I called whenever I wanted to fuck and they were always down for a threesome, what I loved about them is that they're very private. They don't go around bragging about fucking me like Dineo.

Me: something like that.

They both smiled, I just smirked because I knew where this was going. They both took my hands and pulled me towards the back at my office. When we arrived there, they sat me on the small sofa.

Nia: since we're trying to get comfortable here. Can you help me with the zip?

She turned around and man her ass was still big as fuck. I brushed it and she moaned. I bit my lip chuckling. I zipped her dress zip down and she got the dress off revealing her naked ass, when she turned around and I liked my lips at her perky boobs.

Sino: let's all have some fun.

Sino took off he crop and her bra, then bent

down and pulled my dick out my sweatpants.
When she started sucking, I groaned feeling the
pleasure. I pushed her head to go down further.
And she obeyed.

Me: damn... *groans*

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I went back inside the hospital feeling
embarrassed that I couldn't even tame my
man's anger. How will I even go home? I went
back inside and Ghost was still waiting on the
same chairs.

Ghost: let me guess, he left?

Me: unfortunately, yes.

Ghost: that's how he is. He can't control his anger, it's best he goes before all hell breaks loose.

Me: but how am I going to go home? And he can't go anywhere angry like that. What if he gets hurt? He could be in a fight and get badly beat up.

Ghost: just give him time to cool off and try calling him tomorrow morning. I will drop you off. .

Me: at my home. Maybe I ever really do need to give him space. He really did adore aunt Fifi and her being in the hospital is really breaking him. I hope he isn't doing something bad where ever he is

~~

the doctor finally came to us, it was even in the

morning now but I wanted to be here to hear the news so i can tell Xavier when he's cooled off. I thought Xavier would come back for me but I understood he was scared of the results. His aunt is like his mother.

Ghost: please tell me she's okay! *scared*

Doc: the operation went... well. She will be okay, but she needs to take it very easy. She could have died. And you can go see her now, but only one at a time

I smiled happy and surprisingly Ghost hugged me in excitement. I hugged him back happy that my "godmother" as she calls herself isn't dead.

Me: go see her. I will call Xavier.

He nodded and rushed to the room number he was given by the doctor. I tried calling Xavier but it went straight to voice-mail a lot of times. In my time of giving up I called Nella.

Nella: yes boo?

Me: where's Scrappy?

Nella: here why?

Me: please give him the phone I want to ask where Xavier is.

Nella: okay.

I heard air noises then he greeted with a deep sleepy voice.

Scrappy: praat (talk)

Me: have you seen Xavier? Something happened and I can't get a hold of him. When he

calls you please tell me him to call me.

Scrappy: what happened?

Me: it's not really my place to say but immediately tell him to contact me. I am worried.

Scrappy: fede (sharp)

I hung up and after that call, I waited 2 hours for Xavier's uncle to take me home. Because the visiting hours were also over. On the ride home it was quiet. I had a lot on my mind thinking about where Xavier is and I just hope he is okay. When he finally parked outside my home. I thanked him and stepped out his white Audi R8. He made sure I was safely in the house before driving off. I tried calling Xavier again and luckily he answered with a tired voice.

Me: baby!

Xavier: yes babe?

Me:..where are you? Are you okay? I have been calling you worried.

Xavier: I'm at my house. I am fine. My phone was off because of the battery. Where are you?

Me: at home. Aunt Fifi is going to be okay.

Xavier: she is?

Me: yes! The operation went well.

Xavier: that's good news. I thought I would lose her forever.

Me: I told you she'll be fine. All you have to do is go visit her. She must be missing you

Xavier: you didn't see her?

Me: no. The visiting hours were over.

Xavier: I'll go see her tomorrow.

Me: why not today?

Xavier: I'm taking you out on a spinning show

just to apologize for the way I treated you yesterday.

Me: I understand. You were worried about your aunt. It's okay.

Xavier: I do want you to come though. I am spinning tonight.

Me: *chuckles* who will be there?

Xavier: obviously Nella. So you'll be there too?

Me: yes!

Xavier: *chuckles* I miss you. I am coming to get you.

Me: *smiles* okay lover boy.

We both hung up the reason why I didn't go to Xavier's house was because I thought he wasn't there and I don't have the keys for the house so I would've been locked outside. My house seemed like a better option. I checked my

closet for an outfit the i remembered the cute new clothes are at Xavier's house. I do need new kicks though, I looked for my other shoes and when I pulled a box, I heard the house phone ring. I rushed downstairs thinking it's Zay but the person breathed heavily scaring me bit.

Me: hello? Who's this?

The person didn't reply. When I was about to drop the phone I heard funny sounds and I placed the phone in my ear again.

?: special delivery.

The voice was so deep, I knew it was a tough man. In my head I thought maybe the community children were playing pranks on me. I just hung up and walked up and down the

same spot scared that I was going to die. Immediately I heard the house phone ring and I jumped scared to answer it. I didn't then it rang again. I didn't answer it the second time too. I heard my phone ring from upstairs, I ran upstairs to quickly answer and I saw it was Xavier. I quickly answered the call.

Xavier: wat gaan aan?! (What's going on?!) Why aren't you answering the house phone?!

Me: i..I I'm sorry. I'll open the gate now

Xavier: okay, you're okay?

Me: yes.

I rushed downstairs to open the gate and I stood on the door, that was now open wide, waiting for him to park his car. When he got out I couldn't help it, the crybaby me came out and I cried running to hug him. I was really scared of

something happening to me. That Kenny incident really scared me that day.

Xavier: hey hey hey! what's wrong?!

I couldn't even talk all i did was cry. He held me brushing my back, now I am starting to feel like I am not prepared to be a gangster's girlfriend. Living in fear isn't fun at all.

Xavier: Lelona talk to me! What the fuck is wrong?

I didn't respond and he continued hugging me until I calmed down. And I was feeling better.

Xavier: it's okay. I am here now. Just tell me what's wrong and I'll fix it, baby.

Me: Uhm. . Zay?

Xavier: yes?

Me: was it you who was calling the house phone another special delivery?

Xavier: someone was here?! *angry*

I slowly nodded and he wiped off my remaining tears. I could see he was not happy about this at all.

Xavier: who was it? What did they say? Did they try anything? Are you sure you're okay?

Me: yes. I am fine they couldn't get in the house through the electronic fences. They just said "special delivery" after they were breathing hard.

Xavier: they must've wanted to scare you off. They stood outside the fence?

I nodded. He took my hand because I was afraid of standing alone and he went outside the yard. He checked outside the yard, and found a box that was wrapped up. He opened it up and I looked at the box too, I screamed when I saw a heart that still had blood on it. The box had a note.

Xavier: roses are red, violets are blue. You fell for Rellik, you'll fall for me too. Flowers are overrated and your Rellik is outdated. .. Kenny.

I stood there shocked that he would think sending a heart with blood to a girl is romantic. He is delusional! And he needs urgent help.

Xavier: this has gone too far, I will kill him!

I looked at him not saying one word to stop him because honestly Kenny sort of deserves it. Even though I will never agree with murder. He should just rough him up a bit.

Xavier: you will stay with me until your brothers return. I can't have you in danger. I will organise a bodyguard to always be with you at all times.

I hugged him because I could see this was stressing him because he still hasn't found Kenny. He closed the box after our hug and took his lighter and burned it. He took my hand and we went his car then we drove off to his house. There i knew we weren't going to the spinning show.

Xavier: I will fucking kill him! He doesn't know who the fuck I am!

I just sat in the lounge watching him walk up and down in anger. I wanted to tell him to calm down, but what if he lashes out at me like last time. I am scared of him when he gets this angry. He's very unpredictable when he's like this, he left me alone in the hospital with his uncle and I had to get a ride home from his uncle while he disappeared to God knows where. So I'd rather keep quiet watch him shout and walk around until he is calm then we can talk like proper adults. After a long time of him angrily making calls to find Kenny. I got tired and went upstairs to his room. I laid on the bed feeling really tired of all of this. Maybe I didn't make the right choice of dating Xavier? Because now his enemies know my address and then they sent me dead hearts. After a while I heard the door open, and in fear I jumped then I was relieved that I was Xavier. I laid back down. He also laid on the bed and cuddled with

me. I held him tightly by holding his waist and laying my head on his chest. He brushed my back keeping me calm because I was still shocked from the image of the heart.

Xavier: I promise he won't come near you like last time.

Me: okay...

Xavier: you want to stay home or go to the spin show as a distraction?

Me: let's go to the show because sitting here thinking about it will only make me feel worse.

He nodded, and patted my ass for me to get up. I went to shower first. After all the hygiene routine I changed into a white crop top with white ripped jeans and my white air force plus a denim shirt unbuttoned then I tied my hair in a half up half down style. After all of that I waited

for Xavier. I was worried because I couldn't see him in the room.

Me: Xavier?!

Xavier: I'm here.

He walked in with a towel wrapped around his waist. He was dripping water and damn was he looking so good. I stared at his abs forgetting what I was even calling him for.

Xavier: eyes up here baby. *smirks*

I looked up at his eyes blushing like hell. How did a girl like me end up with a hot gangster who has a lot of baggage. Sometimes I even wonder.

Me: I will wait for you in the kitchen.

Xavier: you look beautiful as always. *smiles*

Me: *grins* thank you

He nodded and I went to the kitchen. I was also on my WhatsApp. I seen Cardo's statues in a spin show so I knew we were late with Bae.

Me: someone's having fun [OBJ]

Cardo [OBJ] : too much fun [OBJ] when are you guys coming by?

Me: I'm waiting for Zay to finish up.

Cardo [OBJ] : can't wait to see you kid it's been a long time since we hung out.

Me: if that's your way of saying you miss me. I miss you too laaitie [OBJ] [OBJ]

Cardo [OBJ] : Nella told me today you slapped the hell out of Vicki. [OBJ] [OBJ]

Me: I was drunk dude [OBJ] I should be excused
for that one and she was very rude towards
Nella. [OBJ]

Cardo [OBJ] : well she's here now. And I want to
see what she's going to say when she sees
you. [OBJ] [OBJ]

Me: mxm you're petty asf [OBJ] [OBJ]

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I finished up wearing my white t-shirt with a
white bucket hat and black jeans with white
Jordan's. My phone rang disrupting me from
putting on my cologne. It was Nia. I firstly
checked if Lona wasn't anywhere near the room.

Me: what?

Nia: I need rent money, Rellik.

Me: I'll transfer it into your account and stop fucking call my phone when I'm with my girl.

Nia: okay, I'm sorry. Is our arrangement still on?

Me: I will call you when I need you.

I dropped the call. I deleted the call history and transferred R3000 into her account and deleted the confirmation message. What Lona doesn't know won't hurt her. I am a man and I have needs, sex is something I want and I know she's not ready so in a way I am thinking about her. I am not forcing her to have sex with me, I will get that from other girls and until she's ready to lay down with me then I will stop fucking other bitches. But right now I can't wait a million years for a pussy. I'll make sure she doesn't find

out about this because she's means a lot to me. I placed my phone in my pocket and headed downstairs. I kissed her, making her smile. I need to sort this Kenny situation because what he did was fucking unacceptable. I will kill him as soon as I get my hands on him. We went to the spinning show, and Lona looked terrified of the loads of people who were all making noise at Cardo spinning.

Lona: you're going to do that?!

Me: *chuckles* yes.

Lona: no you're not. That looks fun but it's dangerous.

Me: that's the fun in it.

Lona: can't we just watch it and not you get in the car and spin. What about your tyres?

Me: you're not going to drop this are you?

Lona: nope. You're not doing it babe.

She pecked my lips and I smiled pulling her closer and kissing her again. I love that she cares about my safety a lot but she worries too much. I know I'm wrong for sleeping with other girls while I'm with her but I have needs and I also use a condom so her health and mine won't be jeopardised. At least I'm thinking about her in this situation because it's better than forcing her to have sex.

[02/20, 06:39] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER
~

INSERT 32

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I held onto him and once he spotted where Scrappy was, he told me to get in there car so he could park where they were. He opened the door for me, and closed it when I got in. The show was in a large field like a soccer field or some sort. When he parked next to them, he got out and opened the door for me. I blushed because his friends were making cheering sounds for him.

Xavier: voertsek julle. *chuckles*

He held me closer and pecked my lips. He bit his lips looking at me, making me blush while I wiped off my lip gloss on him.

Xavier: you want to sit next to me or you'll go with Nella?

Me: with Nella.

Xavier: if you need anything come to me, or if there's a problem come to me.

Me: I will.

I smiled and walked away from him and towards Nella who was with some girls and Vicki. When I was walking, he lightly smacked my ass, I looked back at him and he grinned winking at me. I shook my head laughing and headed to the girls.

Nella: munchkin!

She got up from her camp chair and hugged me. I hugged her tightly. She started jumping a bit and so did I. So we were hugging jumping up and down in circles.

Me: you had something?

Nella: nope. I am banned from alcohol *laughs*

Me: *laughs* it's because he cares.

Nella: I know. But damn girl you look cute!

Me: I have you to thank for that.

Nella: my pleasure babes.

?: and the new girl?

Nella: this is Rellik's girlfriend.

?: he has a girlfriend?

Nella: yes Rosalie he does.

Rosa: yhu! Good luck taming that boy.

Nella: Rosa!

Me: it's fine.

Rosa: oh no I don't have a problem her, she's cute and seems nice but with Rellik's hoe tendencies it will be hard taming that boy

because that's what he is, A boy no man is that immature to fuck every girl that has a liking towards him.

Me: well I can tell you he has changed. And please don't worry about him, he is a man. I know it as his girlfriend. Worry about yours and I'll worry about mine.

Nella looked at me shocked that I grew balls. But I just couldn't let her disrespect Xavier like I'm not around. And I know Xavier would've done the same for me to his friends so I'll protect him too.

Nella: *chuckles* Rosa is Wiz's girlfriend...

Rosa: nice meeting you *smiles*

I was confused why she was smiling because she clearly just talked shit about my boyfriend. I

smiled a weak smile to her. Nella pulled me a bit far from them.

Nella: girl did you take a shot or something.

Me: she shouldn't be talking about Zay like that.

Nella: that's what they want. You to react. Just relax and don't mind them.

Me: we're being ladies tonight we are not giving out slaps .

she laughed and I saw Rosa approaching us. I looked at Nella hoping she won't leave me alone with this girl because this Rosa looked like a fighter.

Rosa: look, I didn't mean to offend your feelings about your boyfriend. It's just I hear a lot about him from other females and I'm coming to you

as a woman to know what you're getting yourself into.

Me: I know, but he's through with all those girls now. Thanks for your concern though.

Nella nudged me, and I know regretted being petty because clearly Rosa was apologizing.

Me: I am sorry, I shouldn't be rude when you're looking out for me. And as a woman, thank you.

She smiled and nodded then walked away. I looked at Nella very irritated that Zay was such a whore before dating me.

Me: was Xavier that bad that people keep asking me if i'm making the right choice.

Nella: not getting involved but what I will say. His past life shouldn't determine his present and future life. And he looks really happy with you, I doubt he'd want to ruin that.

Me: I hope so too.

We went back to the girls and in a way I was feeling guilty because Vicki kept staring at me. I didn't know whether to apologise or let it go.

me: Vicki can I talk to you?

Everyone looked at us, so I figured they knew about the slap incident. We walked far from them so they wouldn't hear our conversation.

Me: I want you apologize for what happened because I had no right to touch you, we could've

handled it like grown women. I was protecting my friend but I know I shouldn't have slapped you.

Vicki: thank you, and I already apologized to Nella for having no respect for her relationship. And I also apologize to you for being rude at you.

Me: forgiven.

Vicki: forgiven.

We both walked back to the spot the girls sitting in. They were shocked we were both smiling and talking like friends. Once we both sat down, Nella looked at me confused why I was smiling with her. She spoke with me softly making sure no one heard her.

Nella: I still don't trust her with her fake apologies

Me: *chuckles* at least we'll all be civil with no drama.

She nodded, from a far I saw Cardo. I smiled going to him. He grinned when he saw me and hugged me, I smiled hugging him back.

Cardo: ntwana yam!

Me: stranger!

Cardo: you missed me spinning.

Me: wait you were the one they were hyping?

Cardo: yup. I know I'm good *smirks*

Me: that thing looks dangerous.

Cardo: it is but it's also fun.

He wrapped his arm around my shoulder and we walked back to the girls.

Cardo: ndikhaphe (walk with me)

Me: where?

Cardo: to the gents.

Me: mxm masambe (let's go)

We walked to the guys and he was telling me about that baby mama of his that he loved so much but he doesn't want to admit it.

Me: yes I remember you telling me about her.

Cardo: I got her where I want her. We're back together and stronger.

Me: what?! *excited* is she here?

Cardo: no, but you'll meet her soon.

Me: I can't wait nigga! I am free tomorrow.

Cardo: I will tell her to get ready tomorrow then

chuckles

When we finally arrived at the gents. Xavier looked at me with this sexy look and he licked his lips like I am the only girl in that place. I blushed and motioned for him to walk with me to the girls because the only reason I agreed to walk with Cardo was because I wanted to see him. He stood up and held my waist kissing me. He smelled like cigarettes so I knew he had been smoking. Damn that kiss was so sexy and amazing I started feeling some type of way down there. I didn't even know kisses and cigarette smell could blend in like this. I didn't want it to stop, but luckily he knew my boundaries and pulled away from the kiss.

Xavier: man, I'm a lucky dude.

Me: stop trying to make me blush. *blushes*

Xavier: I can see it's working. *smiles* you look beautiful Lona

Me: thank you.

Xavier: I am serious. I wish I can make you see yourself through my eyes. You're one fine art and I don't see any flaws just perfections on top of perfections.

Me: *smiles* I like it when you express your feelings. It makes me love you more.

Xavier: no matter how much you love me, I'll always love you more. You're my weakness for real. Whenever you cry I feel anger inside of me, and I feel the need to make you happy just to see your beautiful smile. In our relationship I may fuck up sometimes and hurt your feelings because I'm still getting used to this love and one woman thing but please never doubt my love for you. I'm willing to do anything to make are you are safe and happy. I will always make sure you're mine.

Right now I had tears because I was so shocked he said those loving words to me. He wiped my tears and I chuckled because I now realise how lucky I am to get such a wonderful man.

~~

The next morning I dressed up in red sweats and let my hair loose after brushing it then I was meeting up with Cardo and his baby mama .

Xavier: someone looks very beautiful.

He kissed me and smiled when I pulled his bottom lip. I chuckled because I was really changing for this guy. And I'm quite happy about it. I haven't had a panic attack in a long time. No matter how angry he gets I always remain with a smile at the end of the day.

Me: I am going to see Cardo's baby mama.

Xavier: *chuckles* tell me how that goes.

Me: I'm serious. He has a little kid *laughs*

Xavier: that laaitie can't even keep one girl, he's always changing them

Me: mhm sounds like someone I used to know

Xavier: but that someone changed when he saw the love of his life

He pecked my lips repeatedly until I started laughing. He looked at me with the sexy look he always looks at me with. The one that makes me want to go on my knees and propose to him. He took his phone, and I tidied up the room so it won't be messy.

Xavier: kyk vir my meisie laaities. Jou meisies

het niks op hierdie een nie (look at my girl boys.
Your girls have nothing on this one)

I hid my face when I saw he had a flash on. I
didn't even know he was making a video of me.

Xavier: come give me a kiss baby.

I blushed hiding my face shaking my head no.
He came next to me and the phone was now
backwards looking at the both of us, he kissed
my cheek and we landed on the bed making me
giggle at him being so goofy.

Xavier: give me a kiss.

I smiled pecking his lips, but he kissed me more
so we ended up kissing. I hid our faces from the

camera. Then the flash stopped. I think he was making a video for WhatsApp.

Me: don't post that *laughs*

Xavier: already did. *kisses her cheek* have fun with Cardo. I will be visiting Tannie Fifi.

Me: tell her I'll visit her later on today. And I'm happy she's okay.

Xavier: I will.

He drove me off to the Spur where I was going to meet up with Cardo and his guest. I was surprised when I saw JR standing far away us.

Me: isn't that JR?

Xavier: yes. He'll watch over you while I'm not here

Me: there's Cardo.

Xavier: no offense to the kid but I don't think he could protect you like that

Me: won't he feel offended when he sees JR?

Xavier: no. I already told me the reason I'm doing it

Me: what? That must've offended him.

Xavier: he'll be fine. I know the kid he doesn't take everything to the heart.

Me: I hope so.

He got out and opened the door for me. I kissed him and said goodbye. He watched me walk towards the place JR came closer to me, and I saw Xavier get in his car. Finally we were inside and I couldn't spot Cardo so I think they're a bit late. But i didn't mind because i wasn't in a hurry. I smiled and waved at Cardo when I saw them. His baby mama looked very cute too.

~~

Cardo said he wanted to use the restrooms so that gave me time to connect with his baby mama, Somila. She cleared her throat making me look at her.

Soso: are you sleeping with my man?

Me: excuse me?

Soso: I didn't stutter.

Me: *chuckles* no, hell no. He's just a friend.

Soso: why are you messaging him saying things like you miss him and people who were at the race talked about how cozy you guys were. I even have pictures for proof

She showed me the pictures and i instantly rolled my eyes. It was a picture of me and Cardo hugging and when we were walking with his arm around my shoulder.

Me: look, believe what you want because why would I motivate Ricardo to get you back if I'm having sex with him?

Soso: i... I'm sorry, it's just that he has cheated on me so many times it's hard to believe he really isn't cheating this time

Me: he loves you, he may not say it. But I do see it. I'll make sure he stays on track and he doesn't mess this up.

Soso: thank you. *smiles*

Me: can I see your child?

Soso: oh that little boy is just like his father always landing himself in trouble *laughs*

He showed me cute pictures of the boy. Man he was so adorable.

Soso: his name is Dylan. He will be turning 2 in a few weeks.

Me: *smiles* I have to meet him!

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

The next morning I decided to go visit Tannie Fifi, I missed her and her health really scared me the other day. When the nurse at the front desk told me her room number I went to her. There in her room I saw Ghost all lovey dovey with her. He was also in the small bed she was in and they were kissing and laughing.

Me: not in the hospital *laughs*

Fifi looked at me and smiled a big smile. Even though I was upset she would not tell me, I was happy she was okay.

Fifi: my Zay Zay!

She opened her arms uncomfortably because Ghost was also on the small bed, he got off and sat on the couch holding her hand.

Fifi: don't tell me you left my goddaughter alone in that house!

Me: she's going out with Cardo to meet his baby mama. She will be here later on.

Fifi: I like that one Xavier. You better not mess it up.

Me:... I won't.

Fifi: why did you pause?

Me: I am a man Tannie.

Ghost: he has needs *chuckles*

Fifi: you don't have needs, your ego has needs .

Me: you wouldn't understand.

Fifi: yes I wouldn't because you're choosing sex over the girl you love. You're willing to kill all that love for just cumming?!

Me: she won't find out

Ghost: she will *laughs*

Fifi: what ever is in the dark it will come into the light! Ask your uncle. He almost lost me forever and when I realised he was really sorry that's when I took him back. Ask him how many years it took for me to take him back.

Ghost: 3 fucking years of me watching her date other niggas.

Fifi: and I warned him if something happens to anyone I dated I would never forgive him. The

pain he made me feel I made sure he felt it. All I am saying is sex isn't that important for you to lose someone important over.

Me: 3 years? I can't even go a day without her
chuckles

Fifi: well you need to stop all that crazy bullshit and act right. That is the mother of my grandchildren! *laughs*

I laughed too thinking about my girl. Maybe a few months without sex won't hurt but damn I'm not that type of dude. I am used to getting pussy anytime I want it. This new one woman thing is making me rethink everything. I would kill everyone that thinks they have a chance with my Lona. Maybe Tannie Fifi is right, no sex is better than losing my girl. I didn't even know her and Ghost broke off for 3 years. Maybe it was before I lived with them. I would kill every dude she dates just like that boy Omar. Now

that I think about it I did a good thing killing him because she was starting to fall for that nigga. I texted Nia the message because I needed her to stop texting my phone for money.

Me: stop messaging me. We're done, and our agreement is off. If I hear a word about this from anyone else. I will make sure no one finds your dead body.

After I sent it I immediately deleted it just in case Lona sees my phone. She replied to the text saying I'll be back and I didn't respond. I stayed until the visiting hours ended and we had to leave. On our way out Ghost started talking.

Ghost: you really love this girl?

Me: I really think so.

Ghost: don't think. Know.

Me: i am in love with her.

Ghost: listen and listen carefully. This is the only time I'll be a lame nigga. *chuckles* if you love her you'll wait for her. I know it takes forever. But when she starts trusting you with her vagina that's the best feeling because she's giving you the key to her heart and soul. Fifi was molested by her stepfather. I had to wait for 4 years before I actually had sex with her.

Me: what!?

Ghost; the 3 years of our breakup and the 1 year of us back together.

Me: but you still fucked girls in the 3 year time.

Ghost: that's not important what's important is done repeat my mistake. Girls like her and Fifi are hard to find especially with our profession. She's risking her life by loving you. The least you could do is treat her like the Queen she should be treated like and wait on her before you find her slipping off your hands.

Damn I didn't even think the situation was that deep. I guess I really have to have 0 hoes. But I will do it so I don't lose my baby.

.

.

.

.

[02/20, 06:41] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~
INSERT 33

.

.

.

× 2 WEEKS LATER ×

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV

.

.

I went inside my uncle's office because he said something about meeting up with me. I hope it's important as I think it is.

Me: what's so important I had to cut off my chill time with my wife.

Ghost: *chuckles* I need someone to fly to Russia for me and talk to Valdez

Me: send Scrappy.

Ghost: you're next in line to take over. I want you to create more connections. I can't go because Fifi is still in the hospital and she'll need my full attention when she gets discharged.

Me: I understand. When do I need to leave?

Ghost: tomorrow.

Me: what?

Ghost: short notice I know but you're the one I trust with this. If we can get the Russia connection before others that makes us way ahead and more loads of cash for us.

Me: I'll go. But in just a week I will return.

Ghost: I doubt it will take longer


I know tomorrow Lona goes back to being focused on her studies and I really don't mind but i just don't like leaving her alone especially with Kenny wanting to threaten her to piss me off. In these past 2 weeks I have been faithful, although it's been hard but I guess it's worth it knowing she trusts me. Luckily for me Nia wasn't the dumb type so she didn't threaten to expose what we did. She hasn't even called my phone and i am very happy. I did the handshake with my uncle to bid him goodbye. I drove off home and when I arrived that's when JR left,

inside the house I smelt something delicious so I'm guessing she cooked. I smirked when I walked in the kitchen she was dancing along to Pablo by Zoocci Coke Dope. I didn't even know she listens to these songs. I quietly walked to her and wrap her arms around her waist. She jumped a bit making me laugh at how scared she is even when I have someone ready to watch her.

Me: something smells nice.

Lona: I cooked, and I'm very sure you'll enjoy it.

Me: better not put any muthi in here.

I lightly bit her neck, she giggled removed me. I smiled at how beautiful she looked. I sat on the kitchen chairs just admiring her. I secretly took a photo of her and posted it with the caption "wife to be  ". I had blocked Muller, Bobby,

King and all the other Brims crew boys. I knew Lona wasn't comfortable with telling her brothers yet so I was respecting her decision.

Me: I have to go to Russia for a week

She kept quiet and I wasn't even sure she heard me because of the loudness of her speaker.

Me: Lona.

Lona: to do what?

Me: business trip. Ghost can't go.

Lona: i heard bad stuff about Russian gangsters. I just don't want you hurt.

Me: I will be safe. I promise I will come back in one piece *smiles*

She closed the pots and looked at me. I could see worry all over her face. I motioned her to come closer to me by using my two fingers. She obeyed and i opened my legs and pulled her closer by placing her in between my legs.

Me: I am going to be fine I take business trips all the time and I come back safely all the time.

Lona: who will you go with?

Me: I will go alone.

she looked at me like I was crazy. I just chuckled, kissing her passionately hoping she will calm down and be okay with me being gone for a week

Me: I will be okay.

Lona: you kissing me won't make me less

worried. Nice try though.

I laughed, and she joined me in the laughter.
She went back to handling the pots.

~~

After dinner we were cuddling in our bed with
me brushing her back

Lona: what if something happens to you?

Me: it won't. Stop worrying, look on the good
side you'll focus on your studies without me
being a distraction.

Lona: my brothers return tomorrow and you
leave tomorrow

Me: I know I'll be leaving you in safe hands.

Lona: will you be gone when I come back from
my lectures?

Me: sadly yes.

Lona: I hope this week flys by.

Me: but it doesn't mean we will stop communicating. I will be calling you a lot of times. I will video-call you, make sure you're okay. And I want you to call me every time there's any problem I will sort it out

Lona: how when you'll be in Russia?

Me: *smiles* I have connections everywhere. I'll do anything you want, fix every problem you have all you have to do is call me.

Lona: I will.

She kissed me and I kissed her back but I kept the kiss short so i don't get hard and mistakenly force her into sex.

Me: JR will always be by your side at all times, if he's not call me

Lona: *chuckles* okay.

Me: I am serious. Your safety means a lot to me.

Lona: I will baby *pecks his lips* even though it think it's useless because Kenny hasn't bothered us in weeks. He's probably onto better things now.

Me: I am not taking any chances.

.

.

~~

.

-- KING'S POV --

.

.

I looked at my mother finish up packing my things. I smiled at her caring so much because I told her I will pack my own things. But she insisted on packing my clothes and Muller's

clothes. Muller was out saying goodbye to his fling. I didn't even want to say goodbye to anyone in this place so I just stayed at home with my mother. You can say I'm a mama's boy

Mama: xa uphinda ubuya ngoJune ubuye nomfazi Yanga'inkosi. (next time you come back in June bring back a wife Yanga'inkosi.)

Me: *chuckles* mhlambi. Kodwa andithembisi (maybe. But I'm not promising.)

Mama: ndidinga abantwana abancinci aba balekayo apha (I need little kids running around here)

Me: andibafuni abantwana okwangoku (I don't want any kids yet.)

Mama: hay ungakhe undenzele lonto mna Yanga! Umdala ngoku funeka ukhe uze nabantwana nomfazi. (No don't do that to me Yanga! You're old now you need bring kids and

a wife)

I just kept quiet because I didn't want to be rude and offend her feelings. My mother is a very controlling person and she gets very disappointed when she doesn't have things her way.

Me: when Lona returns in June I don't want what happened to repeat.

Mama: ndinixelele andimfuni lamntana endlini yam uyadelela too much. (I told you I don't want that child in my house she's too disrespectful)

Me: she is my little sister and just like she respects you. You have to respect her.

She looked shocked that I would speak to her like that but she needed hear this. She can't keep treating my baby sister like she's not

human. She continued doing what she was doing and I could see she was upset. I ignored her and went outside for a quick smoke. While I was smoking I received a call from Gunz. He is one of my close friends and he's also be our gang.

Me: mjita.

Gunz: hela bra incosi yakokwenu ijola noRellik?
(Yo dude. Is your sister dating dating Rellik?)

Me: he? Ayiko lokaka man. (What? That shit is false man)

Gunz: inye intwana indibonise ipicture yakhe uRellik emthimba ngumfazi wakhe. (Some dude showed me a picture of her and Rellik is claiming it's his wife)

Me: ayo nyan yonke lonto (all of that is not true)
I know my little sister she would never give Rellik any time of the day. Trust me it's fake.

Send me this picture so I can see it.

Gunz: what ever you say, ntwana. But if it's her then you're in deep shit. I have been hearing Rellik has gone soft for some bitch. They will target her at all corners.

Me: I know it's not my sister she snot that stupid to date Rellik knowing the dangers he comes with.

Gunz: fede mjita.

We both hung up. I refuse to believe Lona it's that dumb to be one of Rellik's hoes. She knows better, I know she's a bit self couscous and doesn't believe she's beautiful but dating a dude like Rellik it's like a death wish for her, and i would let my sister ruin her own life like that she has so much ahead of her. She has good academic grades, she can not possible hate her life that much that she gives her dignity away to him. He fucks every girl in Cape town. And i

would never let him do that to my sister. He would never because I don't even believe he's dating her. She isn't that dumb. I won't even tell Muller about this because it's false and stupid. My phone vibrated and I looked at the picture with the caption. The girl was not looking towards the camera. I know Lona had a new blonde weave but I know that's not her. She would tell me if she's making the biggest mistake of her life. We need to hurry and go to cape town and ask her what the hell is going on.

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I quickly rushed into the campus today was the

first day back. I got the shock of my life when I saw my pictures with Xavier all over the campus. It was the same picture Skylar posted a while back. I stared with my heart broken at the words written in bold "WHORE OF THE SEMESTER, DIDN'T WAIT EVEN 2 DAYS BEFORE SHE FUCKED HIM AFTER OMAR'S DEATH". Everyone looked at me as soon as I saw the pictures. Some were laughing and some were gossiping. I looked at JR, who was on his phone. I think he was calling Xavier. I knew I was about to be late for class. I took phone and hung up the call. He was really calling Xavier.

Me: she wants me to cry. So for once I'll make her disappointed and not give them the reaction they want. I had the best Easter holiday and I won't let this ruin it for me. And Xavier is on his way to Russia let's not disturb him and make him come back he's probably in a flight anyway

I

I walked to class with JR behind me. I quickly wiped the small tears I had before anyone noticed. It hurt to be honest because I really don't understand why so many people hate me. Is it because I'm so focused on my own life that I am not involved in drama and everyone wants me to be in drama? I won't entertain it. I need to learn to deal with things without calling Xavier because there will be times he'll need to have business trips then what will I do? Fifi told me when I visited her that she understands that Xavier was the reason for my happiness and the reason I am okay with my past situations now. But what will I do when Xavier is gone? How will I deal with real life situation, that will only need me to deal with it? That made me think a lot. I need to stop depending so much on Xavier, not that he's doing anything wrong you know. He is still perfect but I need to grow up and face real

life problems without a panic attack or tears. I will contact Dr Zwide because we need to get back into our therapy sessions. I need to be independent. When I fully love myself I know I won't let people's opinion affect the opinion I have on myself. I miss my journal as well. It made me sane and prevented me from exploding so much. I need a therapy session today, maybe that will help with the nightmares I keep having because of the dead bodies and the heart. JR wasn't allowed and he knew that so he walked me to my class while plenty of eyes looked at me in disgust. He left when he saw me sit down and face the front. After all my lectures for the day I was happy because I wanted to go home. I was tired of seeing people think of me as a whore. JR drove me off at my brothers' home because they were back and he drove off. He doesn't need to watch over me, that's what my brothers are here for.

Me: guys you won't believe this!

They didn't respond so I followed them into the lounge. Then I remembered I couldn't talk to them about what happened because it is connected to Xavier.

Muller: thetha (talk)

Me: uhm.. I. I am going to tutor 3 students for R50 an hour.

Muller: like the back of my hand....

Me: I am not lying!

Muller: but that's not what you were going to say

Me: it was.

King: then why did you stutter?

Me: I can't stutter now?

Muller: that's how I know you're lying and I also known another way to see when you're lying and I know you're lying now.

Me: mxm. Just drop it then

Muller: *chuckles* you'll tell us. You were never the one to keep secrets.

If only he knew the loads of secrets I keep from them he would get a heart attack or possibly leave the Americans Gang. That's my worst fear when I brothers find out. They would want out of the gang and that would cause a lot of problems and trouble. Not only that I'm sure they would cause war. No one wants their little sister dating a bad guy especially when the bad guy could possibly be your boss in a few months. I went upstairs to study because that was usually my routine and I knew tomorrow I need to start at the gym. It's been a while since I went there. I might even get back to being fat if

I don't return. After 3 hours I was interrupted by a call from Bobby. I furrowed my eyebrows wondering why he was calling me.

Me: Bobby...

Bobby: Rellik? Really?! You're in deep shit.

Me: what? Huh? How did you-

Bobby: find out? He's been posting the fuck out of you and someone sent me screenshot asking if you weren't Muller and King's baby sister. They recognised you from the party.

Me: oh my God. They can't find out Bobby they will kill me. Please don't tell them.

Bobby: what the fuck were you thinking fucking Rellik?! Out of all people, him?! Why not Cardo or one of those varsity boys you used to talk about. Dating him is just making your life complicated. You don't want that trust me.

Me: he isn't that bad, trust me. He loves me and

he makes sure I am always happy. I can't lose what we have. It would really break me. I swear.

Bobby: then I guess you have to tell your brothers.

Me: what! ? No!

Bobby: let me explain what's going to happen. .. they're going to find out elsewhere and beat up Rellik or shoot him or Rellik kills them. A giant war gets created within the gang and who will be blamed?

Me: ... me

Bobby: I will be there to support you.

Me: so you're willing to accept us? *smiles*

Bobby: fuck no but I know how stubborn you are. And I've been hearing a lot of shit about how you turned him soft. I think it's just a fucking act. But if I have to accept it for you, I will try.

Me: thank you Bobby. I really appreciate it.

Bobby: I will be there in an hour to calm them down when you tell them.

Me: today? !

Bobby: news travel fast. They need to hear it from you.

Me: okay.

We both hung up and it started shaking from fear. I am so scared what if I don't get the reaction i don't want? Should I even tell them now? I think it's still too early

[02/20, 06:42] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER
~

INSERT 34

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I walked up and down the room scared that my brothers would kill me then kill Xavier. Muller promised to never hit me but I think today he'll break that promise. I walked downstairs and they were playing Fifa and they were even arguing with each other about their players. I looked at them, I don't know why but tears fell because I was so scared of them. Eventually they noticed me standing there with tears falling down. Muller placed his joystick down with a confused facial expression. He rushed to me, and weirdly King sat down looking at us.

Me: we need to talk. *sniffs*

Muller: okay then why are you crying?

confused

The house phone rang and I looked at them.

King: I'll go get it

After a long time of me wiping my tears and Muller always asking me what's wrong. I couldn't tell him when we're alone because I'm scared of what he'll do to me when he finds out. King and Bobby joined us in the living room.

Muller: Bobby?

Bobby: mjita.

King: kuhambani? (What's going on?)

Bobby looked at me. I looked down playing with my fingers.

Me: I have to tell you guys something important

King: what?

Me: promise me you won't be angry and possibly throw me out the house.

King: he? (What?)

Muller: you're our little sister. We can't throw you out even if we wanted to *chuckles*

Me: promise me you'll think rationally before doing anything. Keep that promise you made of never hitting me.

Muller: Lelona? Are you pregnant!? *angry*

He stood up and I wished the couch would swallow me up. I shook my head with tears falling hard. He still looked very angry.

Me: I... I have been dating Xavier for about a month now. *sniffs*

King: so it's true. You're fucking Rellik!? *angry*

Muller: what!?

He looked at me in so much anger I had to get up and move from him but he roughly pulled me back to the couch. Bobby quickly pushed him off before he did something wrong he would regret.

Muller: don't fuck with me bruh!

Bobby: hella uzomanzakalisa (you'll hurt her)
let's go outside for fresh air.

Muller: fuck that! Lelona are you fucking crazy!
Guys like him don't give a fuck about your feelings he will fuck you and leave you!

Me: *sniffs* he loves me. I know it.

He angrily threw our family pictures that were

on the counter and threw them on the wall. I was now feeling fear. And as usual King was quiet. I knew he wasn't much of a talker and I'm happy for that but my only worry is that he'll influence Muller to leave the gang and that will only lead to trouble.

Muller: he is feeding you lies! There are plenty of guys Lona. Please just not him! Do you know what you're signing yourself up for? You're signing up yourself for death! I won't fucking let you put yourself in danger like that! Fuck no!

I cried hoping it would calm him down. But he was even more angry.

Muller: he's not going to get away with this! I will skin him alive!

He was about to leave but I stopped him.

Me: he's in Russia for a business trip.

Mulle: he ran away because he knows I would've dealt with him accordingly! He's taking advantage of my little sister like she's some toy. I will fuck him up!

He angrily punched the wall hurting his hand and it started bleeding. I knew I couldn't talk to him when he's like this so I knew I could only talk to him tomorrow.

Muller: you're going to stop all this fucked up relationship you guys have. Because it is nothing but nonsense.

Me: I won't. I love him and it's time you actually realised I have grown up. *attitude*

Muller: he? (What?)

Because it's replied with attitude he was very angry and started coming closer to me only to be stopped by Bobby again.

Muller: yey! Sundinyela Lelona! Asilingani! Ndihloniphe. Ndigu'bhuti wakho. (don't shit on me Lelona! We not the same age! Respect me. I am your older brother!)

Me: act like it then. *attitude*

Bobby: Lelona! Hayi! (No)

In his anger Muller threw an item I didn't see properly. Luckily for me I ducked but it hit my arm painfully. I started holding back my tears. Bobby pushed him out of the lounge because things were really out of control. King looked at me and I could see he was disappointed. He

was about to walk out and i called him he turned and looked at me.

Me: i am sorry...

King: for what?

Me: falling in love with a guy who makes me happy i guess.

King: you're 18 he's 25. He has fucked half of Cape Town girls and you're still getting used to being in an environment with loads of people. You still have studies to finish. You say it is love but I am sure he still fucks other bitches and he'll come to you claiming he loves you. I am very disappointed never have I thought you would choose a guy over your own flesh and blood after all the things we went through just for you. He just came around and you're choosing him...

Me: I am not. I love you guys and I also love him.

Please don't make me choose. Please *cries*

He shook his head and left me there feeling like my world is ending. I think it would be best if I don't sleep here tonight. I walked upstairs with my heart so broken it felt like I wanted to die. When I was in my room, I could still hear Muller shouting

Muller: my sister mjita! My fucking baby sister! He knows I would kill for my little sister. He knows I don't play when it concerns her and he had to mess with her! Bra iyadelela lentwana! (That boy is disrespectful) and I am going to fix him!

Why did this have to happen to me! ?

.

.

~~

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

After I settled in my hotel room. I unpacked my clothes and called Lona even though I know it's probably night time in South Africa. After many complications I could finally make an international call, she answered the call and I could sense she wasn't feeling well.

Me: Lona.

Lona: hey *sniffs*

Me: why are you crying? What's wrong?

Lona: nothing I can't handle. How's Russia?

Me: Lelona...

Lona: I can't tell you because you'll come back and I don't want to ruin your business trip.

Me: you not telling me what the hell is going on is going to make me come back.

Lona: they know.

Me: who knows? What are you saying?

Lona: my brothers. I had to tell them.*sniffs* they're so angry I think they hate me.

me: baby, calm down they could never hate you. They're your brothers.

Lona: Muller was so angry he started throwing things. I am so scared he might sneak in my room and beat the fuck out of me.

Me: then he'll have me to deal with if he lays one finger on you.

Lona: you're not helping.

Me: I am serious. I respect him but if he disrespects me by touching you he needs me to

deal with him.

Lona: maybe I shouldn't sleep here tonight or Bobby should sleep over. I feel like I am betraying my brothers and I'm not being grateful for the things they have done for me.

Me: you are betraying them by being happy?
Fuck them.

Lona: Xavier! I am seriously worried my brothers will hate me forever and I don't want to lose them. Please stop making matters worse. Please.

Me: I'm sorry baby. I promise when I get back I will sort this minor problem. Okay?

Lona: mh hm *sniffs*

Me: just hang in there I will be back in a few days okay? I love you.

Lona: I love you too.

Me: how about you tell me about first day to distract you from your childish brothers.

Lona: it was... okay.

Me: what happened?

Lona: nothing. It was just a day full of lectures.

After talking a lot I managed to make her laugh and take her mind away from her brother's crazy tantrum. I knew Muller would react worse than King because King has using his mind more than actions whereas Muller is more violent. But I swear if he touches my wife, it won't end well at all. I don't care even if he's her brother and he's used to beating her up but now she with me and I'll make sure nothing happens to her non of her family members will maker her feel like she's oppressed. I will always make sure she remains with that beautiful smile. I called King because he seems more reasonable and he won't do something stupid like throwing the phone away. You'd think King is the older brother because he's more mature.

King: what?

Me: why is my girl crying because of your brother's actions?

King: your girl? *chuckles* you're really fucking my little sister. She's fucking 18 bruh! She hasn't even finished varsity and already you want to ruin her

Me: I don't want to ruin her. I really feel something for her. If she's really close to you you'd know we haven't fucked yet. I am serious about her.

King: just like you were serious about Nandi? Dineo? Sino? Nia? Dee? Prisy? Mel? Bri? And more! Fuck off mjita! You're trying to make my sister your hoe!

Me: you know she's different. I can't let her go, I won't. Muller and you will have to grow up and accept we're not breaking up, and we never will.

He hung up, I expected him to react better but I guess I'll have a lot to deal with when I return to Cape Town. No I have to prepare for the meeting I have with Valdez.

.

.

.

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I smoked the joint hoping it will calm me down. I am the type the expresses anger through violence and I didn't mean to violently pull my sister to the couch or throw something at her but I want her to see the big mistake she's making. I have known Rellik for almost 2 or 3 years now and he's always been the one to change girls like he's changing his underwear. I

know I am being a hypocrite because I also have plenty of girls but I don't want my vulnerable little sister to experience the pain these girls feel when they're being played. She's too precious for that. She's always been the different one in the family and I will always want what's best for her and I know Relik isn't what is best for her. Try being in my shoes, your little sister who grew up being bullied and was once suicidal now has a gangster boyfriend who is 7 years older than her! I am used to her not wanting to leave the house and always close to us scared of people. I don't want her to get a boyfriend like Relik. I don't care how, but I will make sure whatever they have ends by the end of the week. She deserves good guys that won't get her kidnapped or killed. She was good with guys like Omar. Kids with bright futures not men like us. Being a gangster comes with disadvantages especially when you have weaknesses. She will get badly hurt and I won't

allow her to make that mistake. I just can't because if I do then I know I failed as a big brother.

Me: Bobby, I hang out a lot of times with this nigga. I invited this nigga to my home! Then he goes tries to fuck my sister! I should've known when he took her that mall something would've happened! I shouldn't have listened to Ghost! I should've taken her myself now she's going to be ruining her entire life for a nigga that won't even care for her.

Bobby: people are seeing change appearantly they were in a spinning show and people were surprised at how soft he was for her. Opening doors and all of that.

Me: because he was to get into her panties! He wants to fuck her then leave her going crazy for him.

Bobby: maybe it will be for the best she comes

to sleep at my house, I'll ask my girl to sleep over so she can feel comfortable.

Me: why? I won't hurt her. She's my baby sister.

Bobby: Muller you let your anger get the best of you.

Me: I will not hurt her! She's remaining in this house to face the consequences.

Bobby: it will be best if you don't talk to her now she's still scared of you.

I sighed at Bobby annoying me like I was going to kill Lona but I just wanted to know why the hell she would do such a stupid thing.

~~

The next morning I had texted all of Rellik's hoes. Nia was the only one who replied back though. I think all the other ones were scared of Rellik.

Me: how about we meet up? In about an hour?

Nia^{OBJ} : okay... just tell me where.

I went downstairs because I have already done my morning routine. Downstairs I saw King only.

Me: where is she?

King: probably in the gym. She doesn't want to face us. Her room is empty and all her gadgets are on her bed.

Me: I'm meeting up with Nia..

King: nia who?

Me: Rellik's hoe. See what she has for me.

King: let me know what happens.

Me: I'm leaving the Americans gang. No way in hell will I look at him without beating him up.

King: let's think about this. We leave American gang. It will hurt the Brims financially and you know they're only 2 ways out. And I'm not heading back to jail nor am I dying any time soon.

Muller: then what the fuck should we do!?

King: stay. That way we can watch him, he messes up. They break up, and he will mess up. I know him, he can't even resisted a girl.

~~

I watched nia catwalk into the restaurant. She saw me and came to sit in the table I was in.

Nia: what is this about.

Me: thank you for meeting with me.

Nia: yeah yeah. Now what?

Me: when was the last time you fucked Rellik?

Nia: excuse me?

I pushed the envelope with R2000 in it towards her, she smiled and looked inside it.

Nia; uhm... don't get me in trouble.

Me: you won't. I just want to know.

Nia: a few weeks ago. Probably 2 weeks ago. At his club, it was a threesome with Sino.

I knew that nigga is playing my little sister and her will pay for it. Now I have to make sure Lona finds out what type of bastard he is and break off what ever fucked up relationship they have.

Me: do you have proof?

Nia: no pictures just messages of him sending me money and my call history before he said

our arrangement is over.

Me: look my sister is dating him and she thinks he's all loyal to her. Mind saying all of this to her? I sill pay you more.

Nia: he'll kill me Muller.

Me: trust me, she won't know your name.

Nia: I don't know...

Me: the money will be worth it.

She nodded and we left and went to the house. I was happy Lona was back from the gym, I could see she was still sweaty from gym she was drinking water in the kitchen. She looked shocked seeing Nia, but I didn't care because I am doing this for her.

Me: you know her?

She just nodded her head. I could see she didn't want to talk because she was scared of my reaction. I am still pissed off but I would never hit my baby sister because I know how vulnerable she is.

Me: you know she fucked your boyfriend you claim so much?

Lona: well she WAS his hoe

She put the emphasis on was, I chuckled at how she defends him so much yet he cheats on her like it's nothing.

Me: wasn't he with you 2 weeks ago?

That's when her face changed into a disappointment face. She looked very hurt, her

eyes started becoming glossy.

Lona: if this is your plan on breaking us apart. It's not working. I know he would never do that to me. He cut off his hoes a long time ago. And you, you have no shame coming to my house to spread lies about my man so you can have him. Nice try, but you'll only be a hoe to him. I am more disappointed at you, Muller because as my brother you're supposed to support me being happy!

Me: show her. *sighs*

Nia who has been smirking and quiet all this time went closer to Lona.

Nia: he sent me R3000 for rent. And look at our call history 2 weeks ago. *smiles* be careful who go hard for, because he didn't even

mention you that night. *chuckles* he was pretty occupied... *smirks*

Me: okay that's enough.

Lona started crying silently and Nia didn't even care, she just started laughing.

Nia: nana, time to face reality. Guys like Rellik could never love. Now stop believing his lies, he wants to fuck you then he'll leave you. Trust me. You're still young, you'll find good guys. Guys like him can only be handled by me and his other girls. Don't ruin yourself by thinking you're dating him.

Lona: he said he loves me. I don't understand.
sniffs

Nia: if he did, he wouldn't do this to you. Look you're a good girl, and there's plenty of fish in the sea. You'll get over it.

I walked her out, then I gave her uber money and told her I'll transfer money into her account she should text me the details. When I walked in the house, I could see Lona was really hurt, she was still crying silently with her arms on the counter and her head on it. Her body was moving a bit, that's how I knew she was still crying. I pulled her up and hugged her

Me: come on, princess. He doesn't deserve your tears.

Lona: I don't want any other fish I want him.
cries

That's when she started crying hard, and even worrying me that she'll fall into depression again.

Lona: m-my my heart so much.... I love him so much, I really do.. an-and I thought he loved me.

.

[02/20, 06:43] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 35

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

The following morning I woke up extra tired. The meeting went well so they decided we should celebrate and a party was held. I enjoyed myself and I am happy i managed to not fuck any girl. Although plenty of vaginas were offered to me, I declined because I knew what

was waiting for me back home. And I can't wait until I go home because I miss my wife so much. I hope Muller and King don't stress her too much, on the bright side I am happy they found out because they were bound to find out anyway. Now they can get over it and let me and Lona love each other in peace. After my morning routine. I only wore my basketball shorts and Gucci men slides. I heard my door knock and I went to open it, but I was surprised to find Alfonso, who was working for Valdez as his second in command.

Alfonso: Rellik.

Me: Alfonso.

Alfonso: may I come in?

Me: sure.

I stepped aside and he came inside. I was

confused why he was here, I thought everything that needed to be said at the meeting was said. I looked at him to continue talking so he can tell me why the fuck he's in my hotel room.

Alfonso: I have a proposition for you.

Me: I'm listening.

Alfonso: I have been second in command for a long time now... and it's time for me to take over.

Me: what has that got to do with me?

Alfonso: I need you to kill Valdez for me.

Me: what?

Alfonso: when I take charge. I will change the deal. The stuff will be added 40% in capacity and 70% of the profit will be yours.

The deal we had was that the drugs we will get

from Valdez will not be a lot and we will get 60% of the profit since its their drugs we're distributing. I knew the the deal was shitty but it was either that or not deal. And the Russians got good stuff.

Me: why don't you ask your boys?

Alfonso: they're too scared to take him down.

Me: give me a day to think about it.

Alfonso: don't take too long. I want everything to be done precisely.

Me: fede.

Alfonso: what?

Me: never mind. You know your way out.

He nodded and walked out. If I kill Valdez it will be a good deal for me. But I can ignore the disadvantages of the whole mafia that will be

behind my ass ready to kill me because I murdered their king and Alfonso doesn't look like the type that protects his accomplices. But if I don't kill Valdez I'll remain with a shitty deal, and more like a loss for me. I want that 70% or 80% profit. I need to show Ghost I can handle the gang on my own, so I won't ask him for advice. I plan on making Scrappy my second in command

I should hear what he has to say.

Scrappy: poi (boy)

Me: luister hier (listen here) Valdez's second wants me to body him but I could have the whole mafia on my ass. The only problem is laaitie is offering a better deal than Valdez

Scrappy: why don't you tell Valdez about the arrangement in exchange of the deal you want.

Me: I have to create proof first.

Scrappy: make it laaitie. And don't die out there
laughs

Me: *laughs* fede poi (sharp boy)

We both hung up and I'm thinking of taking his advice. It makes more sense. Now I will wait for Alfonso's arrival tomorrow, record him then give Valdez an offer that way I can win both ways. After a while of thinking about this I wanted to hear my wife's voice. I tried calling her but it went straight to voice-mail. I was confused with because I talked to her yesterday. Then I remembered that maybe her brothers grounded her and she doesn't have a phone. I placed my phone down, then I called JR because I wanted to investigate something on him.

JR: Rellik.

Me: how was Lona's first day?

JR: uLona yena uthi ibinjani imini yakhe? (what did Lona say her day was like?)

Me: don't act smart.

JR: *chuckles* kutheni unga buzi yena? (why don't you ask her?)

Me: because I know she going to lie.

I know something happened because when I was asked her about it, she replied weirdly and I know JR will tell me the truth since I pay him to watch her daily.

JR: azinye incosi zifake isithombe sakhe nawe emadongeni kwiCampus futhi bambiza isfebe. Yinto enoOmar masengicabanga (Some kids put up her picture with you on the walls of the campus and called her a whore. Something Omar related I think)

Me: fuck! How did she handle it? Do I need to come back?

JR: undothusile khang alile. Undiqandile ndiku'fownela wathi yinto encane ezodlula. Akaphaphanga elihlobo bendicinga ngalo (surprisingly she wasn't a crybaby about it. She even prevented me from calling you and said it's just a minor problem and it will blow over. She didn't overreact like I thought she would.)

Me: why is she keeping things from me? It's something I could've handled.

JR: mhlambi yilonto bengafuni uyazi (maybe that's why she didn't want you to find out)
chuckles

Me: tomorrow give her your phone so she can call me I don't care even if it's night time in here. I need to talk to her.

JR: fede.

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I continued looking at my books trying so hard to take my mind off this, but I would eventually end up crying. Yesterday my world came crushing down that I turned my phone completely off, I didn't even want him to call me. I am disgusted with him, and I am even more disgusted with myself for trying to change him and for being so naive thinking I could change him. I am so naive that I fucking hate myself. I looked at my wrists and got reminded of the last time I tried to kill myself. Muller came in the room, I was confused why because it was 2AM I thought he'd be sleeping.

Muller: why aren't you asleep yet?

Me: I am trying to study.

Muller: how's it going?

Me: I am sorry, I kept the secret from you guys. I thought you would kill me, and I guess I should've told you sooner to prevent myself from this heartbreak. I can't believe I was so stupid!

Muller: we all make mistakes. You'll learn from it.

Me: I want to even change my number. I want nothing to do with him. I don't even want to see him!

Muller: I'll get you a new sim card tomorrow. Don't worry.

I nodded and he got up and searched for something. I was confused as to what he was looking for.

Me: what are you looking for?

Muller: found them.

He held up my antidepressants for me to see. I just looked down. He opened them and gave me 2, then rushed downstairs and came back with a glass of water

Muller: drink up.

Me: why? I am fine.

Muller: I'm not taking any chances. Drink up.

I drank the pills and showed him that I really swallowed them. He nodded, kissed my forehead.

Muller: I love you Lil sis.

Me: I love you too. Is King still mad at me?

Muller: you know he's more disappointed you kept a secret for so long. You guys were the closest so he probably feels like you don't give a fuck about him.

Me: I'll talk to him.

Muller: tomorrow. He went out and he hasn't returned.

Me: oh, okay. *sighs*

He went out of my room, and I tried studying again because I couldn't let this get in the way of my studies. Eventually I started understanding what the hell I was studying. The next morning I knew I had to go to school even though I wanted to stay in my room until the world ends. It was very hard getting up because all I could think about was Xavier. After my

morning routine i wore my tights and sports bra then a sweater and sneakers. Then I went to the gym, I rolled my eyes when I saw JR. I wanted nothing that had to do with Rellik even the man he hired to protect me.

JR: boss lady.

I ignored him and continued walking. I knew my brother were still asleep and he wouldn't be able to witness this. I walked faster with him behind my tail. It's crazy for him to leave his car and chase me down the street.

Me: I won't need you anymore JR!

JR: he? Ayihambi elohlobo lento (what? That's not how this goes.)

Me: me and Rellik broke up. I am done with him, so I won't be needing any thing or person that is

involved with him. Or I met through him

JR: hey! Phambe uziphambanise kwenzekeni?
(woah. Before you act crazy, what happened?)

Me: ask him. He'll know. I am done with that person and I am never going to humiliate myself like that again.

Then I walked away from him and towards my gym. I need to keep up with my health because the way I am feeling, I really would love to eat some chocolate and ice-cream. I feel really dead inside.

~~

After the gym and the lectures. I had to tutor those kids and luckily for me they weren't that dumb. It was 2 girls and one gay guy. I tutored them at the same time, and I knew next time I had to separate them because then I'll know their weakness and tackle them down. Their

names were Amanda, Yoliswa and Brandon. I spend 3 hours with them so in total I made R450. After that I called Dr Zwide because I wanted to talk to her before I was lost myself.

Dr Z: Miss Daniel.

Me: are you available for any appointment? I need a session today before I lose my peace.

Dr Z: I do have an available spot right now, if you hurry I'll be able to fit in

I hurried to her and I was thankful JR didn't follow me anywhere anymore because every time I thought of him I kept thinking of Rellik.

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

Finally I heard my door being knocked, I placed my phone on record and placed it inside my jeans. I was wearing ripped jeans with a black t-shirt with a roaring lion picture on it. I opened the door and I saw Alfonso. I moved a bit so he could come inside.

Alfonso: what do you say?

Me: are you serious? You seriously want me to kill Valdez? He is your boss and this could backfire when the truth comes out.

Alfonso: it won't. You're in?

Me: no.

He looked surprised that I would reject his good offer.

Me: I hate traitors and I will never work with one. If you hate Valdez so much, stop being a pussy and do it yourself. Now get the fuck out of my room.

He just chuckled and shook his head then he walked out. After a long time, that's when I decided to pay Valdez a visit. He owes me for not taking the better deal. When I arrived in his large mansion as usual I was searched and all that security shit. When I was led to his office he was smoking with Alfonso. I knew I could not tell him in front of Alfonso

Me: I need to talk you alone. It's about the deal.

Valdez: Alfonso will be present in what ever meeting I have.

Me: *chuckles* this meeting doesn't need him.

Alfonso stood up, and just had this smile and left the room. I played the recording for Valdez. He didn't look surprised though which was weird.

Me: 40% more on the stuff, and 70% on the profit. That's what the new deal is for me taking your side and not killing you. I deserve that because his deal was more good

I couldn't say that's what Alfonso offered because he would lower them down. He chuckled and drank his whiskey. Then I was surprised by the book shelf opening up, it was a door. Alfonso walked in. I was confused as fuck.

Valdez: you passed the test, little boy. It looks like we're in business.

Me: test?

Valdez: I needed assurance to trust you. Now I know I can. New deal it is then. But I am not adding more capacity. The profits I can give that one to you.

I shook my head and just chuckled because I can couldn't believe this was all a fucking test.

Valdez: tell Ghost we have a deal.

Me: will do

~~

I had already booked my flight back because what I needed do to here was done. And all 3 days without my baby was not fun at all. I tried calling her again but it went straight to voice-mail again. That's when I decided to call JR.

JR: bozza

Me: I thought I said give Lona your phone to call me. I didn't receive any call.

JR: uthe kum afakuni nix enawe. Nohlukene
(she told me she wants nothing to do with you.
You guys broke up.)

Me: what the? Fuck no! Her brothers must've
said something threatening to her. I'll be back
by tomorrow and talk to her. Don't stop
watching her, Kenny might sneak an attack

JR: ndiyakuzwa (I hear you.)

We both hung up and I was very angry that Lona
would think we would just break up like that. I
love that girl and we're not breaking up anytime
soon. I paced up and down angry that Muller
and King would be that childish to take their
sister's happiness. I called Cardo to check on
her because knowing her she's probably crying

her eyes out. And I'm not even there to console her.

Cardo: Rellik?

Me: check on Lona quick.

Cardo: what, why?

Me: I need to know she's okay and what the fuck is going on. Go to her house and talk to her.

Cardo: she seemed fine at school well when I was there. Even though Skylar did some fucked up shit by humiliating her like that.

Me: who the fuck is Skylar?

Cardo: Omar's friend. She hung up a pic-

Me: I know that. She's the one who did it? I will deal with that when i get back tomorrow. Now I want you to go over to her house and check on her.

Cardo: at this time? Muller will murder me.

Me: he won't. He'll have me to deal with, trust me. I just need assurance she's okay.

Cardo: why can't you call her?

Me: voice-mail and she's acting crazy telling JR we broke up. Now stop asking me stupid questions and go there.

Cardo: I'll call you when I have feedback.

Me: call me as soon as you're alone with her. I want to talk to her .

Cardo: okay

After the call. I packed my stuff I waited for Cardo's call which was more like the long walk to freedom.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

It was late at night, and weirdly I couldn't sleep at all, all i could dream about was him. I dreamed about us kissing and being all in love and cuddling. I went downstairs and drank some water. I kept thinking about the dream and touched my lips. I miss him so much, I wish I could say I stopped loving him in these 3 or 4 days but no. I just missed him more, I wish he was here to at least beg me and know he really does love me. So I can reject him and feel some part of power for leaving him because there's no way in hell will I get back with someone who chooses hoes over something meaningful. I went back upstairs and when I was about to sleep when I heard the house phone ring. I was already feeling tired, my brothers will answer it anyway. After a long time, I was shaken up from my sleep. I looked at who it was, I rolled my eyes at Muller waking me up from my sleep.

Me: mh?

Muller: Cardo is here for you.

Me: he can come in my room.

Muller: no boys in the room.

Me: it's just Cardo.

I sighed and laid back on on bed. I was not waking up from the comfort of my bed. In about a few minutes. I was shaken again. Angrily I got up, and saw Cardo.

Me: I am trying to sleep.

Cardo: *laughs* I know

He got on the bed but there was distance between us.

Me: you better have a good reason for waking me up.

Cardo: yes. I do.

He started dialing something on his phone. I looked at him feeling very sleepy. I laid my head on my pillow while he laid against the headboard. In my sleep I felt him putting his phone in my ear.

Xavier: baby...

I woke up and froze not knowing what the hell to say.

Xavier: Lona, what the hell am I hearing about us breaking up?

Me: ask that hoe you fucked 2 weeks ago.

Then I dropped that call. I glared at Cardo angrily that he would do that.

Me: don't make cut you off too.

Cardo: I am not getting involved he just needed to talk to you so badly. I didn't want to seem like a bad dude by saying no. How are you holding up? Sorry I didn't come earlier I didn't even know. And I haven't been seeing you clearly at campus.

Me: I am... okay I guess.

I sighed looking at Cardo because that was a lie. I love him so much and I feel so heartbroken that he would do that. And I miss him so much too!

. [02/20, 06:44] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 36

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I threw my phone angrily on the bed. I could tell she was serious I can't wait for tomorrow and I can't even schedule my flight to come earlier because I need to sort this out now. I can't wait until I return because I am not losing Lona, we're going to be together forever! I called Scrappy because I wanted him to sort this Nia & Sino situation out for me. I want them both

dead because they're the only ones I fucked 2 weeks ago, and either one of them. I know they will both deny it so I'll just kill the both of them.

Scrappy: wat? (What?)

Me: kill Sino and Nia.

Scrappy: what?!

Me: Lona found out but she doesn't know yet I had a threesome.

Scrappy: wag (wait) you had a threesome
laughs

Me: two weeks ago, and I want to make them disappear for snitching when I told them I'll kill them if they ever said what happened to anyone.

Scrappy: so you and Lona are done?

I heard Nella in the background saying "what" i

brushed my curls frustrated that I would mess up what me and Lona had now i need to come up with a valid reason why I did what I did. Maybe if I tell the truth she'll understand but then again that'll only make me look like a fuck boy. I should tell her I was drunk and it was a mistake and I was totally out of it. She will believe me. I know she will, and Nia and Sino will be dead so they won't say anything. The next morning arrived and I was on the flight back home and I knew the first thing I would do is visit Lona I don't care even if her brothers will be there. I need to talk to her.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

~~

After the gym. I had the day to myself since it was Saturday. I didn't even know what to do, and my brothers left me all alone. I know Muller

was with one of his girlfriends. King was also with his girlfriend, but I was okay with that. I had studied earlier so now I was watching a movie. Well the movie was watching me because all that was on my mind was that good for nothing cheater Xavier. I don't know why I just can't get over him! I got a call since I turned my phone on in the morning, annoyed I looked at the caller ID. To my surprise it was Nella. I answered it and waited for her to talk.

Nella: hey munchkin.

Me: hey boo.

Nella: how are you holding up?

Me: I feel like my world is ending and I just can't stop loving him. I want to tell him to go to hell but my heart keeps beating so fast when I think about him.

Nella: how about lunch in the afternoon? You

helped me through my dark time and I want to help you. I don't want what Rellik did to jeopardize our friendship. I like you.

Me: it won't. And lunch it is. Because I need something to distract me for real.

Me and Nella talked for a long time until we were interrupted by King entering the house.

Me: I will call you back, Nelz. I have to talk to my big bro.

Nella: sure thing Munchkin. I'll text you the address for the lunch.

Me: okay, bye.

Nella: bye.

We both hung up and I rushed to King's room, but he had it locked.

Me: King please. Please say something. Just talk you me please. I can't stand the silent treatment.

He didn't reply and I just wanted to cry. I just lost my boyfriend and my brother isn't even talking to me. What type of turn is my life taking? I sat next to his room on the floor because I am not giving up until he talks to me. After 10 minutes, my phone vibrated and it was Nella texting me the address. I decided to get up because it was useless sitting down here knowing that my brother probably won't talk to me. I went to go change my clothes and in the process of changing I heard loud music being played. I guess he doesn't want me bothering him. I changed into a red sweatshirt with blue jean shorts and black vans. I let my hair loose because it's a weave anyway. I tried knocking

on King's door to tell him I'm going but he didn't reply so I figured he couldn't hear me. I called up an Uber and in the meantime I wrote a letter saying I'm going out with my new friend Nella but I couldn't tell them Nella is Scrappy's girlfriend. When the Uber arrived I went to the address and I was confused that it was a house. I rang the gate bell so they could open the gate. When she did, I walked in and I was surprised how beautiful it was. Xavier's was more beautiful though.

Nella: my munchkin!

Me: I need to give you a nickname as well
laughs

Nella: I don't mind B! But welcome to our crib!

Me: it looks... wow.

Nella: thank you. I helped decorate it

~~

After hours of fun and laughter. I decided to go home because it was getting dark and Scrappy was annoyed at how goofy and funny we are although he was also laughing low key.

Scrappy: niphambene nina (you guys are crazy)
laughs

I know hanging out with Scrappy is awkward for me especially since his friend cheated on me even though all i gave him was love! I ordered an Uber even though Nella offered to drive me home, I said no. Arriving at home, I was smiling thinking about the memories me and Nella created today. Once I got in the house, I was shocked to see my brothers waiting for me in the kitchen. Man did they look pissed!

Me: hey guys!

Muller: where the fuck have you been! ?

Me: I wrote a letter saying I'm going to lunch with Nella.

King: who's that?

I was happy that he was talking to me. I don't know if it's for the moment or he's really talking to me

Me: a friend from the campus. Guys don't worry. I would get back with that douche anytime soon. That chapter is over in my life.

Muller: I am happy.

~~

My brothers were asleep and I was trying to study, I know I am a nerd but my future is something that I am very serious about. My phone rang and I was confused who would call

me at night. It was Xavier, so I didn't answer the call. He called plenty of times making me put my phone on silent. It's funny how guys are. One minute you love them and give them your all but the minute you're fed up with their bullshit they want to beg you and all that shit. I continued studying and after 30 minutes I heard the house phone ring. My eyebrows furrowed. My heart started beating fast hoping it's not Rellik that's on my gate. I checked my windows and there he was outside with his all black outfit looking so cute. I panicked that something wrong was going to occur in this place! Even though I hate Rellik right now, I know how dangerous Muller can be when he's angry., and I know for a fact King won't let him fight alone. I quickly called Nella with my hands shaking.

Nella: at this time munchkin... *yawns*

Me: you quickly have to tell Scrappy to get here. Rellik is here and I'm scared my brothers won't go any easy on him *scared*

Nella: okay, calm down. He'll be there as fast as he can. Text me your address

Me: okay.

I hang up without even saying goodbye. I quickly texted her the address. I heard a noise in the house, I knew those were my brothers talking. Xavier called me again and I quickly answered it.

Me: just give home please!

Xavier: not until I talk to you so I can explain myself. Please Lona, I love you and I can't lose you. Not like this.

Me: please just go Rellik. What we had is over. All your hoes are waiting for you. Stop calling

me, please.

Xavier: I am not leaving until I talk to you, and until I have you back in my arms.

Me: my brothers will hurt you Rellik. Stop being stubborn for once and just listen!

Xavier: come down here and let's talk.

I saw my brothers through the window. They were shouting like crazy, the gate opened and I saw Muller throw the first punch in and they were fighting so bad I was worried they would hurt each other. I ran downstairs and King was already involving himself. Xavier was bleeding crazy and so was Muller.

Me: stop! Please just stop!

I tried breaking them apart but I kept being

pushed off by King.

Me: you're gonna to hurt each other! Stop being so childish!

Luckily for me, Scrappy arrived and man was he driving fast, when that car stopped I heard a load 'skrrrrt' he ran towards us, I thought he was going to help let break this up. But he just removed King and started fighting with him. I screamed frustrated with these grown men acting like high-school kids. Muller started punching the hell out of Xavier, like i said when Muller is angry he can get dangerous. I was shocked that Xavier could fight like that too because he started beating him the fuck up, I was worried he would give him permanent injuries. King on the other hand was fighting so hard with Scrappy I was shocked he could fight like this. He was beating Scrappy up, even

though Scrappy was also beating him up. I didn't expect such behavior from King. I gasped when Muller was laying down, and Xavier pulled out a gun. I quickly ran towards them to stand in between them.

Me: no! He's my brother. And I swear I will never forgive you if you kill him. *cries*

Xavier: I just want to talk to you!

Me: leave me alone. We're done! I want nothing to do with you. You had your chance and you blew it. Now let me be.

He pulled me towards the gate. I tried breaking free, but it was no use because he was stronger. Muller tried getting up but, Xavier aimed the gun at him. Scrappy and King were done fighting because what Xavier was doing was out of line. I know gangsters were crazy just not this crazy!

I could see my brothers looked very broken they couldn't protect me because a guy like Rellik always gets what he wants. Xavier pulled me towards his car. When I was inside I knew I was couldn't get off because I had to think about my brothers' safety. I knew Muller was the crazy one when he's angry, but this. This is a whole new crazy I am seeing. Rellik really scares me. He drove off first and i saw Scrappy's car following us. After a long time of my tears falling down, he finally parked somewhere I didn't know. It was just some place I didn't know.

Me: are you going to kill me? *sniffs*

Xavier: no. I love you, killing you is like killing myself. I just want you to give me the chance to explain myself.

Me: so you kidnap me? And aim a gun at my brother?

Xavier: I know it was wrong for me to let my anger get the best of me. I just, I went crazy when I thought of just losing you.

Me: but you didn't even think of me when you were having sex with her! Just take me home Rellik. There's nothing we need to talk about because we're done.

Xavier: just listen to me for once!

Me: and hear what? How you betrayed me? How I fell for you and gave you my all yet you still played with my heart like it was a toy. Then to top it off, you come to my house and fight my brothers. I called Scrappy to break the fight but it only became worse. I don't need this negative energy in my life I am only 18. There's plenty of people out there for you. And there's plenty out there for me

Xavier: you're crazy if you think I'm letting you see other people. I love you! Don't you fucking get it!?

Me: then love me enough to let me go...

He looked at me with the saddest eyes ever, I just looked down with more tears falling. Maybe I'm not right for Rellik because I can't have him humiliating me and breaking my heart like this.

Me: Because clearly you're not ready to treat me right. There's people who can do that. If you love me, you'd want me happy. Even if it's with other people. *wipes tears*

[02/20, 06:47] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER
~

INSERT 37

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I angrily punched the steering wheel. I calmed down when i noticed I was scaring her more.

Me: Lona I was drunk that day, what happened was a mistake baby. When I heard about aunt Fifi I just lost it because I couldn't lose her. I know my excuse doesn't make it better. Just give me another chance.

Lona: drunk enough to give her R3000? And call her after that? Wow. And you're still lying about it!

Me: Lelona, you have to understand-

Lona: I understand that you're a liar and a cheater plus what ever we had is over. Please just take me home.

Me: baby-

Lelona: now please.

She looked towards the window. I could see she was crying. I sighed because there was nothing I could really say to her. I will talk to her tomorrow when she's not overreacting. Maybe right now she's still upset about the fight I had with Muller. I drove her home, and Scrappy was still following us. When I parked outside, I could see that they were still outside waiting for her. I got out and rushed to open her door. She looked at me, I could see this was hurting her just like it was hurting me. I sighed and gave her a hug. That made her cry more.

Me: I'm not giving up on you. I will always love you.

Lona: bye Rellik.

She broke the hug and walked inside the yard, and ran to hug her brothers. I could see they wanted to kill me but I don't care because they would never do that. They need me more than I need them. I can find another gang to do heists. They will suffer a lot if they leave the Americans gang. I drove off and I was very angry I lost the one thing that was making my life great!

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I helped them by giving them some ice. For their injuries.

Muller: see how fucking disrespectful he is!?
What the fuck did you see in him?!

Me: I am going to bed.

Muller: I hope you told him you're not getting back with him because you'll make me go insane if you're back with him. You'd be ruining your life!

Me: I know. I told him we're over. And there's nothing he could do to get us back together again. I am really done with him

Muller: is he the one auntie was talking about?

I didn't know whether to lie or not because if I don't it will only create more drama. And honestly I am tired of the drama.

Me: no. She was lying. He wasn't there then.

He nodded and I walked to my room before they noticed that I was lying. I laid on my bed, that's

when the memories created started kicking in. I just laid in my bed with tears falling out. What made me not forgive him is the fact that he lied about it! He doesn't even respect me enough to tell me the truth. If he was so drunk why would send money to her? Then call her? He is a liar and he doesn't even deserve my forgiveness. I slept with a broken heart knowing that I still love him but as time goes by. I know I will get over him.

~~

It was Sunday and I still had nothing to do for the entire day. To take my mind off Xavier I studied but it was useless because I couldn't even understand what I was studying he was occupying my mind a lot! My phone rang and I sighed, I picked it up knowing it was Cardo that was calling me.

Me: Cardo

Cardo: you're busy today?

Me: no. Bored in fact.

Cardo: come to the apartment. Hang out with me and my son.

Me: where's Somila?

Cardo: she lives with her parents and I have the kid for the day.

Me: and you can't handle him all by yourself
chuckles

Cardo: just come help me. You said you wanted to meet him. This is your chance! *chuckles*

Me: come with him to the house.

Cardo: okay. I'll text you when I'm there.

Me: cool

Cardo: fede.

We both hung up and I decided to take a

shower since I was looking like a mess. I didn't shower because I was lazy, now I have to do it for the guests. After my hygiene routine I wore my Adidas baggy track pants with a white tight long sleeved crop top. Then I wore my white Nike Roche shoes. I finally received a text from Cardo. So I went to open the gate for him. My brothers were in the lounge watching TV. It pained me seeing them bruised up because of me.

Muller: who's at the gate?

Me: Cardo and his kid.

Muller: why is he here?

Me: to visit me duhh.

I heard that door being opened. I smiled when I saw this cute little kid trying to run away from Cardo laughing. I chuckled looking at Cardo

looking annoyed.

Me: he's so cute! Hey Dylan.

Dylan looked at me with this weird look.

Dylan: ban' lyo? (Who's this?)

Me: I'm Lona. Ndiyi'chommie ka'tata wakho.
(I'm your father's friend.)

He looked at his father, and Cardo nodded.
That's when he looked at me smiling.

Dylan: Sundowns! *shouts*

He ran to throw himself in the couch making
Muller and King chuckle. They were watching a

soccer match and I guess it had the team Sundowns. Cardo motioned for me to go to the side with him.

Cardo: why do they have bruises? what happened?

Me: Rellik happened.

Cardo: what? *chuckles*

Me: they were fighting and I guess they all have bruises.

Cardo: damn. That's fucked up *laughs* I wish I was there to witness it!

Me: hahaha *sarcastic* very funny idiot.

He laughed and placed his hand over my shoulder and gave me a hug.

Cardo: you know I'm just playing kid. What's the

situation with you and Rellik?

Me: we're officially done.

Cardo: don't you think you should give him a chance to explain himself?

Me: he tried, but he lied. So I told him it's over because he clearly does not care!

Cardo: he may have lied, but he does love you. That I know

Me: did he pay you to say that? *annoyed*

Cardo: no. I'm saying because I know it.

Me: mxm. Let's get back to the lounge. You're boring now.

He chuckled and walked with me to the lounge with his arm still around my shoulder. We sat in the couch and I tried watching the ball but my mind would always switch back to him. I took Dylan and placed him on my lap.

Me: unangaphi? *smiles* (how old are you?)

Dylan: 2!

He held up two fingers to show me he was two.
I smiled at how cute he is, Cardo took a picture.
Then he took a video.

Cardo: my kids.

Me: I am not your kid, dummy.

Cardo: *laughs* I think I need to ground her. She has an attitude.

I couldn't help but laugh at how serious he was.

Cardo: ntwana yam. (My guy)

I rolled my eyes smiling and posed for the camera then the flash stopped.

Muller: before I forget. Lona your new sim is in my drawer.

Me: I'll go get it now.

I carried Dylan and went with him to the room. He kept trying to be put down but I know the steps were going to be a challenge for him.

Dylan: fun' hamba. (I want to walk)

I chuckled when we were on top. I placed him down and held his hand. He let go and ran towards the opened room which was Muller's room. I checked the drawer and found the new Vodacom sim card.

Me: no!

I was shouting at Dylan who was trying to pick up Muller's speaker and he was going to drop it.

Me: hata baba! (No baby)

I picked him up and he angrily refused for me to pick him up. While swinging his arms he punched me in my eye. I quickly placed him down, rubbing my eyes. He ran out the room laughing. I shook my head at how bad he was

Me: Ricardo! Get Dylan before he falls on the stairs!

I quickly looked for Dylan and I shook my head

when I saw my room opened. I ran towards the room before he ruined anything. I gasped when I saw my bottom drawer was opened and on the floor. He was looking at the items which were just my tops.

Cardo: what's wrong?

Me: he broke my bottom drawer. Maybe he pulled it too hard?

Cardo just laughed. I shook my head and folded my arms looking at Dylan with a mean look. He smiled showing me his cute little teeth.

Dylan: xol' (sorry)

Me: how does Somila survive with a child this active?

Cardo laughed harder when I sighed shaking my head. I have to fix that drawer.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I walked inside aunt Fifi's room because I needed her advice on how to get Lona back. Because I am not giving up anytime soon.

Fifi: my ZayZay! *smiles* what's wrong? What happened to your face!?

Me: I was in a fight, Tannie. How are you?

Fifi: getting there. Doctor says I may be returning next week for the following 2 weeks.

Me: I'm glad. You had very worried when you were hospitalised.

Fifi: I'll be okay. I am sure my husband misses me in that big house.

Me: I am surprised he's not even here.

Fifi: he went to get me some food. He'll be right back, before visiting hours end.

Me: that's good.

Fifi: how's Lona? It's been a while since she visited me.

Me: she decided we should break up.

Fifi: what!? Don't tell me she found out.

Me: she did. *sighs* and her brothers beat me up when I wanted to talk on her

Fifi: that's why you look like hell.

Me: I can't even sleep, I keep seeing her hurt face crying to me. I fucked up bad tannie.

Fifi: you'll just have to fix it. If it's meant to be. It'll fix itself.

Me: I need her back now. I can't wait 3 years or

more without her. I can't even wait a week. I need her back. You have to help me.

Fifi: help you how? I can't involve myself Xavier. Not when I know you're going to ruin this again.

Me: I won't, please. I learnt my lesson. I'm going through hell knowing I can't hear her voice next to me when she wakes up or cuddle with her when she gets a bad dream.

Fifi: tell me what happened and maybe I can help. I don't like you being like this. It's weird *laughs* but I love that she has you thinking straight.

I told her what happened from the cheating to the fighting incident.

Fifi: first. Don't ever, I mean, ever force a girl to go anywhere with you. If she says no. Know she's means no. No matter how much you love

her, that's wrong and that's being a bully and abusive. I raised you better than this! I'm only helping you because I like that girl. I should slap you for manhandling her like that.

I looked down not answering because i knew she was right. But at the same time I had to explain myself to Lona.

Fifi: you can say the girl was threatening you and you had to pay her money because you were really drunk and she took advantage of you knowing you were very drunk. The calls were you calling her threatening her to stop and you were only paying her the money because you didn't want to lose Lona.

Me: that's a good idea! Thanks Tannie

Fifi: even though I don't like you lying to her but I like her and this is the last time I am helping you

lie to her again.

Me: I need you to call her and say you want her to visit you then I can talk to her.

Fifi: why can't you call her?

Me: she isn't answering my calls.

She sighed and took her phone out. I gave her the number and she called her.

Fifi: voice-mail.

I sighed. How the fuck am I going to talk to her now?

[02/20, 06:50] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER
~

INSERT 38

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

After my visit, I went home defeated that I may have lost her for good. When I arrived at home. I sighed at the empty house, I didn't even greet my maid. I walked straight to my room. When I laid on the room, I was on my phone looking over my pictures and smiling whenever i would see her pictures. I went on my WhatsApp to see if she posted anything. She didn't even be online. I occupied my time by looking at the statues people posted. And I smiled looking at Cardo's status. She was so cute with Cardo's son. I replied to the post.

Me: tell her to switch on her phone. I need to speak to her.

Cardo OBJ : she changed her number.

Me: what? When?

Cardo OBJ : today. Muller gave her a new sim.

Me: Cardo you have to help me bro. I need to speak to her let her know that what happened wasn't all my fault. I was totally out of it.

Cardo OBJ : I'm not trying to die today. Muller would kill me.

Me: I'll make sure he doesn't do that

CardoOBJ : we'll take Dylan to the park. I'll text you the address be there and don't make it seem like I told you because she will never trust me again.

Me: i won't. Thanks man i owe you one.

CardoOBJ : you really do.

I quickly took another shower so I can be fresh when I see her. After my hygiene routine I wore an all black outfit which consisted of a black short sleeved t-shirt with black jeans and black colored Timbalands. I wrapped a black and blue cloth around my forehead. Cardo texted me the address and I went there in my Lamborghini. I saw her from a far playing with the kid. I got out the car, and she didn't notice me because she was occupied with the child. Cardo sat by the benches and I went to Lona once I touched her shoulder she jumped and looked back. I looked at her, and instantly her face was filled with hurt.

Me: we need to talk.

Lona: we already talked and we're done.

Me: please Lelona. At least give me the chance to explain what really happened.

She picked up Dylan and placed him on her hip.
He kept pulling her hair trying to get down.

Me: Dylan...

He looked at me being serious and started
laughing and laid his head on Lona's shoulder.

Lona: you have 10 minutes.

Me: he wants to walk on his own.

Lona: he'll get lost.

Me: look what happened that night, I was drunk
and she took advantage of the situation
because she knew I would pay her the money to
keep her mouth quiet. I was ashamed I was
taken advantage of by a woman that's why I
couldn't tell you the truth. That's why I called her
to threaten her to stop because I thought it

would help but it made it worse. I was scared she would come to you spreading lies that I willingly came to her but I didn't. I promise I would never do that to you. You know how much you mean to me.

Lona: if Muller didn't come with her to our house then I would've never known about it? Wow.

Me: he did what? I should've guessed he was behind this fucked up thing

Lona: and i am happy he is because he is my brother and he's always going to look out for me. What you did yesterday showed me a new you. And I am disappointed. You bully your way into getting anything you want. You arrived at my house like you owned all of us and caused havoc-

Me: i wasn't the only one.

Lona: but I asked you to leave! Xavier what we're doing is very toxic and I think we need this

break up. You need to understand that you can't just beat up my brothers.

Me: he punched me first!

Lona: you should've respected them and not come to the house! You know they hated our relationship and yet you still came to the house. There has to be boundaries.

Me: okay, I understand. I will respect boundaries. Just please don't break up what we have.

I never begged a female like this, I know it makes me look a bitch but if it'll bring her back I don't mind.

Lona: bye Rellik.

Me: Lona please.

Lona: we need space from each other to know where this is what we really want.

Me: I know what I want. I want you.

Lona: then you wouldn't go get drunk in a place with your exes.

I looked down disappointed that she was really dumping me. Over a fucked up one night.

Me: will we ever get back together?

Lona: I don't know.

Me; I love you. I will always love you. Never doubt that.

Lona: bye.

I kissed her forehead, and hugged her. I heard her sniffing after we have been hugging for a long time. Dylan started getting annoyed and tried breaking up the hug, Lona moved away.

Me: can I at least have your new number?

Lona: I don't know...

Me: come on. I promise I won't call a lot.

I smiled and she chuckled. That's the first time I've seen her smile ever since I came back from Russia. She took out her phone and sent me a message of a dot.

Lona: bye.

Me: bye.

She walked away, and I looked at her smiling. I know there's hope of us getting back together because of there wasn't why would she give me her new number. I looked at her struggling with Dylan again. I shook my head smiling. That kid just needs someone to be tough with him.

When she placed him down, he held her hand and they walked towards Cardo. Me and Cardo looked at other and I nodded my head to him. He nodded too. I really owe Cardo one. I smiled going to my car.

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

~~

It was night time and I was going out with Nella to a club. I know it was school night tomorrow so I knew I wouldn't drink and I'll come back home early. I wore a short gold dress. It looked very cute then I wore it with red heels. My brothers were out and I don't even know where. I heard a car beeping and I knew it was Nella. I

hurried out the house and made sure to lock the house. When I got in her car she squealed.

Nella: the fuck Lona! Do you see how fucking hot you look!? *smiles*

me: thanks Nelz you look amazing too!. Where's your boo?

Nella: him and the boys are having a race.

Me: Rellik is also there?

Nella: you know those two are always together wherever they go. I think they're trying to cheer Rellik up.

Me: mxm. He'll live. Your boo is at the race that's why you look this cute!

Nella: you know he would never let me leave the house dressed like this.

Me: he's gonna be very angry.

Nella: nothing i love more than punishment sex.

Girl! *laughs*

Me: I shall not comment. *laughs*

Nella: trust me you'll know soon *smiles*

We arrived at the club and when we were inside she brought us 2 shots each and just light stuff. We didn't want to get super drunk so we were just talking and having fun. After we drank our first drink I pulled her towards the part with most people so we can just dance and have fun. I took videos on my phone with her. It was really a nice time. I blocked my brothers for seeing my status then posted the video of me and Nella in the club.

Nella: let's go to the toilets. I need to pee.

I nodded and held her hand then we walked to the toilets. We were the only ones there luckily

and she peed and washed her hands. She gave me her phone.

Nella: I need pictures of this cute outfit.

Me: this bitch *laughs*

I took plenty of pictures then she said it's my turn so I took the pictures too. After my turn we took selfies and cute videos. Then people got inside the toilets. We just giggled and walked out the toilets.

Me: send me the pictures okay? To my new number the one you called earlier.

Nella: why are you even changing numbers?
laughs because he has your number already so it's just a waste

Me: now that I think about it. You're right.

Nella: wow, such a blonde moment *laughs*

We both laughed at my stupidity of giving Xavier my new number but I changed my old one to get away from him.

?: ladies.

We both turned and it was this cute guy. Damn he was so cute I could give it up to him. Nella just looked at him with a plain face and I was smiling so hard. I am still getting used to cute guys approaching me.

?: I'm Sade. I was wondering if you girls would love to join me and my friends in the VIP.

Nella: no, but thank you.

Me: *playfully hits Nella* of course we would

love to. Excuse my best friend Nella, I am Lona.

Sade: nice to meet you. It's rare to see such beautiful ladies. I am still amazed.

I blushed and he led us to the VIP, Nella was so annoyed. There was his friends and they looked cute too, I looked at Nella with a cute smile. She shook her head laughing at my facial expression.

Sade: mind if I talk to you alone Lona?

Me: oka-

Nella: she's not going anywhere.

Me: it's really fine Nella. I'll be right back.

Nella: you're not going anywhere unless you had enough of the club and you want to go home?

I chuckled and looked down. Sade shook his

head. I loved that Nella was a protective friend. I could never get hurt in a party when she's around because she's a no nonsense type of chick. but Damn I would love some alone time with the cute dude to have some rebound for Rellik and get over him fast.

Nella: look, our boyfriends Scrappy and Rellik are on the way. So we have to go.

Sade: yeah sure. Uhm. . Nice meeting you.

Nella: mh hm.

Then she took my hand and we walked out the VIP section.

Me: did you have to scare him off with the Rellik thing though?

Nella: yes now let's go home before we get

another guy thinking we're easy.

I laughed and held her hand then we walked out. We arrived safely at my house and I begged her to sleepover. When she finally agreed I squealed and quickly opened the gate for her car. My brothers were still not back and I was happy that I wouldn't get busted. We went inside and I pulled her towards to my room.

Me: welcome to the queen's room.

Nella: *laughs* it's so cute.

I gave her something to sleep in and I went to get junk food for us. I know it's wrong because I'll go to the gym tomorrow. But I have a guest and I can't let her eat alone. When I walked in she was on FaceTime with Scrappy he looked drunk. She was smiling so hard. I thought her

cheeks would start hurting.

Scrappy: maybe I should come home and we'll have drunk sex.

Nella: *laughs* I am sleeping over at Lona's home.

Scrappy: okay. I will sleep at Rellik's then

Nella: okay, I love you.

Scrappy: love you too baby. And tell your girl to take my boy back he's miserable *laughs*

Nella: I will *laughs*

Then they ended the call. I smiled thinking how cute they are.

Nella: girl I need to know what happened yesterday for my baby to arrive home with blood and bruises.

Me: Nelz it was a nightmare!

She started laughing and I opened the Lay's and gave her her own pack.

Me: grown men fighting like someone was killed. I think it's safe to say Relik shouldn't be in any meetings with Brims.

Nella: bitch *laughs* and you still make it a joke.

Me: *laughs* don't see me laughing now. I was crying my eyes out last night.

Nella laughed as I told her about the situation, to her she found this whole thing funny.

Nella: I am sorry for laughing at your painful experience babe. But I am just finding funny

how your brothers can't understand you're old enough for your own decisions and they should live their own lives not yours.

Me: I wish I could tell them that.

Nella: but! Rellik is also wrong. He is about to become the leader of the Americans gang not your brothers. He can't force them to agree to something they don't like. They're supposed to be protective because they're your brothers. He has no right coming to your house, fighting your brothers then aim a gun at Muller like everyone is supposed to bow down to him. He is not their king. And when you guys get back set those boundaries that family is a "no go" zone and family should be respected at all times.

Boyfriends come and go, but family is blood. It stays forever.

Nella is right, I shouldn't have let Rellik disrespect my brothers in their home just

because he is the boss in their gang he can't boss them in their personal life. I will never let him disrespect them again.

.

[02/20, 06:51] Ron: CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 39

× 3 MONTHS LATER ×

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

I quickly woke up because I was a bit late for my gym session. I looked at the time and I knew I wouldn't make it so I had no choice but to skip

it because today I had to go write my last exam for the second semester. It was finally July and I received a lot of calls from my biological mom these past 3 months. I still haven't told my brothers she's alive because I didn't want to put her life in danger. I knew next week I need to get back to my hometown but I'll lie to my brothers and say I can't go then I'll stay here and spend some more time with my biological mother. I am even scared to go back home in Eastern Cape. Me and Xavier aren't back together and I've been avoiding him these past 3 months. And I know he misses me because Nella tells me all the time I should take him back he misses me and life isn't the same without me. I wanted to focus on me because I didn't want the drama he brought so I didn't take him back. My birthday went by last month and I didn't celebrate because to me it was just another day. Now I'm officially 19, and my brothers still treat me like a baby. Even though I don't like it. I

tolerate it because they're my big Brothers and they love me. They do it out of care. I told them I didn't want to celebrate my birthday and they respected my wishes. So nobody knew my birthday already went by except for Nella, Cardo, my brothers and Xavier of course. I saw the post he posted on my birthday but I didn't care for it. I need to move on. I'm 19 now, education should be my number 1 priority to make my brothers proud. I quickly did my hygiene routine and wore my Adidas baggy track pants with a grey baggy crop top, and black sneakers. I gained more confidence over the 3 months thanks to Nella. She was truly a blessing, I thank God everyday for her. Who knew I could finally get a good best friend. I heard Kayla dropped out of varsity, and nobody knew where she was. Zikhona and Khanyi went missing too. That made me a bit happy that they would stop bothering me a bit. King drove me to the campus. I am also happy the silent treatment

was over because I missed hanging out with him.

King: call me after you're done.

Me: okay bro. Love you.

King: love you too.

I hopped out his RS7 car then rushed to the lecture room. Luckily for me the exam had not started it.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I sat down at the table with my aunt and uncle. They requested that I have breakfast with them

and I just agreed because my house was so lonely sitting alone.

Fifi: she still hasn't taken you back?

Me: no. She believes what I said to her but she didn't like me disrespecting her brothers. I tried everything maybe the space is good. But damn 3 months without seeing her is hell.

Fifi: well Sisipho is returning maybe you guys can see other at the brunch Sisipho will have for her return.

Me: Sisipho is returning permanently?

Fifi: yes. She's even thinking of buying a house here in South Africa and branch her business out here so she can be closer to Lona.

Me: that's good. But... Lona has been avoiding me everywhere. I mean everywhere! And she only answers my calls like once a week. I hate this punishment.

Ghost: *laughs* I didn't realize you were this whipped .

Me: I love her more than I should.

Fifi: that is why you need give her space to breathe.

Me: 3 months is enough space! She leaves when I enter clubs, she even leaves lunch dates with Nella. It's fucked up

Fifi: *laughs* stop following her and let her enjoy her time away from you then when she returns you can-

Me: when is she returning! ? It's been forever now

Fifi: the way I look at it. She loves her brothers and you almost killing her brother must've really made her disappointed. You'll get your chance to win her back. Be patient

I sighed and ate the breakfast. What Lona is

doing is bullshit. I understand I was wrong for aiming Muller with a gun, and taking her to a place without her consent but her not speaking to me, declining my calls and not seeing her makes me very angry because I am doing all of this because I love her. Any other girl would appreciate me waiting for her and not dating in this 3 months period but no. Lona wants to see me suffer by not talking to me and shutting me out. I couldn't even get her present for her birthday. Nella told me she wanted nothing for her birthday just dinner with her brothers. Now I realize in order to get through Lona I have to talk to her brothers. I hate apologising but I have to do it if it means getting her back. I will apologise to her brothers so they can accept our relationship then I can get her back.

.

.

.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I walked into King's room and sat in the bed while he continued packing. Muller was out having fun with the gents and King didn't want to go.

Me: I don't want to go back home.

King: we talked to mom. Everything is sorted and this time around we'll be there everyday.

Me: no. I don't care, I don't want to go back there. You know she'll never stop hating me. Please talk to Muller for me to stay here.

King: who will watch you here?

Me: I can stay on my own.

He looked at me suspiciously. I sighed knowing what he was thinking

Me: don't worry. I am still not back with Rellik. I just want some alone with this holiday and I don't want your mother bringing me back to depression.

King: she's your mother too.

Me: my mother is... uhm. .. dead.

King: she raised you, she is your mother .

Me: let's not argue about this. Can I just remain here? then in December that's when I'll go back home.

King: fine I'll talk to Muller about it

I squealed and hugged him happily. He chuckled.

Me: thanks bro!

King: yeah yeah. Now get out of my room.

Me: toddles.

I walked to my room and I neatly packed up my books because I won't be reading them for a long time now. My phone started ringing and I looked at the caller ID. It was Cardo. Thank God.

Me: ntwana.

Cardo: you're busy today?

Me: nah. Why?

Cardo: house party.

Me: will he very there?

Cardo: yes

Me: then I'm not going

Cardo: come on Lona. You have been avoiding him for 3 months now. I think he learned his lesson.

Me: which lesson?

Cardo: not to cheat on you.

Me: I don't care about teaching him any lesson. These 3 months made me realise without Rellik. I am actually happy! So I don't want to jeopardise that.

Cardo: if you're really happy then you wouldn't want to be locked up in your room all the time.

I kept quiet because I knew he was right. I am acting happy because I am scared of being back with Rellik. I don't want that fight to happen again and I don't want my brothers hating me again.

Cardo: can you at least come to the party? Nella

will be here too

Me: I am going to be studying today. Got an exam tomorrow.

Cardo: I know all your exams are done. Now stop lying *laughs* we go to the same university Lelona

Me: fine! But if he tries to kiss me or hug me. I am leaving!

Cardo: that I can't promise.

Me: I'm not going then.

Cardo: fine he won't. *chuckles*

Me: text me the address.

Cardo: I'll come pick you up. Just tell me when you're ready.

Me: fine.

We both hung up the call. Now I need to ask my brothers to go to this house party thing. I went

to King's room and he was fixing his bags. I don't know why he's packing early. But I guess he likes preparing for things earlier than I thought. I knocked on the door slowly. Nervous he would say no. Well I would be been happy if he says no because I don't want to go anyway.

Me: Nella invited me to sleep over at her house. I'll be there if you guys need me

I tried this new approach Nella said I should do. Where I tell my brothers something and not ask them because that's why they end up treating me like a baby. When I ask them it makes it seem like I depend on them. Now I have to tell them when I'm doing something.

King: sure.

He wasn't even looking at me, he was texting on his phone now. I smiled then went to go shower again because I need to be fresh for the people

~~

The time for the party started and I told Nella to come fetch me because I already told my brother I was going to sleep over at her house. I was wearing a white crop top with a white Adidas track pants and black Roche with a cute little Gucci purse. I tied my black weave in a half up and half down hairstyle. I was already waiting for Nella to come outside the gate before Muller came and told me I wasn't going, but luckily Nella came first and I quickly got inside her white Mercedes Benz A45. She sped off and I was happy she understood how crazy my brothers were so I could explain to her why I wanted the car to go fast

Me: Scrappy chose a cute outfit today.

Nella: don't start *laughs*

Me: it's really cute and covered up.

Nella: he's very lucky that I love him.

She was wearing a black turtleneck all covered long sleeved top with black jeans and knee-high boots. And her weave was in a cute messy bun.

Nella: are you nervous?

Me: about?

Nella: you're going to fully see your man girl

Me: he's not my man.

Nella: you know what I mean. Tonight there's no running off. We'll enjoy our night and he'll get to see how sexy you look and drool over his girl like "damn!"

I just started laughing. I know it's been childish of me running away every time I heard Rellik was at a party before he could see me. Or cancelling lunch dates with Nella when I would see him from a far. We haven't really seen each other properly these 3 months. And I am not excited to be quite honest. What if he moved and I'll be watching him with his new girlfriend or he went back for his hoes and they'll all attack me .

Me: who's hosting this party anyway?

Nella: K9

Me: Cardo practically begged me to come. I hope it will be good.

Nella: it will. How were the exams?

Me: great. I have a good feeling I'll get distinctions on all my modules again.

Nella: yes munchkin! I'm so proud of you, we have to go shopping tomorrow.

Me: yes! I need new clothes. I have been losing loads of weight. My clothes just don't fit me anymore.

Nella: shopping it is tomorrow!

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I held a red double cup filled with alcohol and bopped my head to the music.

Cardo: have something special for you

Me: what's that?

Cardo: you'll see *laughs* something that might cheer you up.

Everyone these past 3 months could notice I wasn't the same because I had more anger and I enjoyed killing people more. It was my way of dealing with losing Lona. We were in the backyard and people were filling up the house. I saw Nella coming towards the backyard. Then I saw a girl wearing all white, she wasn't looking at us though. Her face was looking towards the house and talking. I knew from a far that was Lona. I smiled, and Cardo chuckled. I was about to get up to go talk to her but he stopped me I glared at him.

Cardo: chill. She'll come here.

I sat down and nodded. I proceeded drinking my

drink. Then finally they came to us. I wonder who was she talking to in that house. It better not be a guy I would kill him without thinking twice.

Nella: hey guys.

Nella went to go sit on Scrappy's lap and Lona awkwardly stood there. I smiled at how amazing she looked, she avoided eye contact with me. I took another sip of my drink looking at her she's the only thing I see. When she finally looked at me, I gave her a small smile; and she blushed looking away. I am getting my girl back tonight. I don't care how, but I will.

.

.

.

[02/20, 06:52] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 40

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

gosh I didn't mean to blush! He just gave me that look that always makes me melt. And I couldn't help but blush. I missed seeing his small smile. The worst part is that the only available seat was between him and Cardo. So I had to sit next to him and Cardo. To avoid that because I know Rellik would start talking to me and I'll start agreeing to being back with him when I don't want to. I'd be putting my brothers' life in danger because he has a lot of anger issues. What if I wasn't there when he aimed

the gun at Muller then he would've killed Muller?

Me: Nella I'm going to get myself a drink okay?

Nella: need me with you munchkin?

Me: no. The drinks are in the living room. I'll be right back.

I walked away, Cardo followed me. I ordered an Uber on my phone to take me home. I know I'm wrong for lying to Nella about getting a drink when I know I'm leaving the party. I walked out the house and stood by the gate.

Cardo: you're okay?

Me: what do you think?

Cardo: it's been 3 months I thought you would be okay with seeing him

Me: well you thought wrong. It just bought back

more emotions and now I know I still love him!

Cardo: what's wrong with that?

Me: he's a bully! Came in my house and wanted to talk to me by force. Roughly snatched me in his car and drove me to an unknown place I was so scared and he didn't care because he "wanted to explain himself"

Cardo: he's doing all of that because he loves you bruh

Me: mxm. Bye Cardo, tell Nella I couldn't stay. I had a headache I'll call her at night before I go to sleep.

Cardo: sho ntwana.

He gave me a small smile and I saw the Uber approaching me. I said goodbye to Cardo and got inside the Uber. He looked at my Uber drive away and I sighed turning my phone off knowing Rellik will start calling me. When I

arrived home the first thing I did was lay on my bed. I didn't even see my brothers in the house. I just laid on my bed and watched new movies on my laptop. After a while I turned my phone on and it was filled with messages from Rellik I even changed his name in my contacts.

Rellik OBJ : what type of childish game are you playing?! Running away from a party just because I'm there is childish as fuck.

Rellik OBJ : I really expected so much from you.

Rellik OBJ : I knew you were a kid back when you were still friends with Kayla but I liked the maturity in you. But today showed me a new childish you, and that's fucked up.

Rellik OBJ : we should be able to talk about our problems like we're adults. I am 25 not a little boy ready to chase you down the whole Cape Town.

Rellik OBJ : and the most part that I hate the most is that I know you still love me and I don't know why you're doing this.

Rellik OBJ : baby I know you're still angry but please give me another chance. I miss your kisses and cuddles.

Rellik OBJ : damn Lelona I love you so much I'm willing to do anything to get you back.

Rellik OBJ : Please call me.

Rellik OBJ : I love you baby. And when I get you back I swear I'll appreciate you even more.

Rellik OBJ : you're probably gonna see these in the morning when I'm sober and regretting these because they make me look weak

Rellik OBJ : but I don't care because if that shows you I love you. I'll never stop sending texts like these.

Rellik OBJ : I love you okay?

I sighed reading all these texts. I knew drunk people were known to send crazy texts just not this type of crazy, and there were 10 missed calls with 3 voice-mail messages that I didn't want to hear because they'll just make me miss him even more. I went on Instagram on my laptop and just started wasting my time until I got tired and went to sleep. In the mist of my sleep I was awoken by Muller shaking me up. And I sighed and looked at him with sleepy eyes.

Muller: King says you want to remain here for June.

Me: can't we talk about this tomorrow morning?

Muller: do you know what time it is? *chuckles*

Me: I don't know. 23:00pm?

Muller: no it's 12:00pm you've been asleep all this time. What time did you sleep yesterday?

Me: I don't know. I think at 5am or 4

Muller: you're not staying here in June. It's-

Me: but-

Muller: no buts. You should be with your family in this time period

Me: which family?

Muller: don't do that. You'll always be my little sister kid. Even when mom acts crazy sometimes

Me: so you do realise she acts crazy. And you know you'll be out there having fun and I'll be treated like a slave because I was born with a vagina.

Muller: okay, let's say I agree to this madness who will stay with you? I don't want that bastard taking an advantage and coming here.

Me: Rellik would never hurt me.

Muller: I do not want him to come anywhere

near you I don't care about him not hurting you.
I don't want him close to you!

Me: fine. But I can stay on my own.

Muller: no.

Me: come on Khazimla! I am 19 years old and I have good grades. I will not leave the house for parties or host parties. I promise I will behave. I need this alone time. If I return back to King Williams Town I'm scared I will return back to being depressed. That woman will ruin me again. And the therapy sessions helped a lot it would be a waste of time going back to that dark place.

Muller: I will be there. King will be there.

Me: but you guys also have lives. You will want to go out with your friends and all of that.

Maybe me being alone will show you guys I am really growing up.

Muller: I see you're serious about this. Can't you

remain a baby forever?

Me: *laughs* sadly no. Dude you should be happy I'm growing up.

I moved a bit and he also sat on the bed.

Muller: you'll like my daughter. I don't want you to grow up. *laughs* I enjoyed you being a little girl and you used to want to follow me everywhere.

Me: and I loved when I used to wear you and King's old clothes. *laughs* man the good old days. But you're gonna have to accept that I'm growing up and I'm gonna start dating people you won't like and it's not up to you to like them or not. I'm gonna be the one dating them.

Muller: if they disrespect me..?

me: then I'm cutting them off.

Muller: good girl. Family comes first.

Me: always and forever.

~~

.

.

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I smirked at this girl twerking her big ass at me. I was at another house party that X was hosting. It was lit and I am already looking for a girl to hit and run. I felt a light tap on my shoulder and I turned around. I looked at Rellik in annoyance. What the fuck was he doing here!? Maybe he wants me to beat him up again

Me: what?

Rellik: we need to talk. Now.

He walked away. I shook my head, and looked at the girl who was dancing with me. I kissed her neck.

Me: don't mind that nigga. How about we take this dance session upstairs-

I felt someone roughly turned me around. I glared at Rellik this boy is really testing me. I pushed him off roughly and that started drawing attention to us.

Me: what the fuck do you want?!

Rellik: I said let's talk.

X: yo! Let's all just calm down and talk like grown men outside.

Rellik walked out, and we all followed him. His followers followed him maybe they thought we would gang up on him. Once we were outside is folded my arms.

Me: talk.

Rellik: look, it's about your sister. We need to talk privately.

I sighed and walked with him far from the gents so they wouldn't hear our conversation. I looked at him to continue talking.

Rellik: I want to... apologise for what happened the other day. I was protecting myself but I shouldn't have taken it far to pulling a nina (gun) on you.

I kept quiet just looking at him. I wanted to punch the fuck out of him for thinking it's okay to just take my sister and bring her back crying. Problem with Rellik he is spoiled as fuck and he's used to everything of his given to him without a problem. His uncle is about to give him an empire and he thinks he can run anyone in the Americans gang he can think again if he thinks I'll let him run over me.

Rellik: I love your sister bruh. I am not trying to play her-

Me: she's 18.

Rellik: age is just a number. I know I sound like a bitch right now, but the way she makes me feel is different.

I felt so disrespected when he said that. I looked at him in disgust that he would prey on

my little sister. I punched him, we started fighting like crazy. When he fell on the ground I stomped him on his chest and the second time I wanted to stomp him he got up and started throwing punches too. When I was trying to pick him up and throw him on the hard ground he kept throwing punches on my back. The fight was quickly broken up before I could throw him on the floor.

Me: get the fuck away from my little sister! I will beat the fuck out of you every time I see you.

Rellik: no matter how much you hate what we have she'll always love me. Deal with it your sister isn't little anymore.

I broke free from the guys holding me back but before I could get to him i was pulled back.

Game: yo mjita phola (dude chill)

Me: Go anywhere near her and I will skin you alive.

Rellik: why don't you try it now? Try it.

I tried going to him but whoever held a tight grip on me was holding me tight. I was taken to my car. And I knew I wanted to still fight Rellik, but I had to go home because if I remain here I will really fight with him. I sped my car off home, I didn't even think about the traffic because I was so annoyed with everything. Why the fuck would Lona choose to love Rellik out of all people! She really disappointed me! I expected her to go for guys like that kid Omar or kids in her school who are nerds or bookworms just like her. Someone who is introverted just like her. Rellik will just ruin her and I know it. I don't believe this whole "I love her " bullshit and all that "he's gone soft and weak" bullshit. It is all an act to

win her back and while he's still the same. I know he's not soft because if he was he would've let me beat me up, but he defended himself meaning he's not a punk. I don't want my sister with someone with that type of anger and someone who's emotions change a lot of time. I got inside the house and slammed the door, I went to the lounge and she was playing GTA 5 with King. Once she saw the little blood I had she started getting worried.

Me: we're all going to King Williams Town.

Lona: but...

Me: fine! You want to stay!? Then the family is coming here.

She looked sad that I said that but there was no way in hell I'm leaving her here.

[02/20, 10:09] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 41

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I looked at Muller disappointed that he would say something like that. Judging from his bruises I knew he was in a fight, and there's only one person who would piss him off like this. I went to the kitchen to get him some ice for his bruises.

Me: what happened now?

Muller: what the fuck where you thinking dating a guy like him!? He's nothing but a pain in the

ass.

Me: just tell me what happened.

Muller: he tried acting all soft with his fake apology and I beat him up-

Me: wait what! ?

Muller: he was faking all this shit to make it seem like I'm a bad mothefucker just like he faked loving you so he can get into your pants.

Me: wait, let me understand this correctly. He was trying to apologize and you beat him up for that?

Muller: he was faking it! The way he told me we should talk was disrespectful and I will never accept him for you. He doesn't have any manners. He's the type to beat you up when he has an anger meltdown.

Me: I'll be in my room.

Muller: because I didn't forgive your little boyfriend and taught him a lesson.

Me: no because you're being unreasonable. I told you I wasn't going back to him and you just decided to be rude to him by beating him up when he apologises. What if he was genuine? You wouldn't know because you let your anger get you! I'm so disappointed. You keep saying you don't want him in my life but you act just like him.-

Muller: don't fucking compare me to him!

Me: you're exactly alike. Hard-headed and you both want to rule. But the problem is he's changing and you're not. I lost him and you're still being rude about everything like I didn't love this guy. All of this hurts and you're not making it better at all! I lost my first real love and you haven't even asked me how I'm doing all you care about is beating him up as if that will mend my broken heart. To make matters worse your mother will be here with the demon she always brings and they will ruin my life again. You claim you love me and you're protecting me but your

actions say otherwise.

He sighed, I just walked to my room. I didn't even want to talk to him anymore. I was so annoyed with this petty fighting thing. But I did feel bad for Rellik who was just trying to apologize and my brother was being a jerk. On the other hand I had to let Sisipho know that her evil twin will be here in Cape Town. I just hope that won't stop Sisipho from moving here permanently. I still want a stronger relationship with her and I've been so excited for her to move her with her husband. I can't wait to meet him either. I hope he's a good guy that won't have a problem with her having a daughter. I know a lot of husbands that get jealous when women have children from past relationships. I have read about these situations a lot of times or how the husbands rape the children. I don't want that, so I won't get too close to him I don't want anything bad happening to me I just want

a close relationship with my biological mother. I called Sisipho to let her know that this June muller wants the family to come here.

Sisipho: my sweet princess. What's going on?

Me: I have to tell you some bad news but please promise to not be angry.

Sisipho: I would never be angry at you *laughs*

Me: and you'll still move to Cape Town permanently.

Sisipho: nothing is going to change my mind sweetie.

Me: are you sure?

Sisipho: yes pretty sure. My flight is already booked and we'll be there in 2 days.

Me: even if Isipho will be spending June here in Cape Town?

Sisipho: what?

Me: Muller doesn't want to leave me all alone in Cape Town because of a fight he had with Rellik. He says he'll bring the family here.

Sisipho: well it is time I finally faced her.

Me: are you sure you're ready?

Sisipho: yes. She ruined my life once, I can't let her ruin it again this time. I will be there in 2 days and we'll have so much fun Isipho will be the last thing on our minds. I promise you.

Me: thanks Sisipho. I thought you would freak out and not come anymore.

Sisipho: she's already took you away from me once I won't let get do it again.

We talked and talked until she had to go finish finalizing her business things. I was going to sleep but my guilty conscience wouldn't let me. I mean the fact that Rellik was trying to apologize and Muller just was plain rude to him

made me feel bad because now people will see Rellik as being weak and I don't want to ruin his reputation. I locked my door and went to the bathroom. I turned on the shower water and called him. To my brothers it may seem like I'm taking a shower but actually I'm on the phone. He answered after a long time

Xavier: Lona?

I kept quiet just hearing his voice. He was clearly waking up from sleeping. His voice was still good when he woke up. I just breathed not knowing what to say. Maybe I should've texted him and not just call. Now this is too awkward for me.

Me: hey? Uhm. .. are you busy?

What type of dumb question is that!? Of course he wasn't! He was still asleep.

Xavier: no. Everything's okay? What's wrong?

Me: uhm nothing. I just I. .. look I just wanted to say I'm so sorry for Muller's behaviour. It's unacceptable and I know you were just trying to apologize but can you please just stay away from him for a while? He's still mad at everything.

Xavier: I don't give a fuck about that. I miss you baby.

Me: Relik...

Xavier: Lona I swear I never loved anyone like you and I'm not willing to give up on you easily. I know you still love me too but I understand right now you're scared of losing your brothers because you're so used to them being there for you. And I understand. But sometimes in order

to grow, we need to face something outside of our comfort zone.

I kept quiet with tears just falling down my eyes. I can't lose my brothers. They're the reason I'm not dead today. I love them so much that I don't see my life without them. I really don't. I hung up the call without saying nothing else to him. The way I love my brothers I'm willing to sacrifice my happiness for them because they have done everything for me.

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I woke up the following day with the most painful back pain. I knew it was those punches Rellik threw at me. After my hygiene routine I just wore my basketball shorts. I heard the

house phone ring. I ignored it and just sat on my bed. I started texting bitches to distract me from boredom.

King: Muller, Dominique is here for you!
shouts

I furrowed my brows confused. How did this hoe even get my address? I walked downstairs and looked at King who had this smirk on his face. When I walked in the lounge I looked at Dominique shocked to see her smiling at me.

Me: what the fuck are you doing here?

King: she's here for you *laughs*

I glared at him. I fucked Dominique a few times but she said she understood we're just fuck

buddies nothing more. Now I'm surprised when she's in my house for me.

Domi: I missed you. You haven't called in a week.

Me: I'm not obliged to call you. I'll call you when I want to fuck. But right now I'm still enjoying new pussy.

King just laughed at us, I glared at him and that made him laugh even more making me chuckle because his laugh was contagious. She stood up, and was about to walk away. I softly held her arm.

Me: look, we both agreed we wouldn't do this and grow feelings.

Domi: I know but we have a lot of fun when we're together. I figured you'd love to go to

lunch and we can talk about moving our friendship to the next level.

She smiled, but honestly I don't even like Dominique like that but if it'll satisfy her than okay. As long as I can continue fucking her I don't even mind. Lona came down the stairs and looked confused at the girl

Me: Lona, this is Dominique. Dominique this is my little sister Lelona.

Domi: nice to meet you. *smiles*

Lona: likewise.

I walked Dominique out, I waved at her when she drove out. Why the hell do I always attract crazy women? When i walked in the lounge they were busy laughing

Lona: wait.. she wants to be something more?
laughs poor girl

Me: I need to find a new fuck buddy.

Lona: why don't you just get a girlfriend?

Me: she'll start annoying me by nagging too much.

She shook her head laughing. We all started bonding and watched TV just having fun. I actually missed this time with my siblings.

~~

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

My brothers were gone and I was all alone again. They had this meeting to organise the next heist. I was bored with just sitting at home alone. I decided to take a night walk. Everything was so beautiful in my neighborhood and I loved how safe it was. But the problem I had with it was that it was too quiet. After the walk I went back home and opened the gate. I realized I don't lock it before. I must've forgot. When I walked in the house I was feeling really tired, the walk was really good but tiring because I was so bored and it was still so hot. I went to my room and turned on the fan then decided to sleep without pulling up the covers. I placed my phone under my pillow. I heard a noise downstairs and I let it slide thinking maybe it's my brothers. Then I heard my door being opened.

Me: Muller if you're gonna wake me up don't do it. I'm really tired.

I heard slow footsteps. I got up and looked back. I gasped when I saw a person all covered up in black. I screamed running to my bathroom. I quickly locked it. I was so scared I walked in the shower holding on to my chest in fear. I quickly looked for my phone in my pocket then I remembered I left it on my pillow. I started crying knowing what's going to happen to me. The person tried the door handle. Once he heard it was locked, he roughly tried pushing the door open. He tried 5 times until it fully opened. I couldn't even run out the window because it had burglars and i was gonna break my bones from jumping that distance. He came closer and i just cried scared that he'll rape me.

Me: please don't do this.

He walked closer and I screamed. He punched

me so hard, I thought I saw stars. I started crying silently. I knew now I had to obey rules or else I was gonna die. He poured something onto a cloth. I shook my head in fear pleading with him not to do this. He roughly pulled my hair then he closed my mouth and nose with the cloth. I didn't breathe because I knew if I did I would start getting very sleepy. He pulled my hair again, making me gasp and breathe then immediately I felt drowsy and fell into deep sleep.

[02/20, 10:10] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~
INSERT 42

.

.

.

-- KING'S POV --

.

.

Me and Muller were racing off home and I was gladly winning. I made a hard stop when I noticed the house gate was wide open. Muller sped off inside the yard and parked. I got inside too and I walked out of my car and so did he.

Muller: why would she leave the gate open?

Me: that's what I want to find out too.

Muller: we always tell her about how dangerous Cape Town is. Maybe she's getting a visit from Cardo.

I nodded because that's the only believable excuse at the moment. I was confused by our door being wide open, I walked inside and everything wasn't out of order. Maybe we're overreacting and she's still upstairs. Muller took out his gun and so did I because I had this bad feeling that I just couldn't shake off. I quickly

went up to her room and everything was in order. Her bed was a bit ruined like she was on it or jumping on it. I thought maybe she got a little excited and was jumping on the bed because I know my sister can be a bit childish sometimes.

Me: maybe she went out with Cardo and they'll be right back.

Muller: I know Lona would never not lock the house when she leaves

I knew he was being too paranoid. So I just nodded and went to my room. I took off my clothes and wore my white and black Nike basketball shorts with black socks. When I was about to take off my chains. I heard Muller calling my name. I sighed and wore my Gucci slides going to his room but he wasn't there so I knew he was still in Lona's room.

Me: she'll be right back Khazimla.

Muller: she left her phone.

Me: because she knows she'll come back.

Muller: she never leaves her phone anywhere.

Me: you're being crazy.

Muller: bro! I know her like the back of my hand.
She would never leave her phone! Call Cardo
and ask if she's not with him.

I went back to my room and punched Cardo's
number while walking to the room again. I knew
Lona was with Cardo if not then who is she with?
That's the only friend she has ever since her
and Kayla have not been close. Muller looked at
me calling Cardo.

Cardo: mfethu. (bro)

Me: Lona ublome nawe? (Is Lona with you?)

Cardo: no. I haven't seen her. Why?

Me: Ricardo. Don't lie bra. Is she there?

Cardo: I'm not. I haven't seen her. What's going on?

Me: nothing she's probably with that Nella chick. I'll call you back.

Cardo: moja. (Sharp)

Muller paced up and down the room. Trying to unlock Lona's phone.

Me: she's not there. She's probably with that new girl she talks about a lot.

Muller: I don't even have her fucking number!

He angry threw her phone and it landed towards

the bathroom door that's when I noticed the door was a bit cracked.

Me: Muller look at this.

I showed him the door, and surely someone must have kicked it for forced their way in. Lona must've locked it and couldn't get in that's why she cracked it open.

Muller: something happened to her. I fucking know it!

Me: let's not jump into conclusions! She must be the one that made this.

Muller: she's not strong enough! *shouts* I will kill that motherfucking bitch nigga!

He stormed out the room in a hurry. I knew he

thought Rellik was behind this. I chased after him, tried to stop him before he could do anything that could get the Brims kicked out of the Americans gang.

me: you're looking for a reason to fight with him.

Muller: I am going to his house and I'm taking my sister. If he thinks taking my sister against her own will in my own house will be okay. I'll break his neck. I allowed it the first time because I had he had a gun. But not this time!

He was so angry i knew I was had to go to make sure he doesn't do anything stupid because Lona might be safe wherever she is but she forgot to lock the gate and close the door. She just made a tiny mistake. I got in the car with him and he sped off to Rellik's house. We have been there before for parties and all of

that. When we finally got there he angrily beeped the car. I got out and rang the machine so he can see my face and open up. He didn't answer for like 5 minutes until he got out wearing sweat pants and a white tank top with just socks on. The gate was now open and Muller almost drove over him, and Rellik looked at the car in anger. I walked over to him, and as soon as Muller was out the car, he roughly held Rellik's tank top.

Muller: where is she?!

Rellik roughly pushed him off, and I went inside the house shouting Lona's name. I knew i couldn't leave Muller and Rellik alone because they would break into a fight. I went back to them, they were still shouting at each other.

Me: hela! Uphi lomntana!? (Hey! Where is she!?)

Rellik: something happened to Lona?!

He looked angry and confused at the same time. I don't even know if he was really angry or just acting. He must be hiding her somewhere.

Muller: don't fucking play with me Rellik! This is my little sister you're trying to play with not your street hoes.

Rellik: shit! Wait... did you have an argument that could lead her to run off?

He paced up and down worried. I looked at Muller who was still angry and I don't even think he believed Lona was not hidden by Rellik.

Muller: no! Rellik my little sister is fragile what

the fuck you want with her? I'll get a new bitch for you. Just not my sister man! You're scaring the fuck out of her taking her from her home-

Rellik: I didn't fucking take her! *shouts*

he quickly took out his phone called someone on his phone. We both heard music playing. It was Lona's phone.

me: she left her phone.

Rellik: fuck! Where could she be?!

Me: you know this Nella chick she always talks about?

Rellik: Scrappy' s girlfriend!

He looked very angry and tried calling someone again. I guess the person didn't answer the first time because he grew more angry started

calling this Nella again. Muller leaned on his car, he had a thinking face. I placed my hands on my head realizing this situation was now serious. She may really be in trouble.

Rellik: Nella! Is Lelona there with you? ... what!?!... fuck I think Kenny had something to do with this.. tell Scrappy I need him here now.

He hung up and started pacing in pure anger.

Rellik: I will fucking kill him! I don't care about a stupid war i will kill him! He likes disrespecting me thinking this is game.

Muller: you're telling me Kenny, my old homeboy kidnapped my sister!?

Rellik: you're still cool?

Muller: no. We just went to the same high

school together. We were cool then until I fucked his ex. I thought he was okay with all of that.

Rellik: he has been testing me and he knows Lona is my weakness. He wants me to react so I'll give him a reaction. If I see one bruise on her I will kill him!

Muller: I'll kill him for even thinking it's okay to put my sister in your little feud.

Rellik: I thought he respected you and he wouldn't hurt her.

Me: clearly not enough if he does this.

Rellik: he tried this once but he won't get away this time

Me: woah. Tried it once! ?

Muller: when did that happen!?

Rellik: on our way to East London. He sneaked an attack and tried kidnapping her. As soon as he heard my weakness he wants to see how far

I will go to protect it. Clearly he hasn't seen me in action.

Muller: this is why I didn't want her dating you! Shit like this happens all the time and she doesn't have the strength for all that. I know my little sister. She will break.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I cried silently scared that if I made a noise I'll be in a lot of danger. I was splashed with water making me gasp for air. I looked at the guy who was doing if this. I didn't even know him. I was naked in a cold room and I had a huge bruise on my face from the punch. I tried covering up my body, even with my hands and legs tired. I am glad I haven't been raped yet, more guys came

in the room making me look at them in fear. My eyes popped out when I saw Kenny walk in.

Kenny: here's the precious princess that has Rellik going crazy.

He came closer to me and brushed my face. I looked the other way in fear.

Kenny: what can such a pretty face see in that loser? You should have been with a real king, princess. *smirks*

He brushed my arm softly. I shivered in fear, Lord please protect me. He brushed my dry lips I tried moving my face and he held it tightly.

Kenny: did you like the gift I sent you? *smirks*

I'm giving you my heart girl.

Tears fell down and I started pleading him to let me go.

Me: please. I'm not even dating Rellik anymore please. He's moved on, please *cries*

Everyone in the room started laughing. It was a small room with a small window and inside there were like 4 guys including Kenny and the guy who splashed me with water.

Kenny: word is he's willing to look like a vagina for you. You're still his weakness meaning you're great value to me. Now let's have some fun and put on a show for your man.

Kenny roughly I kissed me. I didn't even kiss back he strangled me making me gasp and he shoved his tongue in my mouth. I tried pushing him off, and I noticed someone was making a video. I cried pushing him off. Then he finally stopped and started laughing.

Kenny: send him that. It will have him sweating like the vagina he is.

I wiped my mouth feeling disgusted and I wanted to vomit so much. I was gagging and he roughly pulled my hair. I guess he was hurt because his friends were laughing at him. I really wanted to vomit I didn't mean to embarrass him. I just want to go home.

Kenny: let me give you something that will really make you sick. *smirks*

He opened his belt then his zip, I shook my head crying so loud. He nodded smiling and his friends were hyping him up. I closed my legs so hard i knew i had to protect my most precious jewel. Guys started holding me, I tried with every power in my being to fight them but I couldn't. He smiled, and when he was about to lay on top of me. Kak just fell out of me. He stopped and looked down at what was smelling then he started laughing so loud I was embarrassed and scared at the same time.

Kenny: *laughs* this hoe took a shit

They all started laughing letting me go, they were laughing so hard others even had tears in their eyes. I moved away from the shit and held my body tight.

Kenny: you're not even worth fucking. Dirty hoe
laughs don't get her any food. She'll eat her
shit. Let's go boys. I have a motherfucker I need
to start plotting on.

They walked out and left me there with that
smell occupying the whole room. I cried and
held myself tight. I thank God I wasn't raped but
what if he tries it again tomorrow? I hope I get
home soon and my brothers will look for me. I
hope even Rellik finds me, anybody. i just want
to be found. I started praying so hard. I can't die
like this i'm only 18 and I'm not even dating
Rellik anymore. I just need to get out of here. I
need to think of plans incase my brothers take
too long.

[02/20, 10:11] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER
~

INSERT 43

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

We were now all inside my house. I was worried so much I had to sit down. My biggest fear was her not wanting to be with me after all this kidnapping shit.

Scrappy: our spy also doesn't know about this kidnapping.

Me: tell him to find out! And if I don't find her today, he doesn't want to know what I'll do to him!

Lona's brothers were making all sorts of calls I

didn't even know to whom. I am glad they're allowing me to help them find her because she means a lot to me just like she means a lot to them.

Muller: he's still in Cape Town

Me: how do you know?

Muller: some of my east friends are cool with him, and they told me he hasn't been there and they'll let me know when he has arrived there.

I nodded. I always thought Kenny would respect Muller and King meaning he would never hurt Lona. But I guess I underestimated him! I called Ghost because maybe he could help me on this. I know I have a lot of pride asking help from him because I want him to see me as a responsible person to lead the gang.

Ghost: do you know what time it is?

Me: Kenny took Lona.

Ghost: what!?

Me: I need her back urgently. I want him dead and her safe.

Ghost: are they still in Cape Town?

Me: I think so.

Ghost: I'll get my people to look into it.

Me: quickly.

Ghost: on it.

I dropped the call stressed that I didn't listen to Scrappy when he clearly told me the first time to put a tracker on Lona. Thing would've been way easier right now!

Me: can't you try calling Kenny?

Muller: phone's off

Me: can't we track his phone?

They all looked at me, and King quickly called someone.

King: Kurt can track phones.

Me: it will take some time with him. I need a hacker that will not take more than 5 minutes.

Muller: every minute we waste. Her life is in more danger.

Me: that's what I'm also worried about

King still called Kurt and he would be here in a few minutes with all the things he will need. I asked Scrappy to get another guy that tracks phones because I can't put Lona's life in the hands of Kurt knowing how slow he is. He

hasn't even tracked Kayla and he was supposed to track Kenny first but now we're in this situation because he couldn't do his job correctly. The tracker Scrappy called came first than Kurt. Kurt may be wanting a death wish. Kurt quickly walked in the house and he requested all the info. While we told him the info, the other guy was also taking notes.

Kurt: he may have switched off his phone and placed it in a foil but let's try tracking him down.

He started doing everything and I paced up and down thinking of plans on what to do. I can't sit here waiting for Kurt.

Gavin: not traced. He must've did what Kurt says he did.

Me: fuck! So how are we going to get her back!?

Muller: we need to think of options fast because I know how crazy he is. He might really hurt her.

Me: Kurt and Gavin get his address and stay there until he returns then call me immediately when he does.

Gavin: that I can do.

Kurt: I have other clients to attend.

Me: what other clients are more important than this case?! *angry*

Kurt: you're not the only Americans member I have to attend to Rellik.

I took my gun out and Scrappy immediately pushed my hand off because I could shot it off.

Scrappy: we need him *whispers*

Me: he is being fake. I don't trust him anymore.

Scrappy: I sense his change. We need him, he may know more then he leans on. *whispers*

I nodded and when Scrappy moved, I shot Kurt in the leg making him scream in pain. Scrappy looked at me. I placed my gun back in my sweatpants again.

Me: I don't like him being disrespectful.

King: can we just focus on finding Lelona! ?

Me: Gavin go do what I said you should. I will handle Kurt.

He nodded and quickly left. I looked at Kurt crying in pain. I called JR and OG to come clean him up and place him in the warehouse because I want to get answers about where my wife is

Muller: now we wait?!

Me: do you have a better plan?

Muller: my little sister might be dead right now and you're telling me we have to sit here and wait for a miracle to happen!? Fuck that.

Me: come with a plan and I'll follow. I'm willing to do anything to find out. I want her back safely just as much as you do.

He was about to respond when my phone started playing a message tone. I took it out, and it was a message that contained a video. I watched the video with my heart pounding like shit scared that it might be her dead body. The video played and my volume was on loud in full. I was so angry, she was naked and seeing her cry then him forcing his tongue into her mouth and her trying to push him off. Then the video

stopped.

Scrappy: what the?

They played the video again as I gave the phone and paced up and down in pure rage. I angrily threw everything I saw in sight and broke them. I was so angry I knew Kenny was a dead man as soon as I see him! When I managed to get calm but Muller wasn't in the lounge and King was sitting in the couch with his legs shaking with anger.

Scrappy: quickly track this number Kurt!

Kurt: my leg *groans*

King: if you don't do it quick I'll make sure I won't miss when I shoot you in your heart.

Kurt had fear in him. I didn't even think King could make threats he was always the quiet one. He got up even with the pain he had and typed on the laptop and started doing his thing.

Kurt: got an address!

Me: give it to us, quickly!

When he said it, I sighed knowing it wasn't Cape Town so he isn't in Cape Town.

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I was awoken by the loudness of the door. I

opened my eyes in fear and there was one tough guy. He untied me, and I quickly kicked him off and tried running off. Before I could land outside the place, he pulled me back roughly. He chuckled this evil chuckle making me regret trying to run away. He pulled me out the room with my hair. I was crying in pain. When we were out the room I noticed this was a house. A dirty house. Kenny had this serious look on him, I was scared to even look at any one of them in their eyes.

Kenny: get her cleaned up first and get her some clothes *chuckles* I don't want any suspicious looks when we move her.

?: we'll clean her there

Kenny: no way she's getting in any of my cars with that smell, Fix. Hurry up before Rellik tracks the phone.

Fix: why don't you just put it in a foil and wrap it

up?

Kenny: we're out of foil and if we go to town to get it now when we return it'll be too late.

The guy whom now I know as Fix pulled me towards another room. It was a bathroom and he opened cold water onto the dirty tub. I was scared to even go in. In my head I figured this is a trap house of some sort. The way it's so dirty and the rooms are so tiny.

Fix: get in.

I quickly obeyed because I didn't want to get beat up again or possibly raped. I didn't even want to wash because now they'll want to try what they tried yesterday. He threw a Sunlight bar in the water.

Fix: you better be done in 10 minutes.

He walked out. The bathroom only had a small window that had burglaries. I slowly got out the water so he doesn't hear the noise the water usually makes when a person gets up from a bathtub. I stepped out the water, I checked the window and outside there wasn't any more houses. Tears fell down because I was losing hope that I will ever be saved. I tiptoed back to the tub and I washed myself and I saw the door being opened again. He placed the clothes and towel on the closed toilet seat. Then he walked out again. After all of that trying to wash myself which was hard because he didn't even give me a washcloth. He stormed inside the bathroom

Fix: if you don't hurry up I will wash you myself. I'm sure you don't want that *smirks*

I nodded scared, then quickly got up and took the towel. I dried myself up while he looked. I was mentally praying he isn't as evil as Kenny. I was slow because I wanted someone to hurry up and save me. When I was wearing the dress slowly Fix roughly held my arm. He shook me hard, making me scared.

Fix: hella! Suphambana! (Hey! Don't be crazy!)

I nodded and quickly wore the ugly dark blue dress. I wasn't wearing a bra so my boobs were sagging in a bad manner. I tried braiding my hair but he pushed me out the bathroom. They didn't even get me an underwear. And they gave me these boyish white shoes. Everyone wasn't in the small house anymore. When we were outside I will noticed that the house really was the only one in this forest. I don't even know where we are. Are we even still in Cape Town? I

got pushed inside the car. Once they sat me down, my hands were tied and my legs too.

Kenny: blindfold her. I don't want her seeing where we're going.

Fix blind folded me and then the car sped off. I knew as soon as I heard a noise I will scream for people to come help me. The car drove off and I could hear we were driving in a gravel road. After a long time of them talking about stupid shit and laughing together with the other guys. In the car there was Fix, Kenny and 2 other guys. Then I was in the middle of Kenny and Fix. I couldn't even try to escape. I was so hungry too. I haven't eaten since yesterday before I was kidnapped.

Fix: shit! Traffic!

I was happy I could get some help from them .

Kenny: stay calm and shove her down then place a few things on her.

I screamed when I was roughly pushed in a small place. I think it was the back of the front's seat. Fix took off my blindfold.

Kenny: stay calm boys. If you dare scream Lelona I will gladly kill you.

I whimpered in pain because I was in so much pain

Kenny: shut the fuck up!

I was uncomfortable and to make it worse they placed things on top of me. The car stopped and I heard another person talking.

Me: HELP! HELP! I AM KIDNAPPED!

I even tried removing the heavy things. The traffic looked at Kenny

Traffic: step out of the car, sir.

He looked very serious. I was glad I am going to be rescued. Then Kenny did the unthinkable when the traffic guy was about to call other people, Kenny shot him and he fell I screamed crying.

Kenny: quickly drive!

The car sped off again, I cried so hard Kenny just laughed as the car sped off.

Kenny: you're gonna make me a lot off money in the black market. I was going to keep you, but now I will sell you off.

He smirked and Fix pulled me up even though it was hard because i was stuck. The way i was seating was very uncomfortable. I looked at the road crying.

[02/20, 10:12] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~
INSERT 44

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

I was losing hope because the traffic guy was only one. And I know how the police are, there very slow. I guess I have to accept I will be a sex slave to another dude in a foreign country. What did I expect though? Muller and Rellik fight a lot, there was no way they were going to be able to save me. I even had hiccups from crying, Fix blind folded me again, and this time. They put something in my mouth so I couldn't say anything. I eventually got tired and slept with my head facing down knowing the neck pains I will have. I was awoken by being moved out the car. I could feel the rain pouring on me making me shiver because I didn't have a jacket or anything on. Then I could feel we were in an house again. The blind fold was removed, this house was better than that last one.

Kenny: we'll need someone to help us quickly auction her off.

Fix: Otto? He's good with I.T things

Kenny: I don't want a lot of people knowing about this. Many people are willing to betray me for Rellik.

Fix: I trust Otto. He's too much of a pussy to do it.

Kenny: then get him here quickly.

I was taken by Kenny to another room, this one had a bed and it was a cute warm room. I was scared he would want to rape me. I stared looking at him crying hoping he would feel bad.

Kenny: you're worth much more when you're a virgin *laughs* sit on the bed.

I quickly obeyed. I was still tied so walking was a bit of a challenge. He pushed me on the bed

and I nearly fell painfully. When I was on it he tied me up on the metal headboard.

Me: you don't have to do this Kenny. I could just run off and act like this never happened. Please. My brothers could give you all the money you want.

Kenny: as if Muller won't kill me as soon as he sees me.

I was shocked he knew my brothers maybe he did research about me that much. He smiled at my facial expression.

Kenny: he may think this is because I have a problem with him but no. The only problem I have is with Rellik.

Me: why do I have to get involved? We are not even dating anymore.

Kenny: but he still cares about you. Very much. Without you, I'll be making him weak.

Me: you're starting a war for no reason.

Kenny: when he dies during that stupid war, all of you care about, then it will be worth it.

He walked out leaving me there alone. I just wish I don't get an abusive owner. What am I saying? They are all probably abusive they buy girls on the black market for Christ sake! I was so hungry I felt like I was becoming weak. And I was thirsty too. I should sleep so I won't feel the hunger and maybe I'll wake up better because the way I'm feeling i think I'll die in hunger. The door opened and Fix walked in with a plate and glass of water. I looked at the 2 slices of clean bread and water but at least it's something. He forced the bread in my mouth and before I could finish chewing he opened my mouth for water making me choke on the water. He

laughed at me as I coughed roughly. I wish I was dead, it is better than being treated like this just because Rellik loves me.

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

Me and King went inside the dirty house, and we looked at rooms, which were all empty. Then there was this room that had shit on the floor, I closed it disgusted by the image. My gun was still in my hands.

King: Rellik!

I rushed to the room he was calling me from.

Scared that maybe it's her dead body, but he held females clothes.

Me: this is what you called me for?

King: these are hers. I think she was wearing exactly this that day.

My heart started beating fast. They already moved her! I angrily punched the wall in anger.

Me: they moved her!

King: if we move now, we may have a chance of tracking their moves.

I nodded and he quickly walked out. He stood outside and looked at the ground.

Me: why are we slowing down now?

King: tyre tracks. Let's go this side.

King was a lot smarter than I anticipated if it was me I would've just got in my car and went anyway. We quickly got in my Lamborghini then I sped off. After a long time driving, I was confused when I saw policemen and all those things when there's a crime scene. Like procedure each of our cars were stopped and they were searched luckily we hid our guns well and everything worked well. When I was driving off I looked at the dead body being covered. I figured it was a traffic guy since there was one traffic car. Who would be dumb enough to shoot a traffic officer and not clean the evidence? That's a lot of prison time. We were driving for a long time and still no sign of any houses. I saw a house from a bit far and I was drove off there. I was disappointed when I drove

closer it was a B&B.

King: let's ask here. Maybe they have a room over here

I nodded and parked inside. When we asked the manager he didn't know nothing. To him no one was even in the house besides him and now us. He was Nigerian

Me: are there any more houses if we drive further?

Jon: no no. My house only.

Me: we have reached a dead end.

Jon: it's late. Sleep tonight go tomorrow.

King: let's take his idea. It's too far to go back we'll just go back tomorrow.

I nodded and ordered a room and he ordered his. In my room all I could think about was how I failed her. I can't even protect her, do I even deserve her after this when I can't even protect her?

.

.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

.

that Otto guy came and now it was like 1am. It's been 2 full days since I've been kidnap and still no word from my brothers or Rellik. My photos were taken and placed on the black market. Now I was in the room and tied up. I was about to sleep when I heard my door being opened slowly. I looked at Otto sneaking in hoping he

won't do anything crazy because i will scream. What am I saying!? Even the guys in this house don't care about me. He dialed something on his phone quickly.

Otto: I think Scrappy did give me the guy's number.

I was confused Scrappy gave him who's number? Was he behind this?

Otto: scrappy gave me Rellik's number but i can't find it, quickly give it to me so I can call him so he can track the call.

I quickly gave him the number with tears falling down. He dialed it with shaking hands because he was scared just like me, what if Kenny and the others wake up. He placed the phone on my

ear and it rang for a long time until he finally answered with a sleepy voice.

Xavier: who the hell is this?

Me: Xavier, you have to track this call please save me *cries*

Rellik: Lona!? Where are you? I promise I will get you back okay? Are you still okay?

Me: please hurry up. I have to hang up to save Otto's life because if they find out they will kill him. They're trying to sell me off in the black market. Hurry up.

Rellik: I will track right now, you have to be on the call longer.

Me: I can't. They will hurt me more. *sniffs*

Rellik: hang on baby i have to text Gavin. I promise I will get you out of there today.

Me: I don't want to be a sex slave Xavier

silently cries

Rellik: I will never let that happen.

Otto motioned for me to quickly get off the phone now.

Me: I have to go.

Rellik: Lona don't hang up! I have to know you're still safe.

Me: *sniffs* I am, but I'm very scared.

Otto took the phone and he hang up. He didn't even wait for me to beg him he walked out quietly and I prayed that Rellik arrives here fast. I couldn't even sleep, I watched the day change from night to morning with eyes wide open hoping Rellik would help me.

Fix: you're the spy! We need to move now!

I heard them shouting, my heart was beating fast, and I heard gun shots. I knew they were killing Otto. But those were a lot of gun shots and different screams. My door was banged open and I looked at King with a teary-eyed face. He ran to quickly untie me. I gave him the biggest hug ever. I didn't even want to let go; I was crying so bad I knew I would get a headache. He took me out the room, and I know gasped at the many dead bodies but Kenny was still alive in pain. I looked at Rellik scared to even go close to him. He scares me when he's this angry.

King: kill him now before anything else happens. His family will suffer instead of him. I don't want to take any chances with him living.

Rellik shot him in the head, I closed my eyes knowing a lot of these events will affect me badly. He looked at me when I opened my eyes, he walked closer to me, and I ran to give him a hug.

Me: thank you so much.

I was crying and I wanted to go home but I was sad that Otto was killed because of me.

King: you'll drive her straight home fast safely and I will take one of their cars. With Rellik you'll arrive faster.

I nodded and hugged him again, I hope nothing bad happens to him on the way. Rellik took my hand and walked me to his Lamborghini. When I was inside, that's when everything kicked in. I

am finally saved. I am going home. Once Rellik stepped inside the car, King also got in Kenny's car and we sped off first and he was behind us. I looked at the road and I felt a bit cold thinking about all of this. He turned on the heater and looked at me. He was still worried. Maybe I shouldn't have chased JR off when I broke up with him. Those are the things I regret. I started getting tired, and tried sleeping because i had this headache on me. He took my hand and kissed it, that's when I fell into deep slumber.

~~

After a long time I woke up because a flash was being flashed into my eye. I opened them and looked at the doctor. I was in my room, I didn't even know i was sleeping for that long. It was late again. I looked at Muller with a smile because i missed him. He came and sat next to me on the bed.

Doctor: she'll need some vitamins and some food. Her cheek bruise isn't that much but she'll be okay. I can recommend medication you can buy and ointment for the bruises.

They all nodded and I just looked at them all agreeing on something for me. I held Muller's hand. I knew they probably blame themselves since they're never in the house. And I'm always alone in here.

King: I'll walk the doctor out.

the doctor wrote the prescription and kwing walked him out. Muller looked at me then at Rellik who was still standing there staring at me.

Muller: what do you want to eat?

Me: anything is okay.

He nodded and got up from the bed, when he was out he came back and stood by the door.

Muller: no kissing or anything in this house.

He said, I chuckled and smiled. He smiled too, and walked out again. In a weird way that was him approving of us because he had a smile. But the real question I have to ask myself is: Do I really want Xavier again after tasting what it's like being loved by him?

[02/20, 10:13] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER
~

INSERT 45

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I looked at him, we just stared at each other. I think he was also scared to say something to me because all of this is practically his fault. I moved over to the other side, Muller was sitting on. He sat on the bed and still looked at me. He held my hand making me smile a small smile.

Rellik: I'm really sorry. I know should've protected you. I should've worked harder on keeping you safe. When you were gone Lona, I felt like I was going crazy. I wanted him to suffer a painful death but King is right i couldn't risk him being alive.

Me: can we not talk about him? It's something I want to forget forever.

I sat up and looked at him with a serious face because I feel like we need to have a serious conversation.

Rellik: I promise nothing like that will happen again.

Me: I can't hate you for this because I love you so much.

I looked down with tears falling down. Being loved by him is still something I have to get used to.

Rellik: I know it's something I could have prevented but give me one more chance.

Me: how do I even know it's going to be different this time?

Rellik: I'll make sure everything runs smoothly. You will be my number one priority. I want you back, life is too short for me to have my pride and not tell you how much I need you back. I feel like you complete me. I was really out of it when you were taken

Me: it's worth a try one more time

I looked up at him. He brushed my cheek with his other arm. He looked into my eyes making my heart beat fast. I laid close to him on his arm

Rellik: I love you. More than I'll ever love anyone on this earth.

Me: i love you too. I always tell myself I'll get over you but I just can't. I keep loving you more.

Rellik: I want to kiss you so bad.

I chuckled because I know he wants to respect Muller even though Muller was joking. I'm glad he learned his lesson and knows he has to respect my brothers in order for us to work.

me: how did you convince Muller about us?

Rellik: I was just as shocked as you. I thought after this he'd hate our relationship more.

Me: me too.

We started talking more and he eventually ended up cheering me up. I knew he would get tired because he probably hasn't slept ever since I was kidnapped.

Me: you need to sleep.

Rellik: I'll be okay.

He pulled me even closer and held me tight. I giggled because I was loving him being affectionate. He kissed my cheek and chin making me blush and laugh at how ticklish it was. He yawned again, and i looked at him smiling. He must think I'll just be taken from him again.

Me: my brothers are here. And as soon there's something. I'll scream.

Rellik: *chuckles* maybe I should really take a nap.

I nodded and he started drifting off to sleep. After a while I was getting hungry. Where is Muller with this food!? I knew if I got up I would wake Rellik up. I watched him sleep peacefully and started admiring his looks. He was really so cute. The hood cute, the tattoos make him more interesting. Gosh don't get me started on

his lips. They were so soft when we kiss I could never get tired of it. Muller finally arrived in my room with a Pick n Pay plastic. I gently removed myself from Rellik, he woke up and saw it was Muller than went back to sleep. I looked at Muller smiling

Mullet: pick n pay was full. I could've hurried up but I don't even know those diet things you eat so I had to ask for help.

Me: it's okay. Anything would've been okay really. The diet is the last thing on my mind today. Thank you by the way.

He placed the bag next to me on the headboard. I followed him out the room because we needed to talk. Rellik was sleeping sleepily I didn't want to disturb him.

Me: thank you for changing your mind about him.

Muller: *shrugs* I see that he cares.

Me: what changed your mind?

Muller: seeing him so stressed looking for you and him acting crazy just to find you. It made me realise maybe you are more than just pussy to him. He may really love you like he says he does .

Me: we haven't even had sex, so I wasn't even a pussy to him.

muller: wait wait wait. Relik? Xavier? Hasn't had sex with you?

Me: how dirty do you think I am?

Muller: sorry Lil sis. It's just that i know how he is when he's in a new relationship. He pressures sex and when he gets it. He backs off. I'm shocked you dated him for a month without him receiving anything. I'm proud you're not giving it

up easily.

Me: well i was raised by 2 players. I think I can sense when someone is playing me.

He gave me a hug. And i smiled going back to my room. Rellik was still asleep so I sat in the bed and started eating. While i was eating memories of my almost choking on water when Fix forcely made me eat. I wiped my tears before Rellik could wake up. I just drank some juice and decided to turn on some music. In the mist of watching the TV. Memories of Kenny wanting to rape me and i took a shit came back. I was scared that maybe Rellik didn't kill him properly and he'll come back to sell me off in the black market. Tears fell and eventually I was making myself look crazy because the images of the abuse i have endured there just wouldn't go away. I looked for my anxiety pills before i go crazy. I took 2 and drank them with the water in

there pick n pay plastic. I looked outside the window and I could see I was safe because there wasn't anyone out there. I'm being paranoid and I need to calm down. I went back to the bed and cuddled closer to Rellik. He held me tighter and I hid my face so he wouldn't see i was crying.

Rellik: Lona?

Me: yes?

Rellik: lelona look at me.

I looked up, and he had this worried look mixed with anger. I knew he didn't like that this happened and I just can't get it out of my head. He wiped my tears and I hugged him more. I didn't mean to worry him especially when he was tired

Rellik: I'm right here. I'm not going anywhere.
Trust me

~~

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

Me: I need something people won't easily notice
it's a tracker

Scrappy: I don't know anything besides a
necklace or bracelet even a ring.

Me: everyone could think of that!

Scrappy: well those are the only things you
could use. It's better than nothing.

Me: I'll take anything right now. Just until a
better idea comes up. I'll need to go get her a
necklace or bracelet.

Scrappy: *laughs* you do that.

Me: moja

We both hung up. I looked at the time and I knew I had to go because I was overstaying my stay but then at the same time I didn't want to leave her alone. Right now she was downstairs with her brothers, all i know is she's going to make some food for me but I don't know what. My phone rang and it was Ghost.

Me: we found her.

Ghost: and the reason you didn't tell me?

Me: I forgot. I was caught up with making sure she was okay.

Ghost: Fifi and Sisipho were worried sick.

Me: Sisipho is there?

Ghost: yes. She flew in yesterday. Her and her husband are staying with us, Fifi won't let them

stay at a hotel.

Me: you don't sound too happy about that.

Ghost: he's looks like the type to snitch if he found a gun or anything illegal in the house.

Me: *laughs* he wouldn't dare.

Ghost: you know how weak some laaities are
laughs

Me: I have to tell you something.

Ghost: gaan aan (go ahead)

Me: I killed Kenny.

Ghost: I suspected that. Now we need to think this through before his father learns about his death.

Me: I'm willing to do anything to keep her safe. I have dotted down the option of keeping her tracked on all times.

Ghost: she will go to the safe house. With Fifi and Sisipho. Then we will have to kill Kenny's

father so he doesn't kill us first.

Me: let me know when I'll do it gladly.

Ghost: they need to go to the safe house in like 3 days.

Me: okay. She'll be ready to leave.

Lona walked in the room with a tray in her hands. I smiled at her having this goofy smile on her. I wonder what she's up to.

Ghost: see you then.

I hung up and looked at her. She placed the tray on top of me and I laughed looking at the cute breakfast she made.

Lona: wow. Really?

Me: sorry babe. A smiley though?

She shaped all the fried bacon into a smile.
Then three slices of tomatoes on the each side
I think sort of like ears. The small saguase was
the nose and the eggs were the eyes.

Me: thank you.

She looked at the door and quickly pecked my
lips. I laughed because instead of me being
impatient about kissing her. She was the one
impatient about kissing me. She sat next to me
on the bed and looked at me.

Me: where are your brothers?

Lona: downstairs but they're going to a meeting
with Ghost later on.

Me: Ghost?

Lona: yes your uncle. It's about a heist.

me: you're going to be in my house.

Lona: why don't you just stay here?

Me: because I don't have clothes here. You have clothes in my house

Lona: *playfully rolls eyes* eat your food.

Me: let's share it.

Lona: no. I made it for you.

Me: the way it's looking. I want to share it with you.

Lona: okay wait. Let me take a picture of it first.

She ran out and after a while she came back.
She sat on the bed again and took pictures of the meal.

Lona: smile for just an minute.

Me: my cheeks are going to hurt.

Lona: just one smile baby *chuckles*

I smiled showing all my teeth in a goofy manner she started laughing hard and took a few pictures. Then the flash stayed longer and I knew she was making a video

Lona: 2 smiles to brighten my day. *giggles*

Then the flashed stopped and I shook my head placing the tray in between us. We started sharing the meal together but she was only eating the tomatoes.

Me: you can't eat bacon?

Lona: nope. I'm back on the diet.

Me: why are you even on a diet? You look perfectly fine to me.

Lona: *blushes* well i feel like I'm not so until I get the best confidence then maybe I'll get out the diet.

I nodded and finished up the food and the juice. After eating I laid on her boobs while she typed on her phone. I was also looking at her WhatsApp messages.

Lona: your head is too damn big for you to be laying on my boobs.

Me: they're very comfortable.

I smirked shaking her other boob she laughed smacking my hand away. I'm happy she wasn't uncomfortable with that because then I would've known she was raped. I still need to

talk to her and find out what happened. I need to know more but i don't want to push her into talking about something she's not ready to talk about. I watched her reply to this Brandon person text.

Me: who's that?

Lona: a student I tutor. Don't be jealous. He's gay *laughs*

Me: I'm not jealous.

Lona: okay *laughs*

She started replying and I knew I have to look into this Brandon kid.

[02/20, 10:14] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER
~

INSERT 46

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

I looked at Nella and Lona bonding. They were both crying and hugging each other like crazy women.

Nella: I'm so glad you're okay! I was so worried. I thought I lost you forever!

Lona: you can't get rid of me that easily!
chuckles

Nella: we have so much to catch up on. I am so ready for us to go shopping.

I looked at Lona. I could sense she was a bit uncomfortable because people are the last things she wants to see after what happened to her and that's normal. But I know she won't be able to tell Nella that so I decided to speak for her.

Me: she can't. I'm still bonding with her.

I brought her closer to me and kissed her cheek. We were in my house. And Scrappy went out to deal with Kurt and I said I'll follow after him but I'm still not comfortable leaving Lona alone even though JR and OG are outside guarding the whole place. Now I understood why my uncle Ghost always has bodyguards everywhere in the mansion he lives in.

Nella: you guys are so adorable! I'm so happy you're back together! *squeals*

Me: *chuckles* you and me both.

Nella: next time you'll learn not all girls like their family being disrespected.

Lona: Nella! *chuckles*

I like Nella's honesty but sometimes I wish she would shut up. Especially when she speaks the truth when i don't want to hear it.

Me: yeah yeah.

Nella: I wish I had a brother that would beat Scrappy up for me so he could act right!

I couldn't help but laugh at that one. Imagine someone beating Scrappy up and him changing. My nigga is too stubborn to change.

Lona: what has he done now? *laughs*

Nella: I want a child. But he's busy making excuses about how we're not ready.

Lona: but aren't you guys fucking raw?

I looked at Lona shocked. She blushed and looked away. I think this is my cue to go. I am not going to listen to them gossip about my boy.

Lona: where are you going? *laughs*

Me: I'll be back. I'll be at the warehouse checking on Scrappy.

Lona: when will you be back?

Me: when do you need me back for dinner?

Lona: I don't even want you to go.

I kissed her and she smiled in the kiss. trust me I didn't even want to leave her but I needed to go check this Kurt situation out. And I still have to talk to her about the safe house thing.

Me: I'll be back in like 2 hours. If you guys need anything there's JR and OG outside.

Lona: okay love you.

Me: love you too. And no going outside the yard.

Lona: okay. I got it.

Nella: I thought you wanted to bond with her?

Me: bye Nella.

Nella: bye dummy.

Lona started laughing with Nella then I left them and when I was outside I told the boys they shouldn't allow them to leave.

Me: I know how persuasive Nella is. Make sure they don't go anywhere and call me if there's any problem.

OG: moja bozza (sure boss)

I got in my range rover and drove out the yard. I texted Scrappy that I'll be in the warehouse in about 45 minutes. When I got there, I smiled looking at Scrappy torture Kurt.

Scrappy: Kurt you're going to have less minutes to live now. Speak

Kurt: I don't know anything please. Do a lie detector test if you don't believe me. *cries in pain*

He looked really believable but any liar would

deny it.

Me: have the phone records been checked?

Scrappy: no trace. He's good.

Me: or he's innocent.

Kurt looked like he was in pain and he was going to die anytime soon.

Kurt: I know you guys don't believe me and that's okay. I-i. ...

That's when his breath fell short and he died. I looked at Scrappy. I guess Kurt really was innocent and Scrappy pushed a little too much until he died.

Me: let's get other people to clean this up and we're going to get some drinks. Then you're gonna tell me how you're surviving with someone talkative like Nella. And we're gonna get Gavin to look over this Brandon kid.

Scrappy: which Brandon kid?

Me: some dude messaging Lona a lot. She says she tutors him but I still need to know more. I can't just trust everyone. He could be undercover trying to hurt me through her. She says he's gay

Scrappy: man you're paranoid.

He started laughing then we walked out, He called some people to clean up his mess. I know we should respect someone's death but Kurt is not the first person to die in our hands and he's probably not the last.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV--

.

.

I gave Nella her juice and drank mine.

Nella: so what's up with Rellik locking you up in here

Me: truth?

Nella: yes please.

Me: I'm still scared of going out. I feel like I'm gonna see Kenny or I'll get kidnap again. I'm scared to even be away from Xavier. I trust no one but my brothers and him.

Nella: Lona. You could've told me. I wouldn't even have suggested it. I should've known you weren't ready. I'm so sorry.

Me: it's okay. You were just trying to cheer me

up.

Nella: next time please let me know when you're uncomfortable. I'm your best friend not Rellik's best friend. I will understand. I promise.

Me: *smiles* I was just scared of disappointing you then you'll get a new best friend.

Nella: girl! We're stuck for life! And you can say no or disagree with me. You're my friend not my follower. You should have your own feelings and opinions and rights.

I hugged her because I needed her saying this. With Kayla I was always afraid of disagreeing because it would lead to an argument. But with Nella I can be free

Me: now tell me about this baby situation
laughs

Nella: I want a child but he says we're not

ready.

Me: I thought you were having unprotected sex with him.

Nella: but he always makes sure I drink after pills the following day.

Me: maybe he's right friend. A baby would be too much stress. You guys are still young.

Nella: I know but i feel like we're ready.

Me: *laughs* have you tried babysitting as training?

Nella: gosh I didn't even think of that!

Me: there is a kid i know that will definitely light up your day. Let me call Cardo.

Nella: Cardo's child?

Me: you know him? He's so adorable! *laughs*

Nella: girl that child makes my hair turn grey
sighs

Me: *laughs* he has a lot of energy.

Nella: too much energy *laughs* 2 is the devil phase.

Me: I think 2 year olds are sweet.

Nella: *laughs* you must be high.

~~

After spending a lot of time with Nella we eventually watched a movie called Get Out. And it was so scary! Before the ending of the movie, that's when Xavier arrived with Scrappy. They were talking about something and laughing too. But I couldn't understand what. Then Xavier came to sit next to me and kissed me. I could taste the alcohol on his mouth but he wasn't that drunk. He didn't even look drunk phof. Scrappy and Nella decided they would leave.

Me: bye bes fran.

Nella: *smiles* bye skeem.

She hugged me and Xavier shared this bro hug and a handshake with Scrappy then they left.

Relik: baby, we have to talk about something.

Me: I'm all ears.

I hope he won't ask me to talk about what happened to me. I'm just not ready to talk about it yet.

Relik: you and Aunt Fifi will be going to the safe house in about 3 days

Me: what?

Relik: it's for your own safety.

Me: but what about varsity when they reopen? I can't lose my education.

Relik: I'll sort everything out before varsity reopens.

Me: what about Sisipho? I was supposed to spend time with her this holiday.

Rellik: she can come too, with Nella. So we'll know you're all safe.

Me: there's going to be a war. *sighs* what if you get hurt? What if my family gets hurt? Oh my God.

Rellik: baby. Calm down, I'll make sure Muller and King don't get hurt.

Me: then I guess I'll have to start packing. Where is the safe house?

Rellik: can't tell you.

Me: why not? I'll be staying there *laughs*

Rellik: yes but you can't know the location. *chuckles*

Me: okay answer one question. Will I need swimming costumes?

Rellik: *laughs* yes.

Me: so it has a beach. *smirks*

Rellik: or a pool.

Me: *laughs* mxm! Will it only be a house or whole area of some sort?

Rellik: you'll see when you're there baby.

Me: awusadiki *smiles* (you're so annoying)

My phone rang before he could respond. It was a message from Brandon.

Brandy [OBJ] [OBJ] : serious!? Lona do not play, I will get all distinctions if I have too girl!

I laughed at him being crazy because I promised to buy him AKA concert tickets if he gets a distinction all year in the module I tutor him in. I wanted him to feel motivated enough to achieve a distinction and he's a good person.

Always cracking up jokes and making me laugh.

Me: I promise on my life. [OBJ] I'll see how bad you want those tickets.

Brandy [OBJ] [OBJ] : I will need to cancel a lot of dick appointments to concentrate on schoolwork [OBJ] [OBJ] [OBJ]

I laughed again and Xavier looked at me with his brows furrowed confused as hell.

Me: I'm just talking to Brandy

Xavier: Brandy?

Me: Brandon.

He kept quiet and I looked at him shaking my head at how paranoid and insecure he is.

Me: babe he's gay.

Xavier: I know. But I don't like him messaging you too much.

I couldn't help but laugh. This is crazy.

.

.

.

-- KING'S POV --

.

.

I parked inside the yard and so did Muller, X, Game, Gunz, and Trigger. Ghost wanted a meeting with us and since he didn't tell us the location we figured he wanted us to go to his mansion. Every time I come here I am amazed by this house and the tight security he has. I'm

sure his wife always feels safe with the security here. Gunz pressed the doorbell.

Gunz: iphila grand lenqawa (this dude lives a good life)

X: inbasela qho bruh! (It amazes me every time)

The door was opened by his gorgeous wife. Fifi is one hot girl! If Ghost wasn't married to her I wouldn't mind having a sugar mama like her. She smiled and let us in. I couldn't help but stare at her ass. Muller nudged me to stop. I looked at him he shook his head.

Fifi: he's in his office boys. *smiles*

She walked towards another direction and we walked upstairs to his room.

Muller: Ghost will kill you if he sees that.

Me: he can't stop what I look at.

Muller: ntwana bendizok'bhodisa mna ba bujonga umfazi wam. (Boy I would kill you too if you would look at my wife)

The gents and I started laughing. Obviously I wouldn't try anything on Fifi because she's married to Ghost. I still value my life enough to know I won't mess with him. Trigger opened the door and we all walked in. Ghost was still on the phone and we decided to sit down. I wonder what bank we'll do a heist on because the last meeting we had we had to cancel FnB in Jozi due to the high risk security. Now we'll need a new plan for a new bank. After the call Ghost then payed full attention to us.

Ghost: okay laaities. Let's get busy. I had a new plan drawn up, as always I want a clean job.

~~

After the meeting, Fifi offered us some food. And I convinced the boys we should take it. She served us the food, as we were talking and eating. I heard the front door being opened.

Fifi: Sisipho is that you! ?

?: yes! I'm back and I still can't find a perfect house

A lady came in the kitchen and I almost choked on my drink looking at her.

Muller: makazi? (Auntie?) *shocked*

[02/20, 10:15] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~

INSERT 47

.

.

.

-- MULLER'S POV --

.

.

I looked at her with my eyes wide open not sure if I'm really seeing her or her spirit. I could see she was also shocked to see me and King here. King stood up and was about to go to her and I held him back with his arm because I didn't trust this one bit. What if siyathakathwa apha (we're being bewitched) and they're using my aunt's body?

Sisipho: molweni (hello)

Her face was full of shame. It was like she was

ashamed we saw her. I am still not believing this is the real her. She tried to walk closer to us and I pulled my gun out. Fifi screamed.

Fifi: No! Sisipho talk to them! I don't want any blood shed in my house!

Sisipho: don't worry Fifi. He would never shoot me.

She walked closer to us, then Ghost quickly got in the kitchen

Ghost: what the fuck is going in here?!

I looked at him in anger. I'm sure he's in on this too. He came to me and shoved the gun on my chest.

Ghost: calm the hell down. And we'll give you guys space to talk.

He went to Fifi, kissed her forehead and walked out with her, and the boys. Me, King and Aunt Sisipho were the only ones remaining in the kitchen. King poked her shoulder I think he was also wondering how this is even real. Man Lona will be so amazed by this, she'll probably be angry her own biological mother would fake her death like this instead raising her like she should.

Sisipho: yes I am still alive.

King: how? What? What's going on?

Sisipho: you... your mother tried to kill me.

Me: what!?

The room got silent. My first instinct was to shoot her dead for lying about my mother like that but I knew I had to control my anger.

Sisipho: she couldn't handle how your father loved me and she wanted to kill me and Lona. But we survived and when i came back for Lona. You guys had moved and I didn't know where. I decided to move elsewhere because the memories there brought back a lot of things.

Me: I don't believe this! Lona better not know anything before we know the whole truth.

Sisipho: she already knows. Khazimla give me one reason why I would lie!? Just one!

Me: you were jealous of the love our parents shared.

Sisipho: of what they shared?! He came to me I didn't even ask for any of this. Your mother has been jealous of me the whole time we grew up

together! You know how rude she was to me Khazimla! You know, so please don't make me look like a bad person when your own mother drove her husband away and he found comfort in my bed sheets.

I kept quiet because now she was crying. Her and Lona are so much alike it's still freaks me out a bit. Their personalities and all of that

Me: Wait... you said Lona knows?!

King: she didn't even say anything about this.

Sisipho: I asked her not too. I was and still am afraid of Isipho. She is capable of big things.

Me: Lona has been keeping a lot of secrets. First Rellik now this! I don't even know her anymore.

Sisipho: it's part of growing up. She can't remain a baby forever

I glared at her, she has no right talking about her growing up when she didn't take part in any aspect of her growing up. She chose to move instead of properly looking for her child. What type of mother is she!?

Me: do you even have the right to say that?

Sisipho: excuse me?

Me: you gave up easily and didn't look for her yet all of a sudden when she'll all grown up and in varsity you want to partake in her life and she's magically your daughter again.

Sisipho: don't talk to me like that! I am still your aunt! Your mother was the reason I couldn't even spend time with my child when she was a baby. The only person to be blamed in this is her!

Me: you know nothing about her! We had to

grow up with her, wipe her every tear when she felt like she didn't belong in this world. We were there when she was bullied in high school. We were there in every step yet you, her mother was busy living the lavish lifestyle

Sisipho: you don't know my struggle! *wipes tears*

Me: you're right. I don't. But I do know you left your daughter with the woman you so claim try to kill you and you moved! You didn't look for her properly or have any efforts. You just moved! Think and think hard. Do you really think you deserve that "mother" title now.

She slapped me hard, then King stood in between us. He looked at me shaking his head. I am very angry that she would rock up alive and lie about our mother! I don't care if King doesn't agree with me but Sisipho is a bitch that deserves to die, again.

Sisipho: don't you ever! Ever in your stupid life think you have the right to speak to me like that thinking you know everything because you were listening to my sister's lies and you actually believed them. I don't care what you say if you want to continue acting like a little weak bitch that pulls out guns on women and talks trash then continue doing that! I am done being nice and begging people to believe me; the only person I will ever beg in this point in my life is my daughter! Nobody else! Come see me when you have stopped acting like a little boy that wasn't raised well.

She walked out with tears streaming down. King looked at me and I didn't care one bit. She deserved those words. Now I need to talk to Lona about all of this

Me: what!?

King: that was out for line.

Me: she deserves it. She is lying about OUR mother. Or have you gone deaf?

King: you know how crazy mom is. I wouldn't put it pass her

I looked at him surprised. I can't believe King would say that.

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

I scrolled through my phone looking at the

information Gavin sent about Brandon. Yes he was indeed gay, and he seemed like a good kid. No criminal records or any bad rumors about him. He was clean, but I still don't like him messaging Lona. Her attention should be all on me, not some gay boy. I'm her man, not him. I don't trust him and I'll have to have a serious talk with him about texting her all the time.

Me: attention on me.

Lona: sorry. *chuckles* okay, I'm turning my phone off.

Me: thank you.

She laughed and turned it off. She kissed me making me smile. After the kiss, she wiped the lip gloss off my lips.

Lona: you know you're the only one for me.

Me: I know. *smirks*

Lona: so cocky *laughs*

Me: but I don't like how he's messaging all the time like you don't have a life and you should always respond.

Lona: babe what's wrong?

Me: nothing.

Lona: you never had a problem with me having guy friends. Cardo is cool, you don't have a problem with me being friends with him.

Me: I know he'd never disrespect me like that. I don't even know this Brandon kid.

Lona: I'm sure he's pretty innocent. No need to be paranoid.

Me: ever since what happened we need to be careful Lona. Those who appear to be someone might not truly be who they say they are.

Lona: can we not talk about it?

Me: *sighs* we need to talk about it someday.
You need to counselling.

Lona: I'm fine. I'm safe now, am I not?!

Me: don't get defensive baby. I'm doing all of
this because I love you.

Lona: *sighs* I know. But, it's just too ... you
know what? I'm fine. I really don't want to talk
about it.

Me: you still have nightmares about whatever
happened. I want you to be okay. Maybe just 2
sessions before going away?

Lona: you're not going to stop are you?

Me: you know I'll never lis-

Lona: "listen to you when it comes to your
safety" I know.

Me: *laughs* I don't say that all the time

Lona: you do. But baby, if I go to therapy you'll
leave Brandon alone.

Me: I didn't even touch him

Lona: you're my boyfriend. I know you!

Me: *chuckles* I'm serious babe. I just looked him up. I haven't even touched him.

Lona: good. And don't. He's a good person. I'll go to therapy then *sighs*

Me: you're going to go as soon as possible.

Lona: I'll arrange a meeting for today. *sighs*

Me: I'll gladly take you

I kissed her chin and nose making her giggle.
She always says it's ticklish but I love how it puts a smile on her face.

.

.

.

-- NELLA'S POV --

- .
- .
- .

After the steamy session between me and Scrappy he got a damp towel to wipe me. I always smile when he does that because it means he cares. After all of that, he gave me the pills and water.

Me: really?

Scrappy: Nella we talked about this.

Me: no, you talked I listened.

Scrappy: I'm still 25. A child will be too much a distraction with the life we live.

Me: Scrappy you're always out and about. I need someone that will keep me occupied and someone that i will love forever. I want a baby!

Scrappy: I can get you a puppy.

Me: don't make me send you to the couch

Scrappy: what? *laughs*

me: I'm being serious and you're talking about puppies! I don't want a dog, I want a baby.

Scrappy: I've seen a lot of relationships get broken after having a child.

Me: so you're saying you're not trusting our relationship to survive this?

Scrappy: don't put words in my mouth

Me: it's what I'm hearing.

Scrappy: I'm saying, we're still young. Let's enjoy our youth then think about babies in a year or two.

Me: I have the craving now.

Scrappy: why babies? Why can't you crave a car? House? Clothes? Money? Why babies?

I started laughing because his face was so

funny. I folded my arms looking at him. He is supposed to be serious but he's making me laugh.

Me: Scrappy if you love me. You'll give me a child. That's all I'm saying.

Scrappy: emotional blackmail really?

Me: yes, really! *copies his voice*

Scrappy: if we have this baby-

Me: yes! *excited*

Scrappy: listen.

Me: okay, I'm listening *smiles*

Scrappy: if we have this baby. We're not changing. I don't want a lot of arguments and the "baby I'm tired" bullshit.

Me: what? *laughs*

Scrappy: I didn't stutter *smiles*

Me: okay, I promise now let's continue having fun making this baby!

~~

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

.

I wiped my tears looking at the doctor again.
This can't be happening. I don't want to believe this at all

Me: please check again.

Doc: I'm sorry, Miss-

Me: check again!

She checked again and there was still no heartbeat. I know my baby is in here. I know it,

there has to be a heartbeat!

Me: what happened? *cries*

Doc: I am so sorry but I have to let you know you have lost the baby. Maybe it was the amount of stress you had during the first trimester.

Me: this cannot be happening to me. I need this baby *sniffs* I need to adjust to the news I have just heard

Before she could reply I ran out of the room. I adjusted the hospital gown and walked out with my face having a lot of tears. I'm glad she didn't scream and let me take a walk for a bit. This isn't true! The child in my stomach was going to make a lot of money for me! I don't believe this. This is all Lona's fault, she stressed me because I know how much Rellik wants her

even if it means killing everyone just to keep her. She will pay for this! I know she will. I will make sure she does.

January 13 at 7:39pm · Public

[02/20, 10:16] Ron: I CHANGED A MONSTER ~
INSERT 48

.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

.

Once I finally arrived in the house. I wiped my tears, and held my emotions in. Austin couldn't see me cry, he'll ask me why am I even crying.

He didn't know about the pregnancy, and I don't want him to know now. Austin is a guy that I met here in Jozi the second week I was here. I was homeless for the first week and we met at this club when I wanted to ask for a job. He was fascinated by my beauty and wanted me to be his. After I told him I didn't have a place to stay, he took me in. Even though I pay for the rent in another way, I like the comfort of this house. And I can't go back home because my dad doesn't answer my calls at all anymore as I stopped trying to call

Aus: you're back.

He came and kissed my lips roughly and grabbed my ass. He was white rich boy that always got what he wanted. Apparently his father owns this large company and he will take over from it soon but right now he's too busy

enjoying his youth. Which explains the constant partying from him. And the drug use. What I hate about him is how abusive he gets, especially in sex. He's very rough, sometimes I like it but sometimes i just want him to go slow.

Me: yes.

Aus: where are the bags?

Me: huh?

Aus: you said you were going shopping.

I lied to Austin when I saw I was bleeding badly and I felt weak so I went to hospital without him knowing. I escaped from the hospital even though I knew I should've slept over there because any type of complications could occur any minute. But I'm fine, the baby is gone and i need a new plan.

Me: oh! I didn't find anything I liked.

Aus: what will you wear tonight?

Me: tonight? We're going out again?

Aus: baby. I'm only 21 if I can party every day. I will *smirks*

He smacked my ass and kissed me again. I knew he was horny but I really wasn't just the mood for sex. I just lost my pregnancy from all the stress I have been experiencing. I'm blaming Lona, and Austin for this! Now I need to find a way to get back to Cape Town for just a weekend and do what I should've done a long time ago.

Me: baby, how about- ahh. Uh my. .. how about we go to Cape Town for... uhh the-the weekend?

I could barely even talk with him kissing my neck with so much sexual force.

Aus: Cape Town?

Me: yes! It's amazing there baby. Please!

Aus: okay. We'll go tomorrow.

Me: today.

Aus: why the rush?

Me: I want us to have a full day there tomorrow.

Aus: okay, now show me how much you want this Cape Town trip. *smiles*

Me: I'm on my periods babe.

Aus: your mouth isn't having menstrual problems.

.

.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

Since it was early I had the therapy session but then I had to go home early because Muller kept calling me. Xavier dropped me at the house, and I could see JR parking his car near my house. I guess he'll be watching me. Now I feel safer.

Me: I'll call you.

Rellik: okay, I love you.

Me: I love you too.

I was about to walk out. But then he held my hand.

Rellik: give me a kiss.

I laughed because he was so serious. It's just a kiss and I forgot to even give him one. I'm more curious why Muller would call me so much. I kissed him and he smiled. This time he was the one wiping the lip gloss

Rellik: things you girls put on.

Me: shut up.

I walked out the car. He made sure I was in the house safely and that's when I heard his car sped off. When I walked in the lounge I heard my brothers arguing. Once I got in that's when it stopped.

Me: you needed me?

King: where have you been!?

Me: uhm... with Zay. What's going on?

Muller: Sisipho is going on.

Me: what? Uh... who's that?

King: we know Lelona.

I didn't even know how to respond. Should I even respond? How did they know? Muller and King love their mother so much. I know they'll end up hating my mother. Does this mean I'll be kicked out the house? I looked at them to continue talking. I sat down because i was scared of what they'll say.

King: why didn't you say anything?

Me: wait? What do you know first?

Muller: we know she's a liar willing to make our mother look bad. Unless there's more?

Me: I believe her

Muller: what!?

King: let's all calm our voices down.

Me: why would she lie? Clearly she's still hurt by all of this. And Isipho always made me feel like I was an outsider. You guys witnessed how ugly her heart is. I totally believe my mother.

Muller: why would mom do such a thing? It makes no sense

He was about to call someone and I quickly took his phone because I don't want him calling Isipho. That will make her want to kill Sisipho again.

Me: you can't call her! You'll be placing my mom in danger again.

Muller: your mom?

Me: she is my mother.

Muller: she's only been back for what? Weeks?
And already she's your "mom".

Me: it's been months we have been talking
secretly.

King: you have been keeping a lot of things this
year

Muller: I need a drink from all of this shit.

Me: you guys should be happy for me!

Muller: happy for you?

Me: this is one of those times I have something
good working for me. I need my brothers
supporting me and not make me feel bad about
something so wonderful! Your mother is a good
mother to you guys! Not me. She hates me and
she always makes me hate life and living. She
ruins my soul and I hate her! She judges me
about everything! I tried so hard to make her
proud. I am done! Because every time she's

around me. She manages to ruin me

I was crying hard because it was time I told them how their mother really makes me feel. They think just because she's a good mother to them. She'll be a good mother to me too, but she's not! Muller was the first one to give me a hug. I love how they try to act tough with me but as soon as the tears fall down that's when they start feeling bad for me.

Muller: this is something big. We're all going to need to sit down and talk about.

Me: what if she tries to kill my mother again?

King: she won't.

Me: but-

King: we'll make sure of it.

Before I could talk again. Muller's phone rang. He didn't answer it then he received a text. His facial expression changed to being angry.

Muller: what!?

The phone rang again. He quickly answered it he walked out talking on the phone.

Me: how did you guys meet Sisipho?

King: Ghost's house.

Me: let me guess Fifi organised it?

King: no she was actually surprised by the incident too. It was all an accident. We were there at the wrong time. But I'm glad it happened. When were you going to tell us if it didn't happen?

I looked down in embarrassment because I didn't want to lie. I wasn't going to tell them at all. Muller came back and he looked really worried.

Me: what's wrong?

Muller: Game was shot dead and Gunz is in the hospital. They're worried he won't make it.

My mouth fell open shocked by what I'm hearing. Muller looked like he was trying so hard to hold his emotions.

King: Kenny's father

Me: what?

King: he knows. That's the only reason to explain this. He knows we're the ones that do heists that bring in a lot of money for Ghost &

Rellik. He's going to want to kill us to hurt The Americans money flow.

Me: oh my God. You guys need to check on your friends. I'll be okay, JR is outside watching.

Muller: I'll tell him to keep a closer eye and we'll be right back.

~~

After my brothers left nothing bad happened and I was happy. I was in the shower when I heard the house phone ring, I quickly wore clothes even though I was still wet. I thought it was Rellik and I was shocked when I heard Kayla's voice. She sounded like she was crying.

Me: what's wrong?

Kayla: this man, is handling me like I'm a criminal. Please tell him I know you. Ahhh!

I knew JR was probably manhandling her. I sighed because Kayla said she didn't care about me. What is she doing here? I thought she was dead because nobody knew where she was.

Kayla: Lona please! *cries in pain*

I opened the gate because I know she was here to apologise and I'll tell her okay, but we won't be friends anymore. I can't hold a grudge against anyone but I won't have her in my life. I don't want any negative vibes at all. She quickly got in the house because I heard the door being opened.

Me: I know her JR. Thank you. *smiles*

He nodded and let go of Kayla then he walked outside the yard again. I let Kayla inside and we

walked to the lounge.

.

.

.

-- KAYLA'S POV --

.

.

.

This bitch is weaker than I thought. I looked at her smiling at me. I could sense it was a fake one so I gave her one too.

Lona: I'm sure you're here for a reason

Me: look Lona. What happened between us was uncalled for. I mean you were my best friend

Lona: I'll go make you something to drink.

She got up and went to the kitchen. I felt the couch vibrating. I looked at her phone. Rellik was calling her. I quickly turned rejected the call on her phone and switched off her phone. I placed it back I doubt she will notice anything the way she's so easy to manipulate. She came back with the drinks and she sat down.

Lona: well I'm glad you came back to your senses. but I think we're good far apart. I have a new and better best friend.

Me: one that let's you get beat up?

I noticed the bruise on her cheek then she looked on the ground. I guess I was touching an emotional subject.

Lona: she has nothing to do with this, I was ki... you know what? I don't have to tell you because

you choose Zikhona and Khanyi over me! You said you were only my friend because you felt pity for me. Now I have better friends so I really don't need you. Please leave.

Me: I said that because I was angry you took my man!

Lona: wait what!? I'm not dating Scrappy!

Me: I'm talking about Rellik!

Lona: huh? *confused*

Me: I almost had him and you had to do what ever you did you him!

Lona: he doesn't even like you. *angry*

Me: really? Then why am I pregnant with his baby? *smirks*

I took the pictures from my purse and showed them to her. I could see she was so hurt she couldn't even notice he looked drugged from

the sexual pics.

Lona: what? How? when?

Me: like 3 or 4 months ago. I disappeared because he wanted to keep us a secret. He didn't want to break your little heart.

Lona: let me call him right now so he can explain all of this bullshit to me

She looked at her phone weirdly because it was turned off. Then she turned it on again. I needed go do something quick because I can't let her call Rellik if he learns that I'm back. He'll kill me. I want to fake this pregnancy until I have him for myself. I nervously took the gun out my purse and aimed it at her.

Me: throw that phone away now! Turn it off!

Lona: oh my God! Why are you doing this Kayla?

[02/20, 10:17] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER

~

INSERT 49

SEASON FINALE PART 1

.

.

.

I looked at the gun, I was shaking. I know if I scream for JR she will shoot me. I couldn't even say anything but all I could do was look at her.

Me: please put the gun down Kayla.

Kayla: I could've have had him Lona! Why were you so jealous that you had to take him!

Me: what? Are you crazy!? I didn't even know you liked him! I thought you liked Scrappy!

She shook her head and I could see she was getting angrier that I would "steal" Rellik from her. She's absolutely crazy, and she needs medical attention.

Kayla: he's never been like this with anyone.
You're different

I kept quiet. I really didn't have a comment. This was way too much for me. I was shit scared.

Kayla: how do you do it!? How!? *screams* I gave him my all, I lost my family, I have lived in the streets just for him to betray me and love you. I was always there and then you come along boring, fat and ugly yet he falls for you! He never fell for the other girls at all! You bewitched him! Sneaky bitch!

She jumped on me and started throwing punches and me, I defended myself, but it was hard especially when she picked up her gun and aimed at me. I knew I was going to get hurt today. I wiped the blood from my nose.

Her: "touch her and you'll see why I'm called Rellik" he says with so much pride. You're like his prize, isn't it wonderful? *laughs crazily* if I can't have him, you definitely won't. Witch!

I closed my eyes. Lord help me.

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I had a bad feeling about Lona not answering my calls. Expecially since i left her on a good note. I called JR to hear what's going on.

JR: bozza (boss)

Me: smoko? (Problem?)

JR: konke ku'moja (everything is good)

Me: she isn't answering her phone and it's off now.

JR: uthetha ne'chommie yakhe phakathi endlini (she's talking with this friend of hers inside the house)

Me: which friend?

JR: yenye imedi. Khange ndili bambe igama lakhe (it's some girl. I didn't quite get the name)

Me: isn't it Scrappy's girlfriend?

JR: nguye! (It's her)

Me: then it's okay, I trust Nella.

JR: ngulo usisfebe (it's the hoe one)

Me: isfebe? (hoe?)

I thought for a little while because I couldn't think of a hoe girlfriend Scrappy has then i remembered Kayla! Shit!

Me: JR quickly get inside and make sure everything is okay! I'll be there in a few minutes.

I quickly hung up and I rushed to their house in my Lamborghini. I didn't even care that I was shirtless. I only had on sweatpants with socks and Gucci slides. When I arrived there JR was still outside.

Me: what the fuck! ?

JR: she won't answer the house phone! I can't get in!

Me: something is happening in there. I know it! I swear Kayla will pay if she hurts Lona or feeds her any lies!

I quickly took my phone out and called Muller so he can tell new how the hell I can open this stupid gate!

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

I looked at her face which was filled with a lot of worry. The house phone has been ringing and she knows she's in a lot of deep shit.

Me: Kayla you will end up hurt. You don't have to do this. Please! Don't do this!

Kayla: I have had enough!

Me: you can find someone someone better. Someone that loves you just like you'll love them!

Kayla: he loves me!

Me: okay, yes he does. Please don't kill me I promise I'll stay away from him and he can be all yours

Kayla: that's why you don't deserve him! You're not willing to fight for him. I'd make the perfect wife. He needs a girl like me

Me: I'm not about to die over this. Take him! He's all yours

I walked closer to her so I can have the chance

to take the gun. This crazy bitch is really dumb if she thinks I'll believe anything she says after she treated me like garbage. Yes the pictures may have been true. But she's the past and now I'm the future. And I'll be damned if I let her take Xavier from me after all we've been through.

me: we don't have to fight over him. He's been looking distant anyway. Maybe he's really not happy with me

We both heard the heard the door being opened. When she was looking at that direction. I knocked the gun away from her hand making it fall far away from us. Then I threw the first punch turning it into a big fight. Luckily I was on top and she kept grabbing my hair trying to take me off her. I continued slapping her and punching her. That's when I felt the fight being broken off. I looked at who was grabbing me

and it was Rellik. I quickly turned and hugged him with my heart racing fast. He looked very angry when he saw my bruises from Kayla's punches. It's crazy how my face also ends up bruised whenever I'm back with Rellik.

Rellik: JR take her to my uncle's house and watch her. I'll be there in a few minutes. This won't take long.

Me: she has a gun *sighs*

Rellik: take her gun too, JR. I don't want complications. This will not take long. I promise I'll be there for you. And, JR, don't turn back.

I nodded and walked out with JR.

Kayla: Lona please! Please don't let him do this, please *cries*

She was about to kill me and she wants me to feel pity for her when Rellik will do it? I do feel bad but I know I can't let her live because she'll try it again. I walked out ignoring her cries. I wiped my tears with the guilt already eating me alive. Maybe death is too much. He should just send her away. Killing her is a big thing. I know my heart won't let me leave her like this. I was already on the way when I signed I knew what I had to say.

Me: please turn back. He can't kill her. She's pregnant.

JR: I can't. He strictly ordered me not to turn back.

Me: you have your turn back! An innocent life is in my hands. I can't let him kill her *cries*

JR: you'll talk to him when he returns.

Me: it'll be too late!

JR: sorry, I'm not turning back.

Then he got quiet and didn't care how much I begged him. I looked down feeling like i shouldn't have left now an innocent child will pay for the mother's mistakes.

.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

.

I looked at Kayla in disgust. She was in the floor crying for me to forgive her.

Me: I would've let you go if you didn't try all this shit.

Kayla: I promise I'll go far away. Please don't kill me and our baby, Xavier.

Me: don't fucking call me that! I will slit your throat call me that again.

Kayla: why is she allowed to do all those things yet the others weren't allowed?

Me: if you would open your eyes you would see I love her. She's not like the rest of you dirty hoes! You tried hurting her now I know you want to die.

Kayla: our baby.

Me: What baby! Zikhona ratted you out! I know the truth bitch!

Kayla: I. ..i-

Me: say your prayers. You're going to need them.

Kayla: she will never forgive you. I know Lona.

And her brothers won't allow this! *cries*

I couldn't help but laugh at this stupid girl. She's that delusional to think I'd really not kill her because Lona won't forgive me. I know Lona. She loves me and she will forgive me.

Me: she will. And you're a little late. The relationship is already approved.

She looked shocked that something like this would happen. She didn't think Lona's brothers would approve but she's dead wrong. She was about to say something and I got annoyed and shot her in her head. She dropped dead. I shot her again in her chest so she doesn't survive anything. I called OG because I wanted all of this cleaned up before her brothers arrived

Me: damn.

I said looking at the white carpet covered in Kayla's blood. And her dead body didn't even make me feel guilty. She deserved all of this. She should be known not to try and touch Lona because that's my only weakness and I'm willing to do anything to protect my weakness. OG finally answered his phone after so long.

Me: I need a body cleaned up. Come to Muller's house.

OG: moja bozza. (Sharp boss)

I hung up and called Muller to hear about this shooting incident again. If Kenny's father already knows then we need to get the girls to the safe house and kill Kenny's father.

Muller: Rellik I don't need you calling me all the time.

Me: we need to talk. What happened?

Muller: one dead, the other is in the hospital. What more do you want me to say?

I could tell he was frustrated and I was annoying him with all these questions. I would be annoyed too if someone called me just to ask how my friends were killed but I needed answers.

Me: Kayla tried killing Lona.

Muller: what! ? *shouts* is she okay? Fuck!

Me: yes. I sent her to Ghost's house while I sorted the Kayla problem.

Muller: we're going to be at Ghost's house to know a way forward because it looks like

Kenny's father is really out for blood.

Me: I want her to go to a safe house. That's where she'll be safe.

Muller: with the way she's stubborn did she agree?

Me: yeah but she'll need more convincing from her brothers.

Muller: we'll be there.

.

.

.

-- NELLA'S POV --

.

.

.

Scrappy received a text from Rellik that we should go to Ghost's house. I have never been

there. I am sort of excited yet scared I heard Ghost is quite intimidating. When we arrived there. I was happy to see Lona. I hugged her, she was shaking though.

Me: what's wrong?

Lona: Kayla tried to kill me.

Scrappy: what!?

Me: Kayla? As in the girl that once slept with Scrappy? How do you know her?

Lona: I... uh. We have to talk.

I looked at her confused why we need to talk. She better say not because it would be very wrong for her to not tell me all this time she had a chance to tell me. We moved away from Scrappy. There wasn't much people in the lounge only JR and Scrappy.

Me: I'm listening.

Lona: I used to be Kayla's best friend. But I promise you it's all over now

Me: wait what? Why didn't you tell me? I would've understood now you making me feel like I shouldn't have trusted you.

Lona: come on. That time we met she wasn't my friend at all anymore.

Me: did you ever met Scrappy through her? y'all hung out with him there?

Lona:

me: oh wow.

Lona: they weren't fucking too at that time we grew close. She just disappeared.

Me: you could've told me though! The time I cried with you in the car you should've been like "i know that hoe, and I would've drove to her

place to fuck her up."

Lona: but I didn't want to ruin our friendship though. Because you wouldn't have trusted me. It's not that much of a big deal.

Me: if it isn't a big deal then why didn't you tell me? Why did you hide it?

She got quiet and looked down. I sighed because I knew that I couldn't be mad at her because she's my best friend now. Although I would've loved honesty but I know I have to forgive her. This bitch slapped Vicki because she was rude to me, so I know she has my back through what ever. I hugged her even though I'm a little angry. She needs to know I have her back.

Me: it's cool but don't ever keep a secret again!

Lona: never Nelz!

She started laughing, I heard a gun shot and windows breaking then I screamed when I saw JR on the floor bleeding. Then multiple bullets were being shot. Me and Lona got down.

Lona: what's going on!?

Scrappy: call Rellik now!

[02/20, 10:18] Ron: ~ I CHANGED A MONSTER
~

SEASON FINALE PART 2

INSERT 50

.

.

.

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

Me and Nella quickly ran upstairs. I was shocked all of this. What the hell is going on!? Ghost ran downstairs too, and I saw Fifi running with Sisipho to another room. Me and Nella followed them. We locked ourselves in the room.

Fifi: what the hell is happening?! *scared*

Me: I think Kenny's father found out his son was killed by Rellik.

Fifi: oh God. *sighs*

Sisipho: are you guys okay?

Me: yes. We have to call Rellik now!

Fifi: those useless guards outside are probably shot dead!

Me: Nella please give me your phone.

She quickly gave it to me with shaking hands. My hands were shaking too. I was scared. First the Kayla incident now this. I don't even know what is up with my life. I guess that's what I signed up for when I dated Rellik.

Rellik: Nella?

Me: Xavier! They're shooting at your uncle's house. You have to come here. I'm scared.

cries

Rellik: what!? I'll be there. Lock yourselves in a room. I promise I'll be there and everything will be okay!

I was about to respond but the call ended, Nella's phone died because the battery was low. I gave it back to her, I sat in the floor just in case they start shooting again. I heard a knock on the door. We all looked at each other and Fifi

placed her finger in her mouth telling us to shut up.

Ghost: baby? It's all safe now.

Fifi quickly got out the room and hugged Ghost. I could see he was bloody though. I looked at them and wished Rellik was here. Nella ran out to find Scrappy.

Fifi: you're shot!

Ghost: it's just my arm. I'll be fine. I promise. We need to get all females to the safe house tonight!

Fifi: I'm not leaving you here hurt like this. The worse part is we can't communicate in the safe house. How will I know you're okay?

Ghost: if we communicate you know they'll

track our traces. I'm doing this for your safety. Look what happened here today. I can't keep risking your life like this. You're going there and that's final.

Fifi: but-

Ghost: Refiloe we're not debating on this!

She kept quiet, and just nodded. I walked out to check on Nella. My mother followed me because she needed to also give the couple some space.

Sisipho: how are your brothers? I feel bad got lashing out.

Me: they're okay I guess. Where's your husband?

Sisipho: he went out with business associates and he hasn't came back since.

Me: will he be joining us in the safe house?

Sisipho: I think it'd be better if he went back to Paris until I returned.

Me: me too. It's not safe at all here.

I found Nella and she was all kissing Scrappy and hugging him crying. I guess she really was worried.

Nella: I thought you were shot!

Scrappy: it's going to take more than a few shooters to take me down and get me away from you.

I couldn't help but chuckle that was so sweet. I heard the door being slammed, and I went to check. Rellik's face relaxed when he saw me. He opened his arms for a hug and I ran to him. I

gave him a kiss, and I smiled because I'm happy he's also okay.

Rellik: you're okay? You didn't get shot? You need medical attention? You need to pack by today everything is getting out of order. And the police will surely arrive in few minutes.

Me: baby calm down. I am fine, Ghost had been shot though. And I think JR is dead but I'm not sure I'm scared to look.

He nodded and held my hand going to the living room, everything was a total mess. Another person opened the door, he had a doctor outfit on.

Doc: Ghost?

Me: upstairs with Fifi.

He nodded and rushed upstairs. Rellik looked over the body of JR. He shook his head, and closed his eyes that were open. I couldn't help but cry, so many people were dying in front of me. Rellik gave me a hug brushing my back. I'm not used to all of this. I don't like it at all.

Rellik: I'm here now. Nothing is going to happen to you.

Me: but people around me are dying.

Rellik: we can't save everyone baby. We're not God.

Me: we should check on your uncle.

Rellik: I know he'll pull through.

We all walked upstairs and helped the doctor with Ghost even though he was annoyed we

were surrounding him all worried.

Ghost: don't you kids have anything better to do then watching me being treated! ?

Rellik: *chuckles* we need to make sure you're okay.

Ghost: you need to come up with the solid story for the police.

Rellik: theft?

Ghost: we had a lot of guards. Something believable. Think Rellik, you're going to take over some time soon. You need to think for situations like this.

I looked at Rellik. I guess he doesn't like his uncle putting so much pressure on him, I held his hand and brushed his arm to calm him down. Ghost considers Rellik his son, I'm sure he doesn't want him to appear weak to others. And

I could see Ghost was a perfectionist everything of his needed to be perfect. Just like Rellik

Rellik: you didn't let me finish.

Ghost: go on. *groans in pain*

Rellik: we're going to say they're these new kids, they knew if they would try to take your possessions they would get rich off it. And they killed the guards to try and enter. You were defending yourself by shooting back but they ran off after you shot 1

Ghost: more believable. Now search the whole house for anything illegal and start hiding it in the attic, just in case they want to do a search.

.

.

.

-- MULLER'S POV --

.
.
.

Because I was more worried about Lona, I told King I was going to Ghost's house while he remained in the hospital so that he can show support for the both of us. I arrived at Ghost's house and I was shocked to see dead bodies on the floor in the yard and the gate wide open. I ran inside looking for Lona with my heart beating fast. I can not lose my little sister today.

Me: Lelona! *shouts*

Then after a while she came running to me. She hugged me with tears running down her eyes

Me: what happened?

Lona: they just shot people. Jr is dead and Ghost has been shot.

Me: what! ?

Lona: he's okay though. The doctor checked him out.

Me: where are the people that shot the place?

Scrappy: they ran off. One of them probably got hit.

Me: we need to get you to safety quick.

Lona: what about you guys?

Me: Lelona. I'm not discussing this with you.
Relik get her to the safe house in a few hours.
The more time we waste with her here is the more time she's in danger.

Relik nodded, I could see he was happy Lona was finally going to go to safety.

~~

-- LONA'S POV --

.

.

The helicopters landed at the island house. I didn't even think Ghost was this rich to own an island. I was with Nella and Fifi was with my mom.

Me: fifi! You guys are filthy rich! An island! ?

Fifi: trust me. It costed him a lot of money. Like a lot! He didn't even want to buy it when he saw the price but he knew he had to.

Me: why did he have too? He could've just brought a house.

Fifi: well the only way to get here is by a chopper. And he says it's safer. And all the times I've been here their enemies never know where I am so it is safe

Nella: I never knew gangsters could be this rich
laughs

Fifi: *laughs* we had to sacrifice a lot for this place. That's why it's going to be for the whole family when we're in danger.

Me: sacrifice?

Fifi: months of cutting back costs. I couldn't do my nails, hair, and buy new clothes. Some of our cars were taken, even though we got them back. It was hard. This island was really expensive. we almost lost our house over it!
laughs

Sisipho: why didn't he just give up and buy a cheaper one?

Fifi: you know how stubborn he is. And this one is safer anyone so let's appreciate it and the struggle to get it.

Me: so how did he get the money back?

Fifi: he had to do extra work. More business

trips, more heists and all of the other things.

Me: besides heists and drug dealings. What more so they do?

Fifi: he doesn't like talking about it with me. So I really don't know, but I overheard him talking and he wants to get a fresh gang in the Americans so they can steal cars, hook them up and sell them.

Me: so he'll be making money with other people's hard earned cars?

The girls kept quiet and looked at me. I know I seemed judgemental but really! Imagine buying yourself a car only for it to be stolen and sold to someone else! That's just unfair.

Nella: okay! How about we all just go to sleep. It's been a long ride coming here.

They all nodded and I walked around the house to choose a room to sleep. I placed my bags down and threw myself on the bed. We didn't even have phones with us. I miss my boyfriend I miss my brothers I didn't even have the chance to say goodbye to King or Cardo. I looked at the beautiful ceiling. I hope I won't get too bored in this place. I already want to go home.

.

.

-- RELLIK'S POV --

.

.

I looked at my uncle who was sleeping on the bed. He did warn me about this war but I couldn't let Kenny live after what happened.

Muller: let's talk.

I nodded and met with him outside the room. The cops already came and luckily for us it was one of my uncle's friends so everything went easy. I folded my arms and waited for Muller to start talking.

Muller: I know where Kenny lives, and knowing Kenny's father he is very confident just like his son.

me: I'm not catching...

Muller: he probably is still at his house meaning we have an advantage we know where he lives! And where he is right now.

Me: he will move though. He attacked us, obviously he knows we will attack him too.

Muller: he used to love little girls. Get one so we can know more about his whereabouts. I'm telling he is still in his house thinking he's

untouchable.

Me: how will we go to there without him being alerted?

Scrappy walked up to us. I forgot he was even here. He had a plain face with him, I hope everything went well with the girls.

Scrappy: they landed safely. The choppers are coming back

Me: that's good.

Muller: choppers!

Me: helicopters?

Muller: yes! We can get in eastern cape without him being alerted.

Scrappy: that's a good idea. Then tell our EC connections can bring you cars to drive to your destination when you arrive.

Me: that's a plan! But how will we kill him? His house might have tight security.

Scrappy: shootout like he did.

Muller: you survived. Meaning he can also survive.

Me: I say let's bomb his whole house. No chance of survival.

Muller: that's extreme but if it guarantees safety for everyone. I'm with it. Where will we get bombs?

Scrappy: leave that all to me.

I nodded, then I heard a car screeching a wheel and driving off making a lot of noise. The three of us rushed downstairs. When he got there there were 3 bodies laying down with their heads covered with something like black plastics; the car was gone. We all ran to see the people. I revealed the first head and it was X.

Muller sat down on the ground shocked, all his friends were dying in one night. I revealed the other and it was Trigger.

Me: shit.

My heart starting beating fast scared that the third person might change everything. I couldn't do it. I just stared at it, Muller realized I was scared to do it and quickly opened it. He let out a loud cry when he saw who it was. I wiped the little tears I had. King is dead.

.

.

.

END OF SEASON 1